











*V.P. A. Gorin*

# **HISTORY**

OF THE

**UNITED STATES OF AMERICA,**

WITH A

GEOGRAPHICAL APPENDIX,

AND A

**Chronological Table of Contents:**

FOR THE USE OF

FAMILIES AND SCHOOLS.

—  
BY FREDERICK BUTLER, A. M.  
—

THIRD REVISED AND IMPROVED EDITION.

—  
**WETHERSFIELD :**

**PUBLISHED BY DEMING & FRANCIS.**

—  
**1828.**

E1718  
B986  
182.8

DISTRICT OF CONNECTICUT, SS.

*Be it remembered,* That on the twentieth day of December, in L. S. the fiftieth year of the Independence of the United States of America, Deming & Francis, of the said district, have deposited in this office the title of a Book, the right whereof they claim as proprietors, in the words following, to wit :

"A History of the United States of America, with a Geographical Appendix and a Chronological Table of Contents ; for the Use of Families and Schools. By Frederick Butler, A. M."

In conformity to the act of the Congress of the United States, entitled "An act for the encouragement of learning, by securing the copies of maps, charts, and books, to the authors and proprietors of such copies, during the times therein mentioned." And also to the act entitled "An act supplementary to an act, entitled, 'An act for the encouragement of learning, by securing the copies of maps, charts, and books, to the authors and proprietors of such copies, during the times therein mentioned,' and extending the benefits thereof to the arts of designing, engraving, and etching historical and other prints."

CHARLES A. INGERSOLL,

*Clerk of the District of Connecticut.*

A true copy of Record, examined, and sealed by me,

CHARLES A. INGERSOLL,

*Clerk of the District of Connecticut.*

158350+

## **PREFACE.**

The great and important uses of history are, to inform the mind, enlarge and strengthen the understanding, and mend the heart. To effect these objects, the style, as well as the narrative, should be easy, chaste and interesting as possible, the subject both useful and important, the arrangement clear and perspicuous, and the facts indubitable. Under the influence of these impressions, the author commenced and has carried forward the work; and to accomplish his purpose the more effectually, he has divided it into the following parts, viz.

Part I. commences the settlement of New England, and carries forward those states, from their origin, down to the peace of 1763, because this confederacy was more immediately connected with the French and Indian wars, in Canada.

Part II. embraces the history of the Middle and Southern states, from their origin down to the same period, because they were more immediately connected with the French and Indian wars of the west, and the Spanish and Indian wars at the south.

Part III. embraces the whole period of the revolutionary war, together with the causes that led to it. In this period the grand confederacy of the nation is first formed, and the history of the several states becomes national, and is carried forward therefrom, in their united capacity.

Part IV. embraces the commencement and continuance of the federal government, together with the causes that led to and promoted the change in the old confederation. Also a succinct account of those measures, that were the immediate causes of national party, under Washington's administration; with a general view of that, and the subsequent administrations; the Indian wars; war with France, and the Barbary powers; a particular view of the late war with England, and the causes that led to that war. Also, a chronological view of the rise and progress of those southern and western states, that have grown up under the administration of the federal government, and become members of the federal union.

## PREFACE.

The author has added, at the close of each part, remarks upon the manners and customs, religion, trade and commerce, arts and manufactures, agriculture, education, and wars, of that particular period.

The work closes with an appendix, containing the declaration of independence, the old confederation, the new federal constitution, president Washington's farewell address, a brief geographical view of the United States, and a chronological table of contents.

The author is fully persuaded that this is the only plan upon which a clear and perspicuous view of the history of the United States can be exhibited ; and in the execution of his plan, he has endeavored to avoid all party interest, and to be governed entirely by the principles of candor and truth.

In collecting and arranging the materials of this work, the author has endeavored to fix as strong an impression upon the wise and virtuous institutions of our forefathers, civil religious and literary, as the nature of things would fairly warrant, in order to enforce upon the minds of the rising generation, the necessity and importance of cultivating and preserving pure religion and morals, so long as they wish to enjoy the benefits of free education and free government. The author has been the more urgent in this, because the work is designed immediately for the use of families and schools, to the heads of which, he begs leave to address himself, by saying, let the rising generation have every possible advantage to acquire a knowledge of history, that they may learn the principles upon which our free institutions are founded ; remembering that they are to become the guardians of all those pre-eminent privileges that we enjoy, and that to them will be committed the destinies of this great and rising nation.

## INTRODUCTION.

The discovery of America, may be considered as one of the most important events in the annals of man. It will ultimately be productive of the greatest consequences to the world.

In 1492, (about two whole centuries after Goya had unfolded the secrets of magnetism, and taught the use of the mariner's compass,) Christopher Columbus traversed the vast ocean of the Atlantic, and opened a new world to the family of man. This Genoese pilot was well skilled in the science of navigation, and well versed in the sciences of astronomy and geography, for that age ; and fully persuaded in his own mind, that a large body of land must be situated in the regions of the west, in order to give the earth that balance, which was absolutely necessary, to preserve that equable motion, which marked her diurnal rotation. To ascertain this fact, he formed the plan of exploring the Atlantic ocean, in quest of this unknown continent. To effect this, it became necessary to obtain ships, men, and money, and to procure them, he offered his services, first to the republic of Genoa, (his own country) where his scheme was treated as visionary, and disregarded ; he next offered his services to Portugal, but without success ; next to Spain, but without success ; he next sent his brother Bartholomew to tender his services to the king of England ; but his brother was shipwrecked on his passage, which delayed the application for several years ; and when application was made to the king, (then Henry VII.) he gave no countenance to the adventure.

Ferdinand, king of Spain, was deaf to the views of Columbus ; but Isabella, his queen, listened to his overture ; her capacious mind saw the force of his reasoning, caught the spirit of the enterprise, and gave Columbus a gracious reception ; she pawned her jewels to raise money for the occasion, and thus with the assistance of her husband, fitted out three small vessels ; gave Columbus the command ; and he set sail into the unknown regions of the west. To recount the perils of the voyage, the dangers of the seas, the mutiny of the sailors, their conflicting passions, that threatened his life, and pressed him to return ; the fatigues of anxious cares, sleepless

nights, and constant watchings, that distressed his mind, and wasted his health, upon this long, this interesting voyage, would exceed the limits of this work. All these he endured with a steady eye to the great object before him ; and on the 11th of October, 1492, he discovered land, that proved to be one of the Bahama islands, which he called San Salvador, (in allusion to his wonderful preservation) and after visiting the island of Hispaniola, he shipped on board several of the natives ; planted a little colony in the island, and returned to Spain.

To relate the perils and distresses he endured, when overtaken by a violent storm, on his return to Spain ; to express the anxiety he felt, lest the knowledge of the new world should be buried with him, forever, in the tempestuous deep ; or recount the joy that greeted his return to Spain, the honors bestowed upon him by his benefactress, and her illustrious prince, will exceed our limits ; suffice it to say, that the modesty with which Columbus disclosed his adventures, the riches of the west, and the character of the natives, draw upon himself universal admiration and applause.

The outlines of the further adventures, which led to the discovery and settlement of the several parts of the New World, are given in a concise manner, in the following chronological form :—

Columbus made a second voyage, which proved unsuccessful. A. D. 1493

Made a third voyage, and discovered South America, 1498

Americus Vesputius, under the patronage of the merchants of Seville, followed the track of Columbus ; touched upon the continent of South America ; returned ; published a pompous account of his voyage and discoveries, and gave his name to the continent of America, 1499

John Cabot, a Venecian, obtained a grant from Henry VII. of England, for foreign discoveries ; explored the coast of North America ; touched upon the coast of Labrador, and returned to England, 1498

The next year he explored the whole extent of the American coast, from Davis' strait to Florida ; discovered Newfoundland, and returned to England, 1497

Sebastian Cabot, (son of John Cabot) under Henry VII. pursued the adventures of his father ; visited Newfoundland, and carried several natives to England, 1502

Alvarez de Cabral, on his passage to India from Lisbon, (Portugal) discovered Brazil, 1500

Juan Leon, an adventurer from Porto Rico, discovered Florida, gave it its name, and attempted a settlement, 1513  
 Terra Firma, (on the continent of South America,) was settled by Spain, 1520

Cortez, the Spanish adventurer, conquered Mexico, 1521

The next adventurer was Stephen Gomez, a Spaniard, who explored the coast from Florida to cape Race, latitude 46 degrees north, in search of a north-west passage to India, 1525

Pizarro, another Spanish adventurer, conquered Peru, 1540

Ferdinand de Soto, who had served under Cortes, in the conquest of Mexico, sailed from the island of Cuba, with a military force of 900 men, and landed in Florida, in quest of the wealth of another city of Mexico, 1539

He traversed the interior, through the Chickasaw country, crossed the Mississippi, and proceeded up Red river, a very considerable distance, where he died, at the end of three years. His troops returned to the Mississippi, constructed such shipping as would convey them down the river, and thus returned to Cuba, under Alverdo, their leader, 1542

The Portuguese settled Brazil, 1549

Francis I. king of France, made some efforts for discoveries in the new world, by John Verezano, a Florentine ; but he was lost in his second adventure, 1524

Ten years after this, Francis I. made another effort, by James Quartier, who touched at Newfoundland ; discovered and gave name to the gulf of St. Lawrence, and made an unsuccessful attempt to find a passage to China, 1534

The next year he explored the St. Lawrence, up to the rapids ; wintered in the country, at a fort which he built on the isle of Orleans, and in the spring, carried several of the natives to France, 1536

James Quartier pursued his adventures under the same patronage, to complete a settlement in Canada, or New-France, where he remained, at a place which he named Charlebourg, about two years, and then retired to Newfoundland, 1540

Francis I. sent out other adventurers to strengthen the settlements in Canada ; but they all failed, 1542

About this time began the Newfoundland fisheries, which have since proved so profitable to the world.

The French, under Chittillon, made some further discoveries in East Florida, and attempted a settlement, which failed, 1562

About this time, several French adventurers visited the coast, in quest of a passage to India, and returned to France. Commodore Ribault was despatched from France, by the admiral Coligni, with two ships, to plant a colony in North America. He touched at Port Royal, (South Carolina) landed his men, built a fort, and called it Charles, where he left a colony of twenty or thirty men, under captain Albert and returned to France, 1564

Commodore Loudennier was sent out from France, with three ships, to plant a colony in Florida, and in June he built a fort on the river May, or St. Mary, where he planted a colony of 100 men, and called it Carolina, in honor of Charles IX. 1566

In August following, commodore Ribault arrived with a colony of French Huguenots, to strengthen the colony at Port Royal ; but they had mutined and butchered their captain, Albert, and were gone.

In September of the same year, Pedro Melanges, a Spaniard, with six ships, by order of Philip II. his master, pursued Ribault, with his little colony, up the river, landed a strong force of 200 soldiers and 2600 planters, took his fort and colony, and put all to the sword, or hung them upon the trees.

The next adventurer who visited the coast, was captain Frobisher, who sailed from England in quest of a north-west passage to India ; but being obstructed by the ice, he abandoned the enterprise, and returned to England, 1576

This year sir Francis Drake doubled cape Horn, and discovered New Albion, upon the western coast, north of California.

Queen Elizabeth granted letters patent to sir Humphrey Gilbert, for foreign discoveries, and in his adventures he touched at Newfoundland, and from thence to the continent, and took possession for the crown of England. He was lost in a storm, 1583

The coast of Virginia was discovered ; named after the virgin queen, and settled by 107 persons, near Roanoke, by sir Walter Raleigh, who sailed under a commission from queen Elizabeth, 1585



The same year, this colony returned to England, with  
sir Francis Drake, 1586

Sir Walter Raleigh sent out seven ships, with another  
colony, to the same settlement on the Roanoke, where  
they endured extreme hardships, and were in their turn,  
conveyed back to England, by sir Francis Drake, 1587

Sir Walter sent out governor White with a colony, to  
strengthen the former colony at Roanoke, with a charter,  
and a regular form of government ; but they were gone,  
and governor White left a colony of 115 at Roanoke, and  
returned, 1588

Governor White came over again, to recruit the little  
colony in Virginia ; but alas ! they had all shared the fate  
of his former colony, and not a vestige of them remained, 1590

With this colony, came out Manteo and Towaye, two  
natives, who had been carried to England by former ad-  
venturers. The former was baptised in August, which  
is not only the first convert among the natives, but the  
first notice of any religious rite in all these numerous ad-  
ventures. At the same time, a daughter was born in the  
colony, of a Mrs. Dare, whom she called Virginia. This  
was the first christian birth in North America.

A Spanish expedition under Juan de Fuca, was sent out  
from Mexico, to explore a north-west passage, who dis-  
covered the strait that bears his name, latitude 48 north,  
and returned. 1592

In the reign of Henry IV. of France, an expedition sail-  
ed under De la Loche, consisting of convicts, to conquer  
and settle Canada. De la Loche landed forty on the isle  
of Sables, where they languished seven years, and then  
twelve returned to France, where they were pardoned,  
and received fifty crowns each, from the king, to recom-  
pense their sufferings, 1599

This year, cape Cod, Martha's Vineyard, and Eliza-  
beth Island, and Dover Cliff, were discovered by Bar-  
tholomew Gosnold, and thirty-two adventurers, who made  
an attempt to settle on Elizabeth Island ; but failed, and  
returned to England, 1603

At this time not one solitary English, French, or Dutch  
settlement had been permanently made, on the whole  
coast of North America, through the long period of ad-  
ventures, for 110 years.

The English made two adventures to Virginia, and not

finding the third colony at Roanoke, and being roughly handled by the natives, they all returned to England, 1603

The French began their settlement at Port Royal, on the bay of Fundy, 1604

The English, under captain Weymouth, explored the coast of the Province of Maine ; made no settlement, but carried off several natives, and returned, 1605

This year James I. divided Virginia into two colonies or districts, (for there was not a settlement in either) the southern was bounded on the 34th and 41st degrees of north latitude, and styled the first colony, and granted to the London Company. The northern or second colony, was included within the 38th and 45th degrees of north latitude, and granted to the Plymouth company, 1606

Each of these companies consisted of a president and twelve assistants, to govern the affairs of the colonies ; with express prohibitions to settle within 100 miles of each other.

The next year another colony commenced the settlement of Jamestown, on James river, under captain Newport, 1607

This was the first permanent settlement planted in North America.

The Plymouth company sent out admiral sir Rawley Gilbert, with 100 planters, to North Virginia, with captain George Popham for their president. Admiral Gilbert touched at Sagadahoc (Kennebec) river ; landed forty-five men, with their president, and the rest returned to England. At the same time a company from St. Maloes, in France, founded Quebec, 1607

The sufferings of the Sagadahoc colony ; the loss of their store-house, by fire, and of their president, induced them to return to England, the next season, 1608

The same year Jamestown was burnt.

This year the London company sent out supplies and a recruit of two hundred persons, to strengthen the colony at Jamestown, which now amounted to 500, 1608--9†

Admiral Somers, on his passage to America, with a part of this little fleet, was wrecked on one of the Bahama islands, and lost his ship ; but the crew and passengers

† The same year the Rev. John Robinson removed with his flock, to Holland.

were all saved, and remained there until the next year, when they were taken off by lord Delaware, on his passage to Virginia.†

The colony at Jamestown was now reduced to sixty, and had all embarked for England; but meeting his lordship at the entrance of the bay, they were induced to return with him and resume their settlement at Jamestown, June 10th, 1610

Here commences the history of Virginia.

This year sir Thomas Dale and sir Thomas Gates, sent out each 300 men, with cattle, swine, &c. for the settlement, 1611

In the year 1607—8, captain Henry Hudson received a commission from king James I. for foreign adventure, and in the service of the East-India company, sailed in quest of a north-west passage, 1607—8

In 1609, he left this service in disgust, and prosecuted his adventures in the service of the Dutch. He entered North river, which he called by his own name, 1609

This adventure gave rise to the Dutch settlement at New-Netherlands, 1613

Conception bay, in the island of Newfoundland, was settled by John Gray, under a patent from king James, 1613

This year captain Smith, with two ships, sailed to the coast of North Virginia, and took out with him, *Tantum* or *Squantum*, an Indian formerly carried to England, by captain Weymouth, in 1605. Captain Smith landed *Tantum* at cape Cod, and explored the Massachusetts bay, and returned to England in one vessel; but left the other with captain Hunt, who touched at Sagadahoc river, and decoyed on board twenty Indians, and carried them to Spain, where he sold them for £20 each, as slaves, 1614

This perfidious act proved highly prejudicial to the trade, hereafter.

When captain Smith returned to England, he drew a chart of this coast, and called it New-England, which still continues.

This year William Baffin, in search of a north-west passage, discovered the bay that bears his name, 1616

† By some it is understood that they built a vessel and sailed for Jamestown, without the assistance of lord Delaware.

About this time, a sweeping sickness among the natives, desolated the coast about Massachusetts bay, and the tribe of Patuxet was wholly destroyed. This prepared the way for the settlement of the Puritan colony at New-Plymouth,

1620

# HISTORY OF THE UNITED STATES.

---

## PART I.

---

### CHAPTER I.

#### COMMENCEMENT OF THE SETTLEMENT OF NEW-ENGLAND PLYMOUTH.

THE commencement of the reformation in England, under John Wickliffe, in the 14th century ; the rise of the disciples of Wickliffe called Lollards ; their principles, their persecutions under Henry VIII. ; the bloody reign of queen Mary, and the succeeding reigns ; their flight to Germany and Switzerland ; the refinement of their principles and modes of worship under the advice of John Calvin, the great apostle of Switzerland, which gave to their church the title or name of puritan ; their return to England in the reign of queen Elizabeth ; their persecutions in the reign of James the 1st ; their flight to Holland, in the year 1608, under the pious John Robinson, their pastor, are all faithfully recorded in Neal's history of the puritans, and in Hume's history of England.

Let us now accompany a part of this flock to the wilds of America, and witness how God rolls on the successive events of his providence, to accomplish his purposes and designs.

Twelve years this little flock enjoyed their religion in peace among their brethren in Holland ; but the abuses of the Sabbath, together with the confusion of business, and the general character of the Dutch, rendered their residence irksome ; they therefore resolved to make one more effort to find a retreat, where they might enjoy the religion of their hearts in peace. To effect this, they turned their attention to the shores of North America,

They sent their agents to England to negotiate with the London company, who were at that time making efforts for the settlement of Virginia, and obtained a patent for their ac-

commodation, 1619.† In July, 1620, a part of Mr. Robinson's congregation tore themselves from their beloved pastor and friends, and embarked for England, where they landed to complete the preparations for their voyage.

In August they embarked at Southampton, and set sail for America ; but were constrained to return on account of the leakiness of one of their vessels. On the 6th of September, they took their departure from Plymouth, and on the 18th of November came to anchor in the harbor of cape Cod.

Their object was to join the Dutch colony at Manhattan, at the mouth of the Hudson river ; but the Dutch captain defeated this object by touching at cape Cod, at the entrance of Massachusetts bay.

Such had been the severities and distresses of the voyage, that they preferred landing upon this solitary coast, to encountering again the perils of the deep, at this late season of the year. They accordingly made the necessary arrangements for landing upon this dreary, desolate, inhospitable waste. To effect this, they first poured out their souls to God in prayer and thanksgiving, for their preservation and deliverance : they next drew up and subscribed a solemn compact, for the government of the colony ; and when this had been duly executed, by twenty-four heads of families and seventeen single men, making forty-one subscribers, in behalf of the whole, which amounted to one hundred and one, they proceeded to elect Mr. John Carver as their governor, for one year.

Having thus organized their little colony they proceeded to land their families and effects, and to imprint the first footsteps of civilized man, upon this desolate shore of a new world.

This being accomplished, they fell on their knees, and poured out their souls renewedly, in prayers and praises, with thanksgiving, and dedicated their hearts, their lives and all that they possessed, to God their deliverer ; and committed themselves to his most holy keeping,—November 20th, 1620.

When they had celebrated the first sabbath in this little colony, and thus rendered the shores of this howling wilderness vocal with the praises of their God, they commenced the labors of the week in exploring the coast, in their shallop, and

†King James I. granted letters patent to this company in 1606. which authorised them to possess all lands in America, lying between 34 and 45 deg. of N. latitude.

the forest with an armed party, to spy out the land and discover the face of the country, in quest of a permanent residence. In all their several attempts to explore the forest, they discovered the natives, who sometimes fled at their approach, and at others, annoyed them with showers of arrows, and the horrors of their savage yells ; but the report of their fire-arms awed them into submission, or hold them at bay.

On the 18th of December, they discovered a site at the bottom of spacious, delightful bay, which attracted their attention, as being best adapted to their necessities, for a permanent residence. There they planted their little colony, and called it Plymouth, in honor of the port that witnessed their last adieu to the land of their fathers. There they erected their dwellings, which formed the first village in New-England ; a village of log huts ; there they again celebrated the sabbath, and the wilderness again became vocal with the praises of their God. Thus they planted down upon the borders of an unbounded forest, at the commencement of a New-England winter ; without support, except the scanty remains of the voyage ; and without friends to succor or protect them. Before them was the wilderness, full of the habitations of cruelty ; behind them, that ocean, with its boisterous and tempestuous billows which had borne them to these remote regions. In their dwellings a mortal sickness soon prevailed that raged through the winter, and swept off forty-six of their number. To add to this, and other calamities, their store house took fire, and consumed much of their valuable effects. Here was a picture of distress, that opened a field for the display of the virtues of that religion, which they had forsaken fathers and mothers, houses and lands, and even their dear native country, the land of their fathers, and thus jeopardized their lives upon the ocean, and in the wilderness, to secure and enjoy. This field of distress became to them a field of delight ; for they had escaped the persecution of their enemies, and in the midst of their sufferings, their hearts were unappalled ; they trusted in God. and he was their deliverer.

In the midst of this distress, a friendly Indian, who spoke English, came into their village, and exclaimed *welcome English, welcome English.*† By this Indian, they learnt the geography of the adjacent country, and the names and number of

†This Indian, whose name was Samoset, had been carried to Spain in the year 1614, by a Capt. Hunt, from whence he went to England, where he learnt the language, &c. and returned to America.

the tribes in this region ; and also that the tribe of Patuxet, which had possessed the section on which they had landed, had shortly before been cut off by a mortal sickness. Thro' the instrumentality of this Indian, a friendly intercourse was opened with the neighboring tribes, and a friendly conference introduced with their chiefs ; he taught them also how to cultivate the Indian corn, the next season.

In the course of the winter they formed themselves into a military company, and chose Miles Standish for their captain, who became to the colony a distinguished chief. The first military display of captain Standish, appears in his conducting the great sachem, Massasoit,† upon a friendly interview with governor Carver, March 1621. At this interview a treaty of alliance, offensive and defensive was concluded, with an interchange of great civilities. The governor kissed the hand of the sachem, and the sachem the hand of the governor ; and the treaty was religiously observed for more than fifty years. Captain Standish became the champion of the colony, exhibiting specimens of distinguished coolness, intrepidity and bravery, that rendered his name a terror to the savages and greatly endeared him to the colony. In the midst of these scenes, died governor Carver, April, 1621, and was succeeded by governor Bradford.

During this year, a patent was obtained of the Plymouth company or council of Plymouth for the colony of Plymouth, in the name of Wm. Bradford, his heirs, associates and assigns, which defined the limits of New-England, and confirmed their former title against all encroachments from the crown, or foreign adventures ; and gave them the right of holding the country, either by purchase or conquest. This patent gave strength to the colony, and opened a commercial intercourse with England, in the fur trade, which proved useful and profitable to the parties.‡

In the meantime they continued to explore the country, to cultivate the ground, and maintain upon just and equitable

† Chief of the Packanockets.

‡ On the 3d of Nov. 1620, king James granted a patent to the earl of Warwick, the duke of Lenox, sir Ferdinando Gorges, and others, (to the number of about forty) and their successors, styling them the council of Plymouth, in the county of Devon, for the planting, ruling, ordering and governing of New-England, in America. This charter included all that part of America which lies between the 40th and 48th degrees of north latitude, and was the basis of all the subsequent charters of New-England.



terms, their friendly intercourse with the natives. And in autumn they were blest with plentiful supplies for the approaching winter.

This friendly intercourse excited the jealousy of the Narragansetts, and other tribes yet more remote, which produced some collisions with the friendly tribes ; but these the colony soon quelled by the terror of their fire-arms.

At this time (Nov.) a ship arrived from England, with thirty-five passengers, by which they learnt the distracted state of their country ; and they rejoiced in the God of their comforts, who had given them a quiet retreat amidst the savages of the forest, where they might enjoy the religion of their hearts.

In 1624, the first cattle were brought into New-England, and in 1629, about one hundred and fifty head of horses, cattle, sheep and goats were imported, and they had a rapid increase.

---

## CHAPTER II.

### MASSACHUSETTS.

In the year 1625, died king James I. and was succeeded by his son Charles I. The fire of civil and religious controversy, which distracted the reign of James I. was kindled into a flame in the reign of Charles I. by the madness of the king, his ministers and prelates, at the head of whom stood the duke of Buckingham and bishop Laud. These scenes of distress and persecutions, drove into voluntary banishment, many of those sons of liberty and virtue, which increased the colony of Plymouth, and augmented her strength. Some of the best blood of the nation, looked to the wilds of America for a retreat, and actually obtained patents from the crown, to accomplish their designs.

In the year 1627, the council of Plymouth granted a patent to sir Henry Roswell and others—constituting them a body politic, under the name of “ the governor and company of the Massachusetts bay, in New-England,” &c. This patent extended three miles north of the Merrimac, and three south of Charles river, and from the Atlantic on the east to the Pacific on the west ; which laid the foundation of the colony of

Massachusetts. A settlement commenced this year, at Nantucket, (Salem) by an emigration from England, under the administration of capt. John Endicott; this was augmented the next year, by another emigration, to the number of three hundred.

In 1629, king Charles confirmed the patent of Massachusetts by special charter, which defined the powers of the colony, and appointed John Winthrop and Thomas Dudley, governor and lieutenant governor, with sir Richard Saltonstall and seventeen others, as assistants; and in February, 1630, they arrived from England, with their charter, accompanied by an emigration of about fifteen hundred souls. This accession of wealth, numbers and character, gave new energies to New-England, and called forth the homage of their hearts, in gratitude and praise to God, by a public thanksgiving.†

On the 30th of July, 1630, the first christian church was formed in Boston, and in August following the first general court was held, Justices were regularly appointed, as in England, and a regular support for the gospel was provided by law. During this year, the settlements at and about Boston, progressed rapidly; and the population became so numerous in Boston that it was necessary to build a meeting-house.

In the spring of 1631, the general court resolved, “that the governor, lieutenant governor, and legislature, should be chosen by the freemen only; that none should be admitted to the freedom of the company, but such as were chosen members, who had certificates from their ministers, that they were of orthodox principles, and that none but freemen should vote as electors, or act as magistrates or jurors.” Seven men were chosen in Boston, to regulate the distribution of the town lands, which originated the custom of choosing selectmen to regulate town affairs, throughout New-England.‡

During this year the French from Le Acadia, (Nova Scotia,) seized on a trading establishment at Penobscot, owned by

†At this time a wasting famine produced a mortal disease in the settlements, which led them to appoint Friday, February 6th, as a day of fasting, humiliation and prayer; but the arrival of this ship, with supplies from England, on the 5th, changed the fast into a day of public, thanksgiving.

‡This year the first vessel was built, called the Blessing of the Bay and the next year the first mill was built near Watertown. In 1640 a ship of 300 tons was built at Salem, and one of 160 tons at Boston.

the Plymouth company, (erected 1628) which kindled a fire that was never fully extinguished until the peace of 1763.

In 1632—3 and 4, several emigrations from England arrived, and settled the towns of Ipswich, Medford and Newberry. The churches had now extended more than thirty miles around Boston, and were supplied with faithful pastors. Among the most distinguished of them, were a Higginson, a Parker, a Noyes, a Woodbridge, a Chauncey, and others, whose names are embalmed in the memories of the pious.

At this time a friendly negotiation, for mutual support and defence took place between the colonies of Plymouth and Massachusetts Bay, which proved highly important to the parties.

The flattering prospects of the pilgrims in New-England, were soon published in England, where the spirit of bitterness and persecution continued to rage, and many were induced to abandon their country, and fly into voluntary banishment, to join the standard of the church in the wilderness. Among the most distinguished, were a Haynes, a Hooker, a Cotton, a Stone, with sir Henry Vane, and others, all pious and godly men, who held the first distinctions in the civil and religious establishments of New-England.

In 1634, the general court passed a bill of rights, which guaranteed to the citizens of Massachusetts, the fundamental principles of civil and religious liberty ; which remained during the continuance of their charter, and which, with little alteration, they have continued to enjoy to this day.†

The first trade between New-England and the West-Indies commenced in 1635, and the next year they imported the first negroes, which commenced African slavery among them.

About the year 1629, the Indian claims to the southern section of New-Hampshire, were extinguished by John Wheelwright and others, of the colony of Massachusetts ; but their efforts to settle it were feeble, and they sold their claims to two adventurers in England, Mason and Gorges, who attempted to divide New-England into twelve lordships, under a viceroy or governor general. The whole plan failed, although it

†In 1637, the first synod held in America, was convened at New-town. The design of this synod was to inquire into certain heretical opinions, publicly taught by one Ann Hutchinson, in the town of Boston, and they discovered and condemned eighty-two, as being unorthodox.

was sanctioned by king Charles I. and Gorges vested with the supreme authority. Mason died early, and Gorges, with all his schemes, languished and finally expired, without producing one solitary settlement.

About the years 1633 to 40, settlements commenced at Portsmouth, Dover, Hampton and Exter, but they were soon after assigned over to the jurisdiction of Massachusetts bay.

In 1638, the great earthquake, (so called) was felt throughout the country, which fixed a remarkable epoch in the annals of New-England.

In 1639 and 40,† the settlements progressed rapidly, and improvements kept pace with the settlements. Religion was the first object of attention in New-England; next, civil government and a regular system of education. To effect these great objects, they built meeting houses in all the towns; provided for and settled ministers; established regular civil and judicial courts throughout the colonies—each colony maintaining its independence. Regular schools were established by law throughout their towns, and in 1639, the colony of Massachusetts laid the foundation of the college at Cambridge, by appropriating, as a permanent fund, the sum of £400, which had been granted in 1636, for a public school. In 1639, the rev. John Harvard, minister of Charlestown, made a bequest to the college, of five hundred and forty pounds, which conferred upon the institution the honor of his name. In 1640, the general court granted to the college the avails of the ferry at Charlestown; and the rev. Henry Dunster became their first president. To give permanence and respectability to the college, the general court appointed the magistrates and teaching elders of the six nearest towns, together with the president, as a perpetual government.

In 1650, the general court gave to the college a charter, which appointed a new corporation, consisting of seven, who were to be elective, under the title of the President and Fellows of Harvard College. These two branches united, composed the government of the college. Professorships in all the branches of science have been regularly endowed in this college, (now university) of Cambridge, by a Hollis, a Hancock, a Boylston, a John Alfred, a gov. Bowdoin, and others, whose names distinguish their several professorships. This institution began early to flourish, and has continued to flourish

†In 1639 the cod fishing commenced off cape Ann, and in 1641, more than 300,000 were shipped abroad to foreign markets.

down to the present time, when the number of students generally amounts to about three hundred.

Printing was introduced into the colony, as early as 1639, and a weekly paper soon commenced at Cambridge.

In 1640, a system of laws, to the number of one hundred, was established by the general court, styled the “Body of Liberties.” In this system, it was a fixed principle, “that no injunction should be laid upon any church, church officer, or member, in point of doctrine, discipline or worship, besides the institution of the Lord.” Whenever any law should prove defective, “the word of God was to be the rule of decision.”†

At this time, more than four thousand families had fled from the persecutions of their suffering country, and taken refuge in the wilds of New-England. The expense of this numerous emigration, was estimated at about two hundred thousand pounds sterling, exclusive of the price paid to extinguish the Indian titles to their lands ; and all these efforts were made to lay the foundation of that civil and religious liberty, which they have transmitted down to us their descendants, and which we so richly enjoy.‡

At this time, settlements had commenced in the colonies of Plymouth, Massachusetts, New-Hampshire, Connecticut, N. Haven and Rhode-Island, and were rapidly progressing.

In May, 1643, commenced the general confederacy between the colonies of Plymouth, Massachusetts, Connecticut and New-Haven, under the title of the United Colonies of New-England. This compact became the palladium of New-England ; and its good effects have been felt through the whole period of her political existence, to this day. The same language, laws and religion, united to the same pursuits, gave the same manners, customs and habits, to the whole ; and rendered them one common family.¶

†So early as 1639, the custom of drinking healths was prohibited by law ; and in 1651, all persons were prohibited from “wearing any gold or silver lace, or any bone lace, above 2s. per yard ;” and the select men were authorised to take notice thereof, together with “the apparel of the people, especially in their wearing ribbands and great boots.”

‡In 1650 the general court passed a law against quakers, with a penalty of £100 for all masters of vessels who should bring one into the colony. The next year the statute was amended by adding the punishment of boring their tongues, cropping their ears, &c. and in case of obstinacy, banishment or even death. In 1659, four were actually executed under this statute.

¶In 1646 a synod met at Cambridge, and continued by adjournments into the year 1648. They formed and adopted what is termed the

I will now proceed to bring forward the other colonies of New-England, to the time of this confederacy.

### CHAPTER III.

#### CONNECTICUT.

This district of country, lying south of Massachusetts, and west of Plymouth, was granted by the Plymouth council in England, to the earl of Warwick, and confirmed by Charles I. 1630, extending 120 miles west of the river Naragansett.

In 1631, the earl of Warwick conveyed this grant to the lords Say and Seal, and Brook, and associates, in trust for the pilgrims.†

In 1632, the Plymouth colony sent out adventurers to explore the country, by land. They also explored the coast, the next year and sailed up the Connecticut, as far as the mouth of the Windsor river, where they erected a trading house.

The Dutch settlers at Manhattan, at the mouth of the Hudson river, had explored the coast upon the Sound, and commenced a settlement at Branford; they had also explored the Connecticut, and erected a small fort at mouth of the

Cambridge platform, founded upon the "Westminster confession of faith." The churches of Connecticut and New-Haven were represented in this synod, and the doings of this council were binding upon those colonies, until they established the Saybrook Platform, about 60 years afterward.

†The grant conveyed to lords Say and Seal and Brook, and associates, is as follows: "All that part of New-England in America, which lies and extends itself from a river there called Naraganset river, for the space of forty leagues, upon a strait line, near the shore, towards the southwest and west by south, as the coast runs, towards Virginia; accounting three English miles to the league, and all and singular, the lands and hereditaments whatsoever, lying and being the lands aforesaid, north and south, in latitude and breadth, and in length and longitude, of and within all the breadth aforesaid, throughout all the main lands there, from the Western Ocean to the South seas; and all lands and grounds, soil, wood and woods ground, havens, forts, creeks and rivers, waters, fishings and hereditaments whatsoever, lying within the said space, and every part and parcel thereof; and also all islands lying in America aforesaid, in the said seas, or either of them, on the western or eastern coasts, or parts of the said tracts of land, by these presents to be given or granted."

little river at Hartford, which site retains the name of Dutch-point, to this day.†

In 1633, John Winthrop, son of the governor of Massachusetts, arrived at Boston, with a commission which he had received in England, from lords Say and Seal and Brook, as governor of Connecticut; and he sent out by water, a party of about twenty men, to take possession of the mouth of the Connecticut. A settlement commenced, and a fort was built by this company, with Mr. Fenwick at their head, under the patronage of lords Say and Seal and Brook, and the place retains the name of Saybrook. This settlement obtained a grant of the river Connecticut, by a treaty with the Pequots, which embraced the adjacent country indefinitely, 1634.

In 1635, a little colony of about one hundred persons, from the towns of Dorchester, Newtown and Cambridge, in Massachusetts, removed in a body across this howling wilderness, with their families and effects, and after traversing the desert fourteen days, which for the first time resounded with the praises of the true God, they reached the banks of the Connecticut at Windsor, where a part of the company passed over and planted themselves down at the mouth of Windsor river, in anxious expectation of their effects, and supplies for the approaching winter, which they had sent round by water. Here the scenes and distresses of the pilgrims of Plymouth were renewed; they were in the midst of numerous, fierce, savage tribes; divided from their friends by a pathless desert, their effects and supplies were all lost on their passage, and the blasts of a New England winter, threatened them with inevitable ruin. They fed on such game as they could find, together with acorns, and even the bark of trees, through the winter, and when spring returned, their hearts expanded with gratitude and praise to God.

In June, 1636, a company from Watertown and Dorchester, Mass. with their pious clergyman, the rev. Mr. Hooker, began their march, and with their flocks and herds, traversed the wilderness, as the Windsor company had done before, and commenced settlements at Wethersfield and Hartford.

These settlements first originated a political government for the colony of Connecticut, by a solemn compact, bearing date the 14th of January, 1639. This compact was confirmed by the charter of king Charles II. 1662, which included the co-

†This fort hailed the English boat as she passed, and fired or threatened to fire upon her, but she kept on her course.

lony of New-Haven, and was continued down to the year 1818, when it was superseded by a new constitution.†

†The following is the original constitution of Connecticut, adopted April, 1639 :

“ Forasmuch as it hath pleased Almighty God, by the wise disposition of his divine providence, so as to order and dispose of things, that we, the inhabitants of Windsor, Hartford and Wethersfield, are now cohabiting and dwelling in and upon the river of Connecticut, and the lands thereunto adjoining, and well knowing where a people are gathered together, the work of God requireth, that to maintain the peace and union of such a people, there should be an orderly and decent government established, according to God, to order and dispose of the affairs of the people, at all seasons, as occasion shall require ; do therefore associate and conjoin ourselves to be as one public state, or commonwealth, and do for ourselves, our successors, and such as shall be adjoined unto us at any time hereafter, enter into combination and confederation, together, to maintain and preserve the liberty and purity of the gospel of our Lord Jesus, which we now profess, as also the discipline of the churches, which according to the truth of said gospel, is now practiced among us as also in our civil affairs to be guided, and governed according to such laws, rules, orders and decrees, as shall be made, ordered and decreed, as followeth :—

I. It is ordered, sentenced and decreed, that there shall be yearly two general assemblies, or courts ; the one on the second Thursday of April, and the other on the second Thursday of September following. The first shall be called the court of election, wherein shall be chosen from time to time, so many magistrates and other public officers, as shall be found requisite ; whereof one to be chosen governor for the year ensuing, and until another be chosen and no other magistrate to be chosen for more than one year ; provided always, there be six chosen, besides the governor ; which being sworn according to an oath recorded for that purpose, shall have power to administer justice, according to the laws here established, and for want thereof, according to the rule of the word of God ; which choice shall be made by all that are admitted freemen, and have taken the oath of fidelity, and do cohabit within this jurisdiction, having been admitted inhabitants by the major part of the town, where they live, or the major part as shall be then present.

II. It is ordered, sentenced and decreed, that the election of the aforesaid magistrates shall be in this manner ; every person present and qualified to vote shall bring in to the persons deputed to receive them, one single paper, with the name written on it whom he desires to have governor, and he that hath the greatest number of papers shall be governor for that year ; and the rest of the magistrates and public officers, to be chosen in this manner ; the secretary for the time being, shall read the names of all that are to be put to choice, and then shall severally nominate them distinctly, and every one that would have the person nominated to be chosen, shall bring in one single paper, written upon ; and he that would not have him chosen shall bring in a blank, and every one that has more written papers than blanks shall be a magistrate for that year, which papers shall be received, and told



In 1636, the first court in Connecticut was held at Wethersfield.

by one or more that shall be chosen by the court and sworn to be faithful therein ; but in case there shall not be six persons, as aforesaid, besides the governor, out of those which are nominated, then he or they which have the most written papers, shall be a magistrate, or magistrates for the year ensuing, to make the aforesaid number.

III. It is ordered, sentenced and decreed, that the secretary shall not nominate any person anew, nor shall any person be chosen newly into the magistracy, that was not propounded in some general court before, to be nominated at the next election, and to that end, it shall be lawful for each of the towns aforesaid, by their deputies, to nominate any two, whom they conceive fit to be put to election, and the court may add as many more, as they may judge requisite.

IV. It is ordered, sentenced and decreed, that no person be chosen governor, above once in two years, and that the governor be always a member of some approved congregation, and formerly of the magistracy within this jurisdiction ; and all the magistrates, freemen of this commonwealth ; and that no magistrate, or other public officer, shall execute any part of his or their office, before they are severally sworn, which shall be done in the face of the court, if they be present, and in case of absence, by some one deputed for that purpose.

V. It is ordered, sentenced and decreed, that to the aforesaid court of elections, the several towns shall send their deputies, and when the elections are ended, they may proceed in any public services, as at other courts ; also the other general court, in September, shall be for making laws, and any other public occasions, which concern the good of the commonwealth.

VI. It is ordered, sentenced and decreed, that the governor shall, either by himself, or by the secretary, send out summonses to the constables of every town, for the calling of those two standing courts, one month at least before their several terms ; and also, if the governor and the greatest part of the magistrates see cause, upon any special occasion, to call a general court, they may give orders to the secretary so to do, within fourteen days warning ; and if urgent necessity require, upon a shorter notice, giving sufficient grounds for it to the deputies, when they meet, or else be questioned for the same. And if the governor or major part of the magistrates, shall either refuse or neglect to call the two standing courts, or either of them, as also at other times when the occasions of the commonwealth may require, the freemen thereof, or the major part of them, may petition them so to do, and then if it be either neglected or denied, the said freemen, or the major part of them, shall have power to give order to the constables of the several towns, to do the same, and so may meet together, and choose to themselves a moderator, and may proceed to do any act of power, which any other general courts may.

VII. It is ordered, sentenced and decreed, that after there are warrants given out for the warning of any of the said general courts, that the constable or constables of each town, shall forthwith give notice distinctly, to the inhabitants of the same, in some public assembly, or by going or sending from house to house, that at a place and time by

When the English explored the Connecticut river, in 1634 the Pequots murdered a captain Norton, with six of his com-

him or them limited and set, they meet and assembled themselves together, to elect certain deputies, to be at the general court then following, to agitate the affairs of the commonwealth, which said deputies shall be chosen by all that are admitted inhabitants, in the several towns, and have taken the oath of fidelity : provided that none be chosen a member of the general court, who is not a freeman of this commonwealth. The aforesaid deputy shall be chosen in the following manner : every person that is present and qualified, as before expressed shall bring the names of such persons, written upon a piece of paper, as they desire to have chosen for that employment, and those three or four, more or less, being the number agreed on to be chosen at that time, that have the greatest number of papers written for them, shall be deputies for that court whose names shall be indorsed upon the back of the warrant, and returned into the court, by the constables hand under the same.

VIII. It is ordered, sentenced and decreed, that Windsor, Hartford and Wethersfield shall have power to send four of their freemen from each town, as deputies to every general court, and whatsoever other towns shall be hereafter added to this jurisdiction, they shall send so many deputies, as the court shall judge meet ; a reasonable proportion to the number of freemen in each town, being to be attended therem ; which deputies shall have the power of the whole town to give their votes and allowance, to all such laws and orders as may be for the public good, and unto which the said towns are to be bound.

IX. It is ordered, sentenced and decreed, that the deputies thus chosen, shall have power to appoint a time and place of meeting together, before any general court, to advise and consult of all such things as may concern the public good, as also to examine their own elections whether according to the order ; and if they or the greatest part of them find any election to be illegal, they may seclude such person, for the present, from their meeting and return the same and their reasons to the court ; and if it be true, the court may fine the party or parties, so intruding upon the town, if they see cause and give out a warrant to go to a new election in a legal way, either in part or in the whole ; also the said deputies shall have power to fine any one that is disorderly in their meetings, or for not coming in due time or place, according to appointment ; and they may return said fine into the court, if it be refused to be paid, and the treasurer is to take notice of it, and to ex-treat or levy the same as he doth other fines.

X. It is ordered, sentenced and decreed, that every general court (except such as through neglect of the governor, and the greatest part of the magistrates, the freemen themselves do call) shall consist of the governor or some one chosen to moderate the court, and four other magistrates at least, with the major part of the deputies of the several towns, legally chosen ; and in case the freemen or the major part of them, through neglect or refusal of the governor, and major part of the magistrates shall call a court that shall consist of the major part of the freemen that are present, or their deputies, with a moderator chosen by them, in which said general court, shall consist the supreme

pany which showed the hostility of their character. In 1636, they murdered a Mr Oldham, at Block-Island. These acts of hostility, roused the resentment of Massachusetts, and they resolved to punish the outrage, and bring the offenders to justice. They accordingly detached captain Endicot, with ninety men, with orders to take exemplary punishment on the offenders. They set sail immediately for Block-Island, promptly executed their commission, and from thence directed their course to Connecticut river, where they took twenty men, and returned to Pequot river, (Thames) where they commenced an attack upon their villages; dispersed the Indians, (about 300) burnt their wigwams, canoes, corn, &c. and returned to Boston.

power of the commonwealth, and they only shall have power to make laws or repeal them, to grant levies, to admit freemen, and to dispose of lands undisposed of, to several towns or persons, and also shall have power to call other courts, or magistrate, or any other person whatsoever, into question, for any misdemeanor; and may for just cause, displace or deal with otherwise, according to the nature of the offence; and also may deal in any other matter that concerns this commonwealth, except the election of magistrates, which shall be done by the whole body of the freemen; in which court the governor or moderator shall have power to order the court to give liberty of speech; and silence unreasonable and disorderly speaking, to put all things to vote, and in case the vote be equal, to have a casting vote; but none of these courts shall be adjourned or dissolved, without the consent of the major part of the same.

XI. It is ordered, sentenced and decreed, that when any general court have agreed upon the occasions of the commonwealth, upon any sum or sums of money, to be levied upon the several towns within this jurisdiction, that a committee be chosen, to set out and appoint what shall be the proportion of every town to pay, of the said levy, provided the committee be made up of an equal number from each town. January 14th, 1638—9."

I have inserted this compact at large, to shew the simplicity of that form of government, that formed the basis of the colony of Connecticut, and which served as her political standard, through a period of nearly two centuries; a standard that gave to Connecticut more political peace and enjoyment, than ever fell to the lot of any other body politic in the whole family of man. Out of this compact, have grown up with the rising colony, a system of habits and morals, that have been as powerful in their effects in restraining vice and promoting virtue, in suppressing discord and promoting order, as the laws themselves; a system of morals and habits, which in Connecticut may fairly be denominated the handmaids of the laws. These habits serve to shew with what reverence the sons have cherished the virtues and the virtuous institution of their sires, as well as the blessings they have inherited as their rich reward.

This roused the resentment of the savages : they assaulted the settlement at Saybrook, and an action commenced, in which one of the English was wounded. Depredations were continued, and it became dangerous for the English to appear abroad in their fields, to pursue their labors. In autumn of the same year, the Narragansett chiefs entered into a confederacy with the English at Boston, against the Pequots.

The Plymouth company complained of the aggressions of the Massachusetts colony, upon the Pequots ; but they justified themselves by the necessity of the case.

About this time, the Pequots murdered one Tilly, on the banks of Connecticut river, by cutting off his hands and feet, and thus leaving him to perish.

In May, 1637, six men and three women were killed at Wethersfield ; three young girls were taken prisoners, and twenty cows were driven off. This led the settlers to build a stone fort upon a rising ground, near the great meadow, where the whole village retired to pass the night, and where the women and children sought safety in times of alarm. The men, after this, went armed into the field, to their common labor.

At this time a general court was convened at Hartford, and they resolved to commence and prosecute the war with the Pequots.

The Dutch at Manhattan, encouraged the Indians in their hostilities, which led to a union of effort between Connecticut and Massachusetts. The former furnished ninety men, and the latter one hundred and forty ; these were joined by twenty more from Connecticut, which amounted to two hundred and fifty ; and Uncas, sachem of the Mohegans, united in the war. When the Connecticut troops were assembled for war, the Rev. Mr. Hooker, of Hartford, delivered to them the following address, May 1637 :

“ Fellow soldiers, countrymen and companions ! you are **this** day assembled by the special providence of God : you are not collected by wild fancy, nor ferocious passion. It is not a tumultuous assembly, whose actions are abortive, or if successful, produce only theft, rapine and murder ; crimes inconsistent with nature’s light—inconsistent with a soldier’s valor. You, my dear hearts, were selected from your neighbors, by the godly fathers of the land, for your known courage, to execute such a work. Your cause is the cause of heaven : the

enemy have blasphemed your God,† and slain his servants ; you are only the ministers of his justice. I do not pretend that your enemies are careless or indifferent ; no, their hatred is inflamed, their lips thirst for blood ; they would devour you, and all the people of God ; but my brave soldiers, their guilt has reached the clouds ; they are ripe for destruction ; their cruelty is notorious ; and cruelty and cowardice are always united. There is nothing, therefore, to prevent your certain victory, but their nimble feet and their impenetrable swamps and woods ; from these your small numbers will entice them, or your courage drive them. I now put the question—Who would not fight in such a cause ? fight with undaunted boldness ? do you wish for more encouragement ? more I give you. Riches waken the soldier's sword ; and though you will not obtain silver and gold on the field of victory, you will secure what is infinitely more precious, you will secure the *liberties, the privileges, and the lives of Christ's church, in this new world*. You will procure safety for your affectionate wives, safety for your prattling, harmless, smiling babes : you will secure all the blessings enjoyed by the people of God, in the ordinances of the gospel. Distinguished was the honor conferred upon David, for fighting the battles of the Lord ; this honor, O ye courageous soldiers of God, is now prepared for you. You will now execute his vengeance on the heathen ; you will bind their kings in chains and their nobles in fetters of iron. But perhaps some one may fear that a fatal arrow may deprive him of this honor. Let every faithful soldier of Jesus Christ, be assured, that if any servant be taken away, it is merely because the honors of this world are too narrow for his reward ; an everlasting crown is set upon his head, because the rewards of this life are insufficient. March then with christian courage, in the strength of the Lord ; march with faith in his divine promises, and soon your swords shall find your enemies, soon they shall fall like the leaves of the forest under your feet."

This war opened soon with an action between the Mohegans and Pequots ; the former were successful ; they killed five, took one, and one only escaped: Upon their prisoners they practiced the tortures usual in Indian warfare ; they then cut off their heads, and set them upon the fort. This gave a general alarm ; and the Pequots retired to their forts ; the

†They had said the Englishman's God was one FLY, and the Englishman one SQUAW.

principal of which was on a hill, in what is now the town of Groton. At the head of this tribe was Sassacus, a sachem of great valor, who was considered as invulnerable as a god.

The whole army of Connecticut, under the command of captain Mason, embarked at Saybrook, and entered Mystic river, where they were joined by about seventy friendly Indians ; landed their forces, and entered the forest in quest of the enemy. They approached one of their forts in the dead of night, when the Indians were buried in sleep, and commenced an assault ; a faithful dog, (the Indian's friend and companion) gave the alarm, and the sentinel cried out, Wanux, Wanux, [English, English !] but before they could awake and stand in their defence, the English were in the fort ; the work of death had begun, and the fort was in flames.† Here opened a scene of indiscriminate butchery, amidst the flames of their dwellings, the explosion of fire-arms, the shrieks of the wounded, and the groans of the dying, too horrible to be described. More than six hundred Indians fell a sacrifice in this terrible carnage. This scene kindled in the breasts of Sassacus and his warriors, the keenest revenge, and at the same time filled them with dismay.

When the English were returning to Pequot harbor, (New-London) a distance of six miles, they were attacked by about 300 Indians, with all their savage fury, and the whole wilderness resounded with the war-whoop, and their savage yells ; yet the English were unappalled. They met them with firmness, repelled their attack, drove them into the forest, and they retired to the other fort of Sassacus.

About the first of July, the Massachusetts troops (about 200 in number) arrived, under the command of capt. Stoughton, with their Narragansett allies, surprised a party of Indians in a swamp, killed thirty warriors and took eighty captives, but spared the lives of the women and children.

The time of vengeance had fallen upon the Pequots ; they had made indiscriminate war upon their neighbors, who in their turn practiced a similar warfare and butchery upon them, and killed and destroyed all in their way.

Captain Stoughton pursued the fugitives into the heart of Connecticut ; but they eluded his pursuit, and made their escape. On his return to Pequot, he discovered about one hundred Indians in a swamp ; commenced an attack, killed

†An Indian fort consists of a compact number of wigwams, or huts, enclosed by pallisadoes.

and took about one half and put the remainder to flight.—He distributed his prisoners among the Narragansetts, or sent them to Boston.

Soon after, the Massachusetts and Connecticut troops formed a junction, and set sail for Quinnipiack, now New-Haven. killed and took eight more on their passage, at a point of land, (now Guilford) and cut off the head of a sachem, which gave name to the point, that continues to this day.†

The object of this expedition was to find Sassacus, who had abandoned his fort, and fled into the wilderness ; but the terror of the chief had enlivened his sagacity, and given wings to his feet ; he fled to the Mohawks. The remainder of his tribe, which he had abandoned, fled to a swamp, near Fairfield, with their women and children, where they were assaulted and compelled to surrender ; but the men taking advantage of the night, whilst the English were securing the women and children, stole away out of the swamp and made their escape.

The Mohawks, dreading the resentment of the English, cut off the head of Sassacus, and sent it to Boston.

Thus ended the Pequot war, and the whole nation was exterminated or dispersed. In August the troops returned to their homes, without the loss of one man, by the enemy.—Two only had died, with sickness. Peace was restored, and a day of public thanksgiving was observed throughout New-England.

The pequot war had opened a field for exploring the country, as well as for conquest, and led also to the settlement of New-Haven. This was effected by a company from Boston, with the Rev. John Davenport at their head—a man of great piety and worth, accompanied by Messrs. Eaton and Hopkins (two noted London merchants), who settled the town of New-Haven, 1638. There the first sermon was preached under a large spreading oak, April, 1638, which gave rise to the celebrated song of the pilgrims, “ Around the huge oak.”

This settlement at New-Haven formed an independent compact, very similar to that of Connecticut, and chose Theophilus Eaton their first governor ; and the two colonies remained independent, until their mutual union in 1665.

The government of the colony of New-Haven was more immediately a theocracy, than either of the other colonies

†Sachem's head,

in New-England. The church was at the head of the colony, and the learned and pious Mr. Davenport, was at the head of the church. They held all things in common ; all purchases were made in the name of the colony, and all lands apportioned by a regular distribution. None were admitted as freemen, but such as were church members ; of course all the officers of the colony were men of religion. This fundamental principle of the colony, was confirmed by their first general court held at New-Haven, Oct. 1639. This court consisted of the governor, lieut. governor, magistrates, and two representatives from each town, to be chosen annually. This general court was vested with legislative and judicial powers ; with the right of appeal in all cases, to the supreme court, which was composed of all the magistrates in the colony, six of whom constituted a quorum.

Thus organized, this theocracy took the word of God for the rule of their faith and practice ; and his moral and judicial laws for the basis of their civil code.

The antinomian absurdities, that were distracting the church in Massachusetts, when Messrs. Davenport, Eaton and Hopkins arrived there, from England, led them to guard this colony against similar evils, in their first foundation ; and the purity of the church, which grew out of this, as well as their civil and judicial institutions, have proved lasting monuments of the wisdom and piety of their founders.

In 1643, the colonies of Connecticut and New-Haven entered into a confederacy with the colonies of Massachusetts and Plymouth, for mutual aid and defence.

---

## CHAPTER IV.

### RHODE-ISLAND.

The pilgrims carried with them into the wilds of America, the same civil and religious principles, which prevailed in England, in the time of the commonwealth, and these formed the basis of their civil and religious institutions.

Impressed with the extremes of these virtues, the Rev. Roger Williams emigrated from England, and settled at Salem as assistant to the Rev. Mr. Skelton, 1631. Mr. Williams soon disclosed the following sentiments : 1. " That such



churches or church members, as had held a communion with the church of England, should manifest their repentance by a confession. 2. That it is not lawful for the godly to hold communion with the ungodly, either in prayer, or in an oath. 3. That it is not lawful for the unregenerate to pray.— 4. That the magistrates ought to be excluded from all interference in religious matters, and that whatever controlled a free toleration of religious sentiment, was persecution ; and lastly, that king Charles' patent was founded in injustice, and therefore a nullity."

These sentiments, openly and publicly avowed, led the colony of Massachusetts to call Mr. Williams to an account, and banish him from their limits.† Mr. Williams fled into the wilderness, and settled upon the banks of a noble river, near the confines of Massachusetts, where he began a settlement, which he called Providence, commemorative of his providential deliverance and preservation. This commenced the settlement of Rhode-Island, 1636.

In 1636, William Coddington, a rich and respectable merchant of Boston, together with the Rev. John Clark, and sixteen others, removed from Massachusetts, and purchased the island of Aquetnec, which they called Rhode Island, (in allusion to the island of Rhodes) where they commenced a settlement called Portsmouth.

In 1639, Newport was settled, and they formed a civil compact and chose Mr. Coddington their first chief magistrate.

In 1640, the inhabitants of Providence associated in a form of government, and the settlements in the colonies progressed rapidly. These compacts were purely democratic, and embraced the whole field of religious toleration.‡

In 1644, they obtained, through Mr. Williams, a patent from the earl of Warwick, which guaranteed to them the right of governing themselves.¶ They proceeded to elect a president, and four commissioners, as conservators of the

†Mr. Williams was summoned to appear before the general court, where all the ministers of the colony were convened, and Mr. Hooker of Hartford, (Conn.) was selected to hold a public conversation with him, to reclaim him, if possible ; but Mr. Williams was fixed, and he was sentenced by the court to perpetual banishment, in six weeks ; and the ministers approved the sentence.

‡Mr. Williams laid the foundation of his colony with the Baptist church, which was the first in America.

¶Mr. Williams, visited England this year, and as agent for the colony, obtained their patent.

peace, together with a legislative court of commissioners, consisting of six, whose acts were binding, unless repealed by the freemen. In May, 1647, the first general court enacted a body of laws that gave permanence to the government.

In 1652, the patent of the earl of Warwick was revoked by order of parliament ; but was renewed soon after, and continued until 1663, when they obtained a regular charter from king Charles II. under the title of “ the governor and company of the English colony of Rhode-Island and Providence plantations.”

This charter placed Rhode-Island upon the same footing as the colony of Connecticut, and authorised them to pass and repass through, and traffic with, any of the colonies in New-England.

The first legislative council, that assembled under this charter, by a special act. excluded Roman catholics from the liberties of freemen, and thereby from the government.

At the commencement of the reign of James II. who was a catholic, they were brought to smart in their turn, for their intolerance. James ordered a writ of *quo warranto* against the charter, and placed Rhode Island under the government of sir Edmond Andros, governor of Massachusetts, 1686.

The revolution in England, of 1688, which stripped James II. of his crown, and sent him into banishment, caused the recovery of Rhode Island. She resumed her charter, and has continued to preserve it.

In 1764, Nicholas Brown, esq. founded the university at Warren, which bears his name, by a donation of \$5000. This was removed to Providence shortly after, where it became flourishing and respectable, 1770.

Before we enter upon that crisis, which fixed the destiny of New England, known by the name of Philip's war, we will take a survey of the natives of the country, the number of their tribes, local residence, particular chiefs, &c.



## CHAPTER V.

### NATIVES OF NEW-ENGLAND, WITH THEIR SACHEMS AND TRIBES.

The charter of the colony of Plymouth embraced three sachemdoms, including many small tribes ; the principal of

these tribes were the Naucets, whose sachem was Mashpee. They lay about the cape.

On the west of the colony, and extending into Rhode-Island, lay the Packanockets, a numerous tribe, with their great sachem Massasoit,† whose influence and control extended over the neighboring tribes. The great Philip, whose wars we are about to relate become the sachem of this tribe, and thus acquired his influence.

West of the Packanockets, extending along the coast, and about the Narragansett bay, lay the Narragansetts. These embraced several smaller tribes, under their great sachem Miantonimo. This was the most numerous sachemdom in New-England.

West of the Narragansetts, lay the Pequots, whose destruction has been noticed. North of the Pequots lay the numerous tribes of Haddam, Middletown, Wethersfield, Hartford and Windsor, which were styled the river tribes, but the most numerous of all these, was the tribe of Podunks, at Windsor.

West of the Connecticut, not only upon the sea-coast, but extending back into the country, were various tribes, and sachemdoms, inhabiting the fertile banks of all the numerous rivers and streams with which the country abounds.

East of the river Indians, and north of the Pequots, were the Mohegans, which extended into the now counties of Windham and Tolland, who were governed by the great sachem Uncas. This tribe, with the Pequots, in 1636, could muster one thousand warriors; and the whole number of Connecticut Indians was then estimated at about 12,000.

The Rhode-Island Indians, at the commencement of Philip's war, were estimated at 2000 warriors, and about one half had fire-arms. Their whole number in that state, in 1636, was estimated at about 8000.

The whole number, as well as the particular tribes in Massachusetts, at the early settlement, was not known; but at the commencement of Philip's war, they were estimated at 10 or 12,000.

The great sachem of Massachusetts, resided upon an eminence at Dorchester, and his dominions extended, generally, over the adjacent country, lying about the great bay. The mouth of Charles river was the place of general rendezvous, for all the neighboring tribes.

†Who made the first treaty with governor Carver.

In the now county of Worcester, lay the Nipmuck tribe ; at Agawam or Ipswich, was another tribe, and at Naumkeag, (Salem) was another sacheindom, that embraced all the tribes in the eastern part of Massachusetts proper.

In New Hampshire, the Newcehewannock, Wianooet, Pa-tucket, Amoskeag and Pennecook tribes, dwelt upon the principal rivers.

In the province of Maine, the Norridgewock, Kennebeck, Penobscot, and several other tribes, dwelt upon the principal waters. These were denominated Tarenteens ; and with the more eastern Indians, (called Abinaquies), were numerous and warlike, and almost perpetually at war with the English.

The natives of North America, in their physical character, have all a strong resemblance, excepting the Esquimaux of Labrador and the northern regions ; these are a dwarfish race, peculiar to themselves.

The other tribes are tall and straight in their persons ; well proportioned, with hair long, straight and black ; small black eyes ; teeth white and regular, with olive skin, and firm athletic constitutions. In their walk, they carry their chins high, with a firm and manly step. They are shrewd in their intellectual powers, with strong retentive memories. Warm friends, but implacable enemies, mild in peace, fierce and intrepid in war ; easily provoked, but not easily appeased ; strong national pride, that disdains to ask even life of an enemy, but takes delight, and even glories in the torture and death of their enemies. They have no books but nature's volume, wherein they learn the arts of war and of the chase, by which they defend and support themselves. The same volume teaches them how to construct their wigwams or dwellings ; their bows and arrows, as weapons of war or the chase ; their wampum for ornament ; stone hatchets, as substitutes for the axe, and their stone mortars, to grind or pound their corn ; the art of dressing skins for clothing, and the art of weaving mats from the bark of trees or Indian hemp ; also, the art of ship-building, so far as to construct canoes from the bark of trees, that are both safe and portable.

Their husbandry is confined to the culture of a few simples, such as corn, beans, potatoes, melons, &c. ; these supply their wants, for nature's wants are few.

The same volume of nature teaches them how to heal their diseases and cure their wounds, by the plants that grow in nature's garden. When these fail, they often use the cold or

warm bath. But their diseases are few, and their remedies few and simple.

The employments of the men are more generally confined to war and hunting ; the squaws till the ground, rear the children, nurse the sick, do the drudgery, and when they travel, carry the pappoose upon their backs. In fine, the squaws are the slaves. This is not only true of savage life, but of all countries where the gospel is not enjoyed.

The amusements of the men are such athletic exercises as are best calculated to render them dexterous, either in war or the chase. Their war dances are always round a large fire, in which they sing the feats of their warriors, and in their gestures, act over the scenes of the combat. The squaws seldom, if ever, join in their sports, or enjoy amusements, or recreations among themselves.

The dress of both sexes is very similar, and is adapted directly to the season ; in summer, very light ; in winter, the skins of the chase keep them warm. All classes are fond of show and ornament ; but the chiefs take great delight in painting themselves for war or public shows. If for war, the more hideous their figure, the more highly ornamental.

Their habitations, or wigwams, are mere pens, inclosed and covered with bark or brush, with an aperture at the top, through which the smoke of the fire ascends ; the earth their bedsted, and skins their bed and covering. They usually sleep around the fire, with their feet inward, like so many radii of a circle.

Their domestic utensils are such as are necessary to pound the corn, roast or boil their food ; and at the same time may be carried by hand, or on their backs, when they remove.

Their food is such as the chase affords, or fish when they can be obtained ; and thus they devour uncooked, whenever the situation of their enemies, or their own removals, render it necessary.

Their money consists in wampum, skins, shells, or such articles of barter, as nature requires. A belt of wampum is generally used as a confirmation of a treaty, or any other engagement, assurance or promise.

Social intercourse between the sexes is not known ; a squaw is a degraded, savage slave, who knows no better condition.

The language of the Indians is strong, bold, nervous, and energetic ; capable of powerful expression, and they possess powerful means of using it. In fine, both in utterance and

gesture, they are nature's orators, who rise and fall with the magnitude of their subject ; but their language possesses nothing of the social turn, and is barren of those expressions peculiar to the *tete a tete* of social life.

War is the study and delight of the savage ; and this he conducts, by surprising and destroying his enemies ; or if discovered too soon, by rushing to the conflict with daring intrepidity, and rending the air with horrid yells, whilst the combat continues ; but his chief delight is in the torture of his captives.

The governments of the tribes are absolute. The will of the chief or sachem, is fixed, and binding upon the whole ; but in all questions of war or peace, and in all treaties, especially such as regard a sale or exchange of property, the chief always assembles his council of old men, or warriors, and the subject is fairly and fully discussed. The young men often attend in council, but never speak. Although the voice of the majority is generally decisive, still it is in the power of the chief alone to decide. They speak deliberately, listen attentively, and such is their memory, that they often retain a long speech, and in their reply the next day, repeat it correctly.

The religion of the Indians corresponds with the religion of all the ancient heathen nations, as well as the more modern. They believe in the existence of a supreme being, who made and governs all things, whom they call the Great Spirit. Him they consider as the author of all good. They believe also in an evil deity, whom they consider as the author of all evil. The first, they worship as the object of their love ; and the other, as the object of their fear.

Marriages among the Indians are considered as temporary contracts, but they often, if not generally, continue through life. The squaw, however, is never considered by the parties as being any thing more than the menial of her sanep or husband.

The rites of sepulture are more uniform among the Indians than any other rites. They generally bury their dead in a sitting posture, with their clothes on, and faces towards the east, accompanied with their arms, and other utensils, necessary for a long journey ; for they believe in a future state where they expect to visit their friends and relatives, whose smiles will reward their virtues, and whose frowns will punish their crimes. Loud howlings, by way of mourning, at the sepulture of their dead, are common among the Indians.

It is usual for some tribes to collect the bones of their dead, and deposit them in a common cemetery, now called a barrow.

The resemblance of the natives of America in form and feature, as well as in manners and customs, to the northern Asiatics, has led to a general belief, that they migrated from that continent, across Beering's straits, a distance of only forty-one miles, which may often be passed upon the ice.

It has become a very fashionable opinion, that the natives of North America are descendants of the ten tribes of Israel, and has the following authority of William Penn. "For their origin, (the natives,) I am ready to believe them of the Jewish race; I mean of the stock of the ten tribes, and that for the following reasons. First, they were to go to a land not planted nor known. (Esdras xiii. 39—50.) which to be sure Asia and Africa were, and even Europe; and he that intended that extraordinary judgment, might make their passage easy to them, as it is not impossible to cross from the easternmost parts of Asia to the westernmost parts of America. In the next place, I find them of like countenance, and their children of so lively a resemblance, that a man could think himself in Duke's place, or Berry-street, London, where he seeth them. But this is not all, they agree in rites, they reckon by moons, they offer their first fruits, they have a kind of feast of tabernacles, they are said to lay their altar upon twelve stones, their mourning a year, the custom of women, &c."

The whole number of the New-England Indians, could never be exactly known; but it was at all time, sufficient to have destroyed the English, before the settlement of Connecticut, and the destruction of the Pequots; after that time, the English had become too strong, and they were able to quell an insurrection of all the tribes, when united in one grand confederacy, and armed with muskets, as may be seen in the following war, styled Philip's war.†

*Philip's War, 1675.*—During a period of fifty-five years, the English had lived quietly with the savages of New-England, excepting the war which exterminated the Pequots, and some small collisions with the Narragansett and some smaller tribes; but this war commenced as a war of extermination, by a coalition of all the tribes of New-England. This plot

† The whole number of Indians within the limits of the thirteen original United States, at the commencement of their settlement, has been estimated at 150,000,

was communicated to the English by a friendly Indian, but it was too late ; he paid for his friendship, by falling a sacrifice to savage resentment, the next day, and the war opened by an attack upon the people of Swanzey, as they returned from meeting on the Sabbath. In this attack, two men were killed and one wounded ; the people dispersed and fled ; the Indians pursued, and eight men were killed.

A body of horse and infantry was despatched from Boston, into the enemy's country, and besieged Philip in his retreat. They commenced an attack, and dispersed the savages, with the loss of one man killed and one wounded.

They next compelled the Narragansetts to a peace, and returned to Boston.

The English at Boston, hearing that Philip had fled to the Nipmucks, sent an embassy to renew the treaty with that tribe ; but Philip was there, and excited them to war. The embassy was received by the explosion of an Indian ambush, which killed eight of the mission, and wounded their chief : the rest fled to a neighboring village, where they all assembled in one house.

Philip with his Indians pursued, burnt the village, and surrounded the house. Here commenced one of the most memorable attacks recorded in the wars of New-England. An incessant discharge of musketry pierced the house on every side, accompanied with the most hideous savage yells ; but all without effect, excepting the loss of one man killed. They then set fire to a cart, loaded with swingling tow and other combustibles, and moved it up against the house ; yet even this was extinguished by a special providential shower of rain. At this critical moment, major Willard arrived with a party of English, and put the enemy to flight with very considerable slaughter.

The enemy next appeared at Deerfield, on Connecticut river, and laid waste the village. They next attacked Northfield, and killed eight men, and cut off captain Burr, who was sent to the relief of Northfield, with a party of thirty men. Captain Lathrop, who was sent from Boston, to the relief of Deerfield, with a party of eighty men and teams, fell into an Indian ambush, and lost seventy of his men, who were all buried in one grave.†

† This party, on their return, were carelessly engaged at Muddy Brook, in gathering grapes, when they were surprised by a party of about eight hundred Indians, and seventy were shot down in a few moments.



A captain Mosely, who was near with a body of men, flew to the relief of his friends, dispersed the enemy, who fled, and left 136 killed and wounded, on the field. Captain Mosely lost only two men.

This scene was distressing beyond what the pilgrims had ever experienced ; the whole country was filled with consternation and distress.

The Indians next appeared at Springfield, and burnt thirty-two houses. This alarmed the general court, then sitting at Boston, and they appointed a civil and ecclesiastical committee, to inquire into the state of New-England, if possibly, they might discover and correct those crying sins, that had brought such heavy judgments upon the land. The committee reported agreeable to their appointment, and a general reformation of manners and morals was recommended.

The Tarenteens or eastern Indians, at this time, were excited to war by the wanton misconduct of some English seamen, and they commenced their ravages in New-Hampshire and Maine. Saco, Scarborough and Kittery, suffered severely by their murders, robberies and conflagrations. More than thirty of the English were killed, and many houses, barns and mills were consumed. New-England was now involved in one general distress and gloom.

The ravages of the enemy had now become general in Massachusetts. Before the flames of Springfield were extinguished, seven or eight hundred Indians attacked the town of Hatfield, but they were repulsed with very great carnage, and fled to Narragansett, and took refuge in a strong hold, in a dismal swamp, where they felt secure. This fort was situated upon a rising ground in the midst of the swamp, and surrounded with pallisadoes and trees, and so constructed as to be deemed impenetrable, with but one entrance, which lay over a water, upon a single tree ; and this pass was strongly guarded. In this fort were collected about 4,000 Indians.

The forces of New England, consisting of about eighteen hundred men, and one hundred and sixty friendly Indians, now rallied to the combat, under general Winslow. They pursued the enemy in the midst of frost and snow, with the greatest possible rapidity, and overtook a party at the entrance of the swamp, who exchanged one shot and fled to their strong hold. The English advanced and commenced an attack upon the fort, but were repulsed with loss. They soon renewed the attack with redoubled ardor, and entered the fort amidst a

tremendous explosion of musketry, and put all to the sword that fell in their way, excepting about three hundred warriors, and three hundred women and children, that were taken, and the rest fled and made their escape. The English next set fire to about six hundred wigwams, which exhibited a solemn and awful scene. Amidst the rage of the flames were heard the shrieks of the aged and the sick, the infant and the mother, and the groans of the dying. With all this distress was connected the destruction of their stores, and magazines of corn. More than one thousand warriors were slain, and the affrighted fugitives became the miserable victims of death the ensuing winter, for the want of those very stores, whose destruction they now witnessed.

This was a glorious day to New-England, although they had purchased this victory with the loss of six brave captains, and about two hundred and thirty men killed and wounded ; yet God had given their enemies into their hands, and broken the strength of the natives.

It was now the 20th of December, and the driving snow and piercing cold, were very distressing to the wounded among the English ; yet their sufferings were small, compared to those of the savages, who had lost their all, in this murderous conflict.

Although the strength of the savages was now broken, yet the same power in Canada that had furnished fire-arms for the war, now furnished allies to fill their ranks, and carry on an Indian predatory war.

In January, they laid Mendon in ashes. In February, they destroyed Lancaster, and carried off the inhabitants into captivity ; particularly Mrs. Rowlinson, the wife of their minister, who was then absent.†

The same torch consumed part of Marlborough, Sudbury, Chelmsford and Medford ; and even Plymouth witnessed the loss of two of her families. In March, they carried the torch into Warwick, Marlborough and Sudbury again, Northampton and Groton, and committed a massacre at Springfield.

The English pursued the war with energy ; but they suffered severely from the musketry of the savages, who had become as fierce as bears bereft of their whelps.

This war of extermination raged through the month of

† Mrs. Rowlinson returned to her friends, after a long captivity in Canada, and wrote her own memoirs, in which her sufferings are fully described.

March, near the close of which, the towns of Rehoboth, Providence and Andover, suffered severely by conflagration. Sudbury was again attacked by about 500 Indians, and felt the loss of her brave captain Wadsworth, and more than fifty men. The savages wreaked their vengeance on their prisoners, with the most cruel tortures.

These scenes of desolation and distress called up the attention of the pilgrims to a sense of their situation, and led them to eye the hand of God in these judgments, and to pour out their souls to him in the deepest humility, fasting and prayer. One general spirit of supplication prevailed throughout the churches of New-England. God heard their prayers, and gave them a gracious answer of peace.

The ravages of the enemy were soon closed for the want of supplies, and the parties which were scattered about the country, were hunted like wild beasts, by the united forces of Massachusetts and Connecticut. They were driven from Bridgewater, Medfield, Northampton. Hadley, Hatfield and Rehoboth, with severe loss and carnage.

These signal victories opened the hearts of the people of Massachusetts, in a public thanksgiving to Almighty God, for the success of the war.

The scene was now changed. The Maquas, a powerful tribe, resented some wrongs which they had suffered from Philip, rose in arms, fell upon his flying parties, and butchered them without mercy.

Struck with despair, Philip fled to Mount Hope, and his people sought safety by flight.

The troops of Massachusetts and Connecticut again entered the country of the Narragansetts, and triumphed over their enemies, wherever they found them; killing and destroying more than 2000 of the savages. Last of all, they discovered Philip in one of his swamps, shot him, and carried his head to Plymouth, where it heightened the gratitude of their public thanksgiving, and gave a new zest to the joy of their hearts.†

Thus fell great Philip, the head of this terrible confederacy against the pilgrims of New England; and with him all hopes of further success in this bloody, savage war.

† Captain Church, the hero of New-England, ordered Philip to be beheaded and quartered, and the Indian who executed the order, thus addressed the fallen chief:—"You have been one very great man. You have made many men afraid of you; but so big as you be I will cut off your head."

To recount the exploits of the heroes of New-England, who distinguished themselves in this memorable war, would exceed the limits of this work. Such coolness and bravery, as well as intrepidity and skill, as were displayed by both officers and troops, have rarely, if ever been recorded.†

Such was the severity of the war, that New-England lost more than 600 of her valiant sons, who fell upon the field, or suffered a miserable captivity. Almost every family was in mourning; more than 600 buildings, (mostly dwelling houses) had been burnt; property to a great amount had been destroyed, and the colonies were greatly in debt. Yet they sustained all this loss, with becoming patience and resignation.

The ravages of the Tarenteens continued in New-Hamp-

† Among the heroes of that day, none were so conspicuously distinguished, and deserving of notice, as a captain Church, of the colony of Plymouth. More than a double portion of the mantle of the renowned captain Standish, had fallen upon captain Church, and acquired for him, more than a double portion of renown in this memorable war. The daring intrepidity, and the unexampled skill of this knight of New-England, in eluding the wiles of the enemy, in exploring their retreats, in repelling their assaults, in conducting his attacks, in overawing his enemy, and in commanding the respect, confidence, and even affections of his prisoners, were all distinguished features, peculiar to the character of captain Church. He was greatly prospered in his affairs after the war, and commanded the respect and admiration of all who knew him, both as a man and a neighbor, a friend and a christian, as well as a hero; and in 1690, he engaged, with a major's command, in a successful expedition against the eastern Indians, who had commenced depredations on the settlements in Maine. In 1692, he accompanied governor Phips, to Pemaquid, and from thence he was detached against the Penobscot tribe, and when he had subdued these, and scoured extensively the banks of the Kennebec, he returned in triumph. In 1696, the governor detached him into that eastern country, and he penetrated into the French settlements at Nova-Scotia, and brought off much spoil.

In 1704, our hero was detached again with a colonel's command, into that eastern country, to quell the depredations of the French and Indians; he again scoured the country, and killed, took or dispersed all the French and Indians: again he entered Nova Scotia, took some of their towns, and again returned in triumph, greatly enriched with the spoils of the enemy. Soon after his return, he received a severe contusion, by a fall from his horse, of which he died suddenly, in the seventy-eighth year of his age. His memory was long held in grateful remembrance by the pilgrims of the wilderness, and his name will ever live in the annals of New-England.

shire and Maine, until the spring of 1678, when peace was restored.

We will now carry forward the colony of New-Hampshire.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

### NEW-HAMPSHIRE.

In the month of September, 1679, king Charles II. caused the following commission to be issued under the great seal of the realm, for the government of New-Hampshire.†

“ After inhibiting and restraining the jurisdiction exercised by Massachusetts over the towns of Portsmouth, Dover, Exeter and Hampton, and all other lands extending from three miles north of the Merrimac, to the province of Maine, this commission appoints John Cutts, esq. president for one year, and until another shall have been appointed by the same authority ; also Richard Martin and William Vaughn, with four others, to be of the council, who were authorised to choose three others in the province, to be added to them. The president to appoint a deputy to preside in his absence ; and the president, or his deputy, with five counsellors, to form a quorum. They were to meet at Portsmouth, in twenty days after the arrival of the commission, and publish it. They were constituted a court for the administration of justice, according to the laws of England, so far as circumstances would permit : reserving the right of appeal to the king in council, for actions of fifty pounds value. They were to appoint military officers, and take all needful measures for defence against the common enemy. Liberty of conscience was allowed to all protestants ; those of the church of England to be particularly encouraged. For the support of government, they were to continue the present taxes, until an assembly could be called ; to which end they were to issue writs of election, within three months, under the province seal, for calling an assembly, to whom the president shall recommend the passing

† It will be recollected that the first attempts to settle this colony in 1629, so far failed, as to constrain the patentees to assign the jurisdiction to the colony of Massachusetts, in the year 1640, where it continued until this time.

such laws as should establish their allegiance, good order and defence ; and the raising taxes, in such manner and proportion as they should see fit. All laws to be approved by the president and council, and then to remain in full force, until the king's pleasure could be known : for which purpose they should be sent to England by the first ships.

In case of the president's death, his deputy to succeed him ; and on the death of a counsellor, the remainder were to elect another, and send over his name, with the names of two other meet persons, that the king might appoint one of the three.

The king engaged for himself and his successors, to continue the privilege of an assembly, in the same manner and form, unless by inconvenience arising therefrom, he or his heirs should see cause to alter the same."

On the first of March, 1680, the first legislative assembly was convened, according to this commission or charter. They proceeded to declare the colony of New-Hampshire free, and independent of the colony of Massachusetts, and to enact wise and salutary laws.

The peace of this government was of short duration. Mason, (son and heir of the original grantee) came over, and demanded a seat in the government, which was granted ; but he soon returned to England in disgust, and made a partial surrender of his claims to the crown, and mortgaged the remainder to Edmond Cranfield, esq. who was appointed lieutenant governor and commander-in chief of New-Hampshire.

In 1682, Cranfield repaired to his government with a commission from the crown, with " full powers to call, adjourn, prorogue, and dissolve general courts, to have a negative voice in all the acts of government, to suspend any counsellor at his will, (which barred his future election,) to appoint a deputy governor, judges, justices, and other officers, and to exercise the powers of vice-admiral."

Here commenced a new order of things. Cranfield arrived, disclosed his commission, and commenced a system of tyranny and persecution. A new assembly was called, many new laws were enacted, and a doctur of £50 voted to the governor, which softened for a time, the rigors of his administration. The assembly was adjourned.

In January, 1683, the assembly met according to adjournment. New collisions sprang up, and the governor dissolved

the assembly ; this threw the colony into confusion, and the cry of " liberty and reform," became the order of the day.

These scenes led to new troubles. Mason appeared again, set up his claims, and demanded that all lands and estates should be held of him by lease, upon an annual rent ; and the governor favored the claim. The people resisted, prosecutions commenced, and judgments were rendered in favor of Mason, but he could not obtain any consideration ; all was anxiety and alarm, and the people petitioned the king.

The governor called an assembly to quiet the people, but they were not cordial to his views, and he dissolved them. The governor next commenced a religious persecution, upon the English statutes of non-conformity and actually obtained judgment against the Rev. Joshua Moody, minister of Portsmouth, one of the worthies of New-England, and committed him to prison for the term of six months, without bail.

The governor next attempted to levy taxes, by the advice of his council, without the consent of the assembly, which roused the people to a just sense of their rights ; and they exhibited such complaints to the king, as caused his removal ; and Birefoot, the lieutenant governor, succeeded to the chair, where he continued until succeeded by Dudley, as president of New-England.

The spirit of liberty which prevailed throughout the colonies, gave great offence to the king,† and he determined to check and control it ; accordingly he appointed sir Edward Randolph, as a special agent of the crown, to remove all their charters, by writs of *quo warranto*, and *scire facias*, and appointed Joseph Dudley, esq. president, and sir Wm. Stoughton vice-president, with Simon Bradstreet, Robert Mason, and thirteen others as counsellors. This government embraced Massachusetts, New-Hampshire, Maine,‡ Rhode-Island and Connecticut.

This form of government commenced May, 1686, to the utter exclusion of these legislative assemblies, which had become so offensive to the governors of the crown. From this

† James II.

‡ Sir Ferdinand Gorges had obtained of the crown a charter of this district, extending from the river Piscataqua to Sagadahock, in the year 1639 ; but failing in his attempts to settle the country, it was annexed to the jurisdiction of Massachusetts, about the year '62 ; or by actual purchase of the heirs of Gorges, for the sum of £1200, in the year 1677.

council of the country were selected judges of the county courts, with right of appeal to their superior courts, to be holden at Boston, and from thence to the crown. Justice courts, and probate courts were organized under this government, and a complete new order of things commenced in New England.

To strengthen this government yet further, sir Edmond Andros, late governor of New-York, was appointed captain-general and commander-in-chief over the colonies of New-England, not including Plymouth. To this government a council was added, five of whom, with the governor, made a quorum, with powers almost unlimited. To this government the colony of New-York was annexed.

This new order of things in New-England arose out of the change which had taken place in England.—Charles II. had died, and James II. succeeded to the throne, 1685. James was a bigoted Roman catholic, and a tyrant; and the people of England were groaning under his despotic sway, as well as the colonies.

When the people of England expelled James from the throne in 1688, and conferred it upon William and Mary, the people of Boston rose in arms, seized Andros, and sent him to England.

In this unsettled state of things the colonies resumed their charters, and New-Hampshire again put herself under the protection of Massachusetts.

About this time the heirs of Mason sold their claims for £750, free from entail, to Samuel Allen, of London, and he obtained a commission for the government of New-Hampshire, with the appointment of John Usher, his son-in-law, as deputy governor, with full powers in Allen's absence, together with twelve counsellors, who acted under the crown, independent of the legislative assemblies.

In 1692, Usher took possession of his government, in the midst of an extensive Indian war, which filled that country with distress, and drenched it in blood. The Indians of Nova Scotia and Canada became engaged in this war, and like that of Philip, it was a war of extermination.†

† The whole white population of British America, at this time, did not exceed 200,000.



## CHAPTER VII.

## NEW-HAMPSHIRE, CONTINUED.—KING WILLIAM'S WAR.

The revolution in England which drove James from his throne, threw him into the arms of Louis XIV. king of France; brought William, prince of Orange, with Mary his wife,† to the throne of England, and involved the nation in a war with France, 1688.

The passions which kindled this war, extended to New-England, through the instrumentality of the baron de Castine, (who resided at Penobscot,) and the governor of Canada, the eastern Indians were induced to take up the hatchet. The baron had received some pointed injury from sir Edmond Andros, during his administration. And about the year 1676, 400 Indians, upon the river Cochecho, had been seized by a major Waldron, sent abroad and sold as slaves.

Part of these Indians had now returned, and were thirsting for blood. These facts, added to the national war, were the cause of immediate hostilities.

The savages surprised the town of Dover, upon the Cochecho, where they murdered major Waldron in a most barbarous manner, with twenty-two others, and twenty-nine were carried captives to Canada; five or six houses, with the mills, were burnt and the savages made their escape.‡

They next surprised a village on Oyster river; seized a block-house, killed eighteen men, murdered several children, and carried the women captives to Canada.

When winter set in, count Frontenac, governor of Canada, let loose his savages in three divisions, accompanied with French Canadians, who spread carnage and desolation throughout the settlements on the frontier, 1690. Schenectady (a Dutch settlement on the Mohawk,) fell the first victim.

† Daughter of James II.

‡ When the savages entered the house of major Waldron, he awoke at the alarm, seized his sword and drove them from his apartment; but in attempting to return for his gun, an Indian knocked him down. They then seized him and bore him into an outer apartment, where they seated him upon a long table, in his elbow chair, and presenting themselves before him, exclaimed "Who judge Indians now?" They then menaced him with their knives, cutting him at the same time across the breast and body, exclaimed "I cross out my account." They next cut off his nose and ears, and thrust them into his mouth; and when he grew faint from loss of blood, they tumbled him down upon the point of his own sword, which closed the horrid scene.

A settlement at Salmon Falls, was next surprised by another party ; a sharp action commenced, eighty men, women and children were either killed or taken ; the village was plundered, and the cattle were driven off.

A party of 140 men pursued, overtook and dispersed the savages, after a sharp action, and brought back the spoil.

In the spring, a third party from Quebec, surprised and destroyed the settlement at Casco, in Maine, and the eastern settlers abandoned their villages, and fled to Wells.

Alarmed at this daring enterprise, the colonies of New-England resolved to destroy the power of the French in Canada, at a blow. They accordingly united in fitting out a fleet and armament against Quebec, under the command of sir Wm. Phipps ; but the season was too far advanced, and the expedition failed. The expenses of this expedition, caused the first emission of paper money in New-England.

The Indians, alarmed at the energies of the English, practised a new stratagem : they voluntarily came in, and proffered a truce, which was accepted, and the terms of peace were agreed upon, and hostages left on their part to guarantee their fidelity. This truce continued until the June following, when, in the midst of security, the Indians attacked the fort at Wells, which had become the asylum of the east, but were repulsed with great slaughter. They next attacked Exeter, but with the destruction of only two men. They then fell upon Sandy Beach, where they killed and destroyed twenty-two persons, 1691. In January, 1692 they surprised and destroyed York, which closed the scene for the winter, generally ; but in May following, they again fell upon the fortress at Wells, and were again repulsed with great loss. This, added to the vigilance and exertions of sir Wm. Phipps, governor of Massachusetts, kept the Indians quiet.

This state of quiet, which continued through the years 1692 and 3, became again a snare to the English, by lulling them into a state of security. In the midst of this false security, the sieur Villien, the brave defender of Quebec, against the expedition under sir Wm. Phipps, being now removed to the command of the station at Perobscot, assembled a force of about 250 Indians, attended by a French priest, and made a descent upon the village of Dover, upon Cyster river, where he took and destroyed five garrison houses out of twelve ; the others were defended with firmness. In this enterprise, about 100 persons were killed and taken, and about twenty houses

were destroyed, and the Indians escaped with their booty, 1694. The next year, two men again were killed at Exeter, and in 1696, a small village at Sandy Beach was surprised and burnt; fourteen persons were killed and four were taken and carried off. A strong party pursued, and recovered the prisoners and plunder, but the savages made their escape. They next surprised the citizens of Dover, on the Sabbath, as they returned from meeting; three were killed and three wounded, and three were taken and carried to Penobscot, from whence they were soon returned. In 1697, they attempted to surprise the town of Exeter, but were providentially discovered, and they fled. In their retreat, they took vengeance on a major Frost, at Kittery, who had been concerned in the capture of the 400 Indians at Cocheco, which were sold in Europe.

These scenes of distress were but the preludes of what were to follow, had the whole plan succeeded. This plan, concerted in France, had for its object the destruction of New-England, by the assistance of a fleet and armament from France, to co-operate with the forces of Canada, and lay waste the whole country. The plan was a bold one, but that God who had planted his church in the wilderness, had preserved her through sufferings, to meet and repel the attempt. The fleet remained at Newfoundland until winter, and then returned to France.† The straggling parties of Indians committed some depredations, but nothing of importance.

The events of Indian war can be related, but the pen cannot disclose its blood-chilling horrors. The distresses of our fathers are lost in reality, and even their remembrance is almost swallowed up, in those rich enjoyments they provided for their descendants.

Through all these scenes of alarm and distress, the colony of New-Hampshire was crossed, vexed and perplexed with proprietary governors, appointed by the crown, under Mason's, or rather Allen's claims; first by Usher, as has been noticed, from 1692 to 1695, then by Wm. Partridge, next by Allen himself; and in 1699, the earl of Bellomont arrived, agreeable to his appointment, and entered upon the govern-

† This fleet, under the command of count Nesmond, consisted of ten ships of the line a galliot and two frigates. Count Frontenac was to have joined the expedition at Penobscot, with 1500 men. Boston was the first object of their destination.

ment of the province, and Wm. Partridge acted as lieut. governor. This change in the government, quieted the feuds which had perplexed the colony, and gave repose to the feelings of the people.

This war continued to rage, and the eastern settlements suffered very severely, down to the peace of Ryswick, 1697. In the winter following, hostilities ceased in America, by the treaty of Casco.†

“†The details of individual sufferings that occurred during this war, were they faithfully recorded, would excite the sympathies of the most unfeeling bosom. One instance only will serve to confirm the remark.

In an attack, by a body of Indians, upon Haverhill, New Hampshire, in the winter of 1697, the concluding year of the war, a party of the assailants, burning with savage animosity, approached the house of a Mr. Dustan. Upon the first alarm, he flew from a neighboring field to his family, with the hope of hurrying them to a place of safety. Seven of his children he directed to flee, while he himself went to assist his wife, who was confined in her bed with an infant a week old; but before she could leave the bed the savages arrived.

In despair of rendering her assistance, Mr. Dustan flew to the door, mounted his horse, and determined in his own mind to snatch up the child which he loved best. He followed in pursuit of his little flock, but on coming up with them he found it impossible to make a selection. He determined, therefore, to meet his fate with them; to defend and save them from the knife of the pursuing savages, or die by their side.

A body of the Indians soon came up with them, and from short distances, commenced a fire upon him and his little company. For more than a mile he continued to retreat, placing himself between the fire of the Indians and his children and returned their shots with great spirit and success. At length he saw them all safely lodged from their bloody pursuers, in a distant house.

It is not easy to find a nobler instance of fortitude and courage, inspired by affection, than is exhibited in this heroic act. Let us ever cultivate the influence of those ties of kindred, which are capable of giving so generous and elevated a direction to our actions.

As Mr. Dustan quitted his house, a party of Indians entered it. Mrs. Dustan was in bed, but they ordered her to rise instantly, and before she could finish dressing, obliged her and the nurse, who had in vain attempted to escape with the infant, to quit the house, which they plundered and burnt.

In these distressing circumstances, Mrs. Dustan began her march with other captives, into the wilderness. The air was keen, and their path led through snow and deep mud, and their savage conductors delighted rather in their afflictions, than in alleviating their distress.

The company had proceeded but a short distance, when an Indian, thinking the infant an incumbrance, took it from the arms of the nurse and violently terminated its life. Such of the other captives as became weary and incapable of proceeding, the Indians killed with

## CHAPTER VIII.

## HISTORY OF THE PILGRIMS, CONTINUED.—MASSACHUSETTS.

The character and adventures of the first settlers of Massachusetts, have been noticed, with the charter obtained from Charles I. and the spirit and genius of their government; the loss of their charter in the reign of Charles II. 1684, together with the union of the governments of Massachusetts and N. Hampshire, under governors sent out by the crown, under James II. 1686. Upon the accession of William and Mary, sir Wm. Phipps was appointed governor of Massachusetts, and arrived at Boston, with their new charter, May 14, 1692. This charter embraced all the limits of the old, together with the colony of Plymouth and the province of Maine and Nova Scotia; extending to the river St. Lawrence on the north, and the South sea on the west, excepting N. Hampshire and New-York. By this charter, "all grants being made to any town, college, or schools of learning, were confirmed," and under the sanction of this charter, the general court provided the next year, to extend their liberal support to their general system of education.

The council who were named in this charter, were mostly descendants of the first worthies of Massachusetts and Plymouth colonies, and were generally of the old council.

The most important subject that interested the public at this time, was the confusion of witchcraft, that distracted the their tomahawks. Feeble as Mrs. Dustan was, both she and her nurse sustained with wonderful energy the fatigues and misery attending a journey of one hundred and fifty miles.

On their arriving at the place of their destination, they found the wigwam of the savage who claimed them, to be inhabited by twelve Indians. In the ensuing April, this family set out, with their captives, for an Indian settlement, still more remote. The captives were informed that on their arrival at the settlement, they must submit to be stripped, scourged, and run the gauntlet between two files of Indians. This information carried distress to the minds of the captive women, and led them promptly to devise some means of escape.

Early in the morning of the 31st of April, Mrs. Dustan awaking her nurse and another fellow-prisoner, they dispatched ten of the twelve Indians, while they were asleep; the other two escaped. The women then commenced their difficult and dangerous journey, through the wilderness, and at length arrived safe at Haverhill. Subsequently they visited Boston, and received from the general court a handsome consideration for their extraordinary sufferings and heroic conduct."—Dwight's Travels.

town of Salem. For the honor of New-England, it is to be desired that a subject so disgraceful in itself, might have been forever buried in oblivion. The particulars of this contemptible transaction, may be found in Hutchinson's history of Massachusetts Bay.†

“†The first suspicion of witchcraft in New-England, and in the United States, began at Springfield, Massachusetts, as early as 1645. Several persons, about that time, were accused, tried, and executed in Massachusetts; one at Charlestown, one at Dorchester, one at Cambridge, and one at Boston. For almost thirty years afterwards the subject rested. But in 1687 or 1688, it was revived in Boston; four of the children of John Goodwin united in accusing a poor Irish woman with bewitching them. Unhappily the accusation was regarded with attention, and the woman was tried and executed.

Near the close of February, 1692, the subject was again revived, in consequence of several children in Danvers and Salem, beginning to act in a peculiar and unaccountable manner. Their strange conduct continued for several days, their friends betook themselves to fasting and prayer. During religious exercises, it was found that the children were generally decent and still; but after service was ended, they renewed their former inexplicable conduct. This was deemed sufficient evidence that they were laboring under the influence of witchcraft.

At the expiration of some days, the children began to accuse several persons in the neighborhood of bewitching them. Unfortunately they were credited, and the suspected authors of the spell were seized and imprisoned.

From this date, the awful mania rapidly spread into the neighboring country, and soon appeared in various parts of Essex, Middlesex and Suffolk. Persons at Andover, Ipswich, Gloucester, Boston, and several other places, were accused by their neighbors and others.

For some time the victims were selected only from among the lower classes. But at length, the accusations fell upon persons of the most respectable rank. In August, Mr. George Burroughs, sometime minister in Salem, was accused, brought to trial, and condemned. Accusations were also brought against Mr. English, a respectable merchant in Salem, and his wife; against Messrs. Dudley and John Bradstreet, sons of the then late governor Bradstreet; against the wife of Mr. Hale, the lady of sir Wm. Phipps, and against the secretary of Connecticut.

The evil had now become awfully alarming. One man, named Giles Corey, had been pressed to death for refusing to plead, and nineteen persons had been executed. More than one third of these were members of the church. One hundred and fifty were in prison, and two hundred were accused.

At length, the inquiry was anxiously suggested, where will this accumulated mischief and misery end? The conviction soon followed, that the proceedings had been rash and indefensible. A special court was held on the subject, and fifty, who were brought to trial, were acquitted excepting three, who were afterwards reprieved by the governor. These events were followed by a general release of those who

During the administration of sir Wm. Phipps, the colonies of New-England attempted the reduction of Canada, by an expedition against Quebec, which failed ; and upon his return to Boston, he fell into a controversy with the captain of an English frigate, which occasioned him a voyage to England, in his own defence, where he died, February 16, 1695.

In 1696, lord Bellomont was appointed governor of New-York, Massachusetts, and New-Hampshire. His lordship arrived at Boston, from his government in New York, in June, 1699, and entered upon his high commission. During the first year of his lordship's administration, he entered with zeal and spirit into a system of measures for the suppression of piracy, and was so fortunate as to seize, in the port of Boston, the noted pirate Kid, and caused him to be executed. Many other pirates were taken, and the infamous practice generally suppressed.

In the year 1700, his lordship returned to New York, where he died, March, 1701, and the government devolved upon lieutenant governor Stoughton. He died May, 1702, and was succeeded by governor Dudley, whose administration was in all respects, the reverse of that of the earl of Bellomont.

In 1701, king William died, and was succeeded by queen Ann, 1702.

In 1703, queen Ann declared war against France. This again opened the frontiers of the northern colonies, to the ravages of an Indian war.

had been imprisoned. "Thus the cloud," says the late president Dwight, "which had so long hung over the colony, slowly and suddenly retired ; and like the darkness of Egypt, was, to the great joy of the distressed inhabitants, succeeded by serenity and sunshine."

We who live to look back upon this scene, are wont to contemplate with wonder, the seeming madness and infatuation, not of the weak, illiterate, and unprincipled, but of men of sense, education, and fervent piety. Let us consider, however, that at this period, the actual existence of witchcraft was taken for granted, and that doubts respecting it, were deemed little less than heresy. The learned Baxter, who lived at this time in England, where the same notions on this subject prevailed, pronounced the disbeliever in witchcraft, an "obdurate sadducee ;" and sir Matthew Hale, one of the brightest ornaments of the English bench, repeatedly tried and condemned those as criminals, who were accused of witchcraft. Let us then rather advert with gratitude to our own freedom from such delusions, than bestow invectives upon those who can plead, in excuse for their error, the spirit of the age in which they lived."—Dwight's Travels.

In 1704, an Indian invasion commenced from Canada, and the storm first broke upon Deerfield; forty persons were killed, and about 100 captives were carried off into the wilderness, on their way to Canada. Among these captives, were the rev. Mr. Williams, their minister, with his wife and five small children. When the savages had collected their prisoners and booty, they set fire to the village, and made a hasty retreat.† On the second day, the strength of Mrs. Williams began to fail, and her husband was called to witness a most distressing scene; her master sunk his hatchet into her head, and she expired without a groan. About twenty others shared the fate of Mrs. Williams, on their way through the wilderness; and on the 25th of March, the survivors reached Canada, where they were treated with humanity, by governor Vaudreuil.‡

The year 1709 became memorable for a general union of the northern colonies, in an expedition against Canada, under the command of general Nicholson; but it failed, because the fleet destined for the service, was called to the support and defence of Portugal.

The year 1710, also became memorable for the capture of Port-Royal, (Nova Scotia,) by the united efforts of New-England, assisted by a fleet and armament from England, all which was intrusted to the command of general Nicholson.

In 1711, queen Ann sent out another fleet and armament to co-operate with the colonies against Canada, and general

† "One house still remains, as a painful memento to posterity. The front door was hacked and hewn with hatchets, until the savages had cut a hole through it; through this hole they fired into the house: this door, which still bears its ancient wounds, and the hole, (closed only by a board, tacked on within,) remains now as the savages left it, and is a most interesting monument.

"Through the windows they also fired, and one bullet killed the female head of the family, sitting up in bed, and the mark of that bullet, as well as of four others, is visible in the room; in one of the holes in a joist, another bullet remains to this day. This family was all killed, or carried into captivity."—Silliman's Tour.

‡ At the end of two years, Mr. Williams, and fifty-seven others, were redeemed, and he returned to Deerfield, where he continued his labors in the ministry twelve years, and died. His eldest daughter was married to an Indian in Canada, where she lived many years. She came into New-England once or twice, with her sanup and children, to visit her friends; and at her death left a numerous family.



Nicholson was honored with the command.† The colonies entered with spirit and zeal into the enterprise ; but it was defeated, and the remainder of the fleet returned to England.

This war continued to rage, until closed by the peace of Utrecht, 1713.

On the death of queen Ann, August, 1714, the house of Hanover succeeded to the throne of England, under George I. who sent out colonel Burgess, as successor to governor Dudley, and colonel Taylor was appointed lieutenant governor.

In 1716, colonel Shute succeeded governor Burgess, and William Dummer, esq. was appointed lieutenant governor. This administration was more oppressive than that of governor Dudley ; and in the year 1720, the dissensions in the government, the depreciation of the paper money, and the ravages of the eastern Indians, involved the colony in disorder and distress. The people now began seriously to feel the loss of their liberties, under their new charter, with its despotic crown governors. At this time, the small pox broke out in Boston, which caused the first inoculations in New-England.

In 1722, the strife between principle and prerogative became so serious, that the governor deserted his government and returned to England, and the lieutenant governor took the chair.

His honor, the lieutenant governor, met the assembly with a very conciliatory address, which was kindly received, and as kindly answered, by the following address, from an aged senator, Mr. Sewall, who had been assistant under the old charter.

“ If your honor, and this honorable board please to give me leave, I will speak a few words upon this solemn occasion.

“ Although the unerring providence of God has brought your honor to the chair of government in a cloudy and tempestuous season, yet you have this for your encouragement, that the people you have to do with, are a part of the Israel of God, and you may expect to have of the prudence and patience of Moses, communicated to you for your conduct. It is evident that the Almighty Savior counselled the first planters to remove and settle here, and they dutifully followed his advice ; therefore he will never leave nor forsake them nor

† This fleet, which consisted of fifteen sail of the line, forty transports, six store ships, with about 7000 land forces, sailed from Boston on the 30th of July, and arrived in the river St. Lawrence on the 14th of August ; on the 22d it was dispersed or lost in a storm.

theirs, so that you must needs be happy in seeking their happiness and welfare, which your birth and education will incline you to do. *Difficilia quæ palchra.* I promise myself that they who sit at this board will yield their faithful advice to your honor, according to the duty of their place."

This address needs no comment.

We will now bring forward the history of Connecticut.

---

## CHAPTER IX.

### HISTORY OF THE PILGRIMS CONTINUED.

*General affairs of Connecticut.*—In 1644, the title of lords Say and Seat, and Brook, was conveyed to the colony of Connecticut, for £1000.†

In 1650, commissioners of the united colonies of New England and the colony of New-York, settled their line of division and boundary.

In 1659, died governor Eaton, greatly lamented in New-England.

In 1661, the colony of Connecticut, by their agent John Mason, extinguished by purchase, all the Indian claims to the colony; and in 1662, they obtained from king Charles II. that charter which constituted them a body politic, with the confirmation of their ancient grant from the earl of Warwick. This charter embraced all the fundamental principles of the colony compact of 1639, and extended 120 miles from the south line of Massachusetts, which interfered with the patent of the duke of York, and the settlement of the Dutch at Manhattan; also upon the settlements in New Jersey and Pennsylvania.

In 1664, this claim was overruled, and the sea fixed as the south boundary of Connecticut.

The charter of Charles II. included the colony of New Haven; but the two colonies were not united until 1665, when it became necessary to form a union of interest to protect their chartered rights.

† At this time settlements had commenced in about fifty towns in New England, and about eighty ministers had been settled, and thirty or forty churches had been gathered.

At this time the king sent out three commissioners to inquire into the state of the colonies.†

In 1672, the MS. laws of Connecticut were digested into a regular code, and printed at Cambridge, Mass. in a small folio, with duplicate blank pages, for the insertion of all subsequent laws; and in 1699 the blanks were filled.‡

In 1674, sir Edmond Andross, governor of New York, claimed all the lands west of Connecticut river; and at the head of a military force, commenced an attack upon Saybrook, but was repelled in a dignified and soldier-like manner, by captain Thomas Bull, of Hartford, who commanded a strong military force at that station. Sir Edmond withdrew his forces and embarked for Long-Island.

In 1675, commenced the famous Indian war, which has been noticed under the head of *Philip's war*.

From the year 1677 to 1683—4, a succession of controverted claims arose between Connecticut and Rhode Island, which ultimately terminated in favor of Connecticut.

In 1683—4, governor Dongan succeeded governor Andros, in the colony of New York, and an amicable adjustment took place between that colony and Connecticut, in settling their boundary line as it now stands.

In 1685, king James II. succeeded to the throne of England upon the death of his brother Charles II. and he sent out Edward Randolph with writs of *quo warr anto* against the charter of Connecticut, and the colony was thrown into a high state of alarm.

In December, 1686, sir Edmond Andros arrived at Boston, with a special appointment from the crown, as governor general of New England.

At the usual October session of the assembly in Connecticut, 1687, sir Edmond arrived at Hartford, with his suit, and a military escort of more than sixty men; demanded the charter, and declared the government dissolved. Cool deliberations ensued, with strong remonstrances against the measure,

† The general character of New England at this time, was formed upon the principles of the reformation in England; devout, sincere, and full of zeal for the good of the church; regarding the bible as the rule of their faith and practise; they were also hardy, industrious, brave and patriotic, yet sharp in their trade; very inquisitive and fond of repartee.

‡ These laws provided for the regular support of the ministry and of schools, and obliged every person to attend public worship on the Sabbath, under a penalty of five shillings for every wilful neglect.

until evening, when the candles were lit and the charter was brought in and laid upon the table, amidst a great collection of spectators, and an anxious, distressed assembly, awaiting the crisis for the surrender of their liberties. At this eventful moment the lights were extinguished; the charter was instantly removed by some then unknown person,<sup>†</sup> and placed in the hollow of an aged oak, standing in front of the seat of the hon. Samuel Wyliys, then a member of the assembly. All was quiet, the candles were relit; but the charter was irrecoverably gone.

Stung with rage and disappointment, sir Edmond retired, and the next day issued the following proclamation:

“At a general assembly, held at Hartford, October 31, 1687, his excellency sir Edmond Andros, knight and captain-general, and governor of his majesty's territories and dominions in New England, by order of his majesty king James II. king of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, the 31st of October, 1687, took into his hands the government of the colony of Connecticut, it being by his majesty annexed to Massachusetts, and other colonies, under his majesty's government.”

In this form did this modern Nero enter upon the administration of his government. Smooth were his promises, but bitter and severe were his measures; and his government was truly despotic.

In 1688, he was appointed governor of New York, and the same imperious sway reigned throughout the whole: the people mourned.

This rod, although severe, was not of long duration; God heard the cries of his people, both in England and America, and raised up William, prince of Orange, with Mary his wife, to fill the throne of England; and in 1689, the news reached America; the people of Boston rose in arms, seized Andros, and sent him to England. The governor and council of Connecticut resumed the government; and captain Wadsworth restored the charter, from *charter oak*: the people rejoiced.

The war in Europe, which followed this revolution in England, involved New England in an Indian war, which has been noticed under New Hampshire, as king William's war.

Amidst the distress of this war, in 1691 col. Benjamin Fletcher entered upon his appointment as governor of New York, vested with full powers to command the militia of Connecticut and the neighboring colonies. At the October

<sup>†</sup> Afterwards avowedly the act of captain Wadsworth.

session of the assembly, colonel Fletcher came to Hartford and demanded the surrender of the militia, in his majesty's name, and in the most laconic terms, which was refused. Colonel Fletcher ordered the train bands of Hartford to assemble for duty, and they obeyed his orders. Colonel Bayard, his aid, attempted to read the commission of colonel Fletcher, but captain Wadsworth† ordered the drums to beat, which interrupted colonel Bayard; this was repeated again and again. When captain Wadsworth found that colonel Bayard was determined to proceed, he turned to his excellency and said :—*Sir, if I am interrupted again, I will make the sun shine through you instantly.* His excellency withdrew from the scene, and returned immediately to New-York.

In May, 1698, general Winthrop was raised to the chair of the colony of Connecticut, and the assembly, by a special act, was formed into two houses, termed the upper and lower houses of assembly. In May, 1699, the two houses acted separately, for the first time.

In 1701, the general assembly, at their May session, resolved that the October session, hereafter, should be held at New-Haven, and that the supreme court should be held, hereafter, at New-Haven, on the first Tuesday of October, annually.

In 1707, died governor Winthrop, who was succeeded by governor Saltonstall.

The year 1708 was rendered memorable by the convention of the synod at Saybrook, which established the famous Saybrook Platform, upon the basis of the Westminster and Savoy confessions of faith.

*Yale College.*—In 1699 and 1700, a number of the ministers of Connecticut, at their private meetings, contributed a few books as the basis of a library for a college, and appointed one of their number as librarian, and ten others of their number, as trustees. This effort became popular; and in 1701, an act of incorporation for the college was obtained at the October session, and in November, the rev. Samuel Pier-son, of Killingworth, was chosen the first rector. The college continued in his parish during his life.

In 1702, the first commencement was held at Saybrook.

In 1703, a general contribution was raised throughout the colony, to erect a suitable building for the college.

In 1713, the college library had increased to the number of 900 volumes, and forty-six graduates had received the honors of the college.

In 1714, rector Pierson died, and was succeeded by rector Andrews, of Milford. From this time the classes were divided between Milford and Saybrook, until 1717, when a majority of the students assembled at Wethersfield, under the care of the rev. Elisha Williams. The same year a fund of about £1500 was raised by subscription, to build a house for the college, and the commencement was held at New-Haven.

In 1718, the college was handsomely endowed by the hon. Elisha Yale, governor of the British East India company, which gave the institution the honor of his name.

This institution has continued to flourish, under a succession of worthy rectors and presidents, and now claims an equal rank with the first university in America.

---

## CHAPTER X.

### MASSACHUSETTS AND NEW-HAMPSHIRE, CONTINUED.—FOURTH INDIAN WAR.

Through the instrumentality of the Jesuit Ralle, who resided at Norridgewag, the eastern Indians were excited to war against the eastern settlements, at a time when France and England were at peace in Europe.† The Indians began their ravages in 1717, by destroying the cattle, &c. with other excesses. The English repelled these aggressions, and in 1721, a military force was sent from the county of York, to seize Ralle, at Norridgewag, and convey him to Boston. Ralle made his escape, and the detachment seized his papers; these disclosed a recent correspondence with the governor of Canada, which unfolded the whole intrigue, with the promise of aid in the war.

In 1722, the Indians increased their ravages, carried off several families from Merrymeeting-bay, and burnt the town of Brunswick.

† At the close of the last war, the English engaged to erect trading houses in the Indian country, which they neglected to fulfil, and the Indians founded their aggressions upon this neglect.

In 1723, they surprised the town of Dover, and extended their ravages on to Lamprey river, killed one man and his child, and carried off his wife and three children. In 1724, several repeated attacks were made upon these settlements, and many of the English were either killed or carried into captivity. These depredations roused up the English, and they sent another detachment to Norridgewag; killed Ralle the Jesuit, and about eighty Indians, destroyed his church, &c.

This blow roused the resentment of the Indians, and they renewed their depredations with increased ferocity, and many of the settlers soon fell a prey to their savage barbarities. The war now raged with violence; a captain Lovewell, with his company, were ambushed in the wilderness, by a numerous party of Indians, and after a desperate conflict, they secured their retreat, with the loss of their brave captain, and twenty-three of their number, killed and wounded.

The severity of this action caused the Indians to withdraw, and a negotiation with the governor of Canada soon after commenced, that led to a cessation of hostilities, and the restoration of several captives.

A treaty was held at Boston in the spring of 1726; the conditions of peace were ratified at Falmouth soon after, and trading houses were erected in many parts of the Indian country, which served to promote a good understanding between the parties.

As soon as the war was closed, the old leaven of discord began to prevail in the government.

Upon the accession of king George II. governor Burnet was appointed governor of Massachusetts and New-Hampshire, 1727. In July, 1729, he arrived at Boston, and entered upon the duties of his administration. A controversy about a permanent salary, opened with the first session of the general court, and continued to rage with bitterness between the parties, until September, when the governor died and closed the contest.

In August, 1730, governor Belcher arrived in Boston, as successor to governor Burnet, and the old quarrel was revived. Although the point respecting a permanent salary was over-ruled by the general court; yet others sprang up and raged, until governor Belcher was removed, and governor Shirley succeeded to the chair, 1740.†

† This year the celebrated Whitfield came into New-England, and exerted his pulpit talents to promote the spread of that great revival,

Under this administration the old controversy was healed ; but the land bank and paper money, greatly distressed the province of Massachusetts.

The Spanish war, which commenced this year, gave some diversion to the parties ; turned their attention to the defence of the province, and prepared them to meet the approaching French war.

Among the last acts of governor Belcher's administration, was the settlement of the boundary line between Massachusetts and New-Hampshire. This long and sharp controversy was finally closed by commissioners, appointed by the crown, who settled it according to the charter of Massachusetts. The next year this boundary line was duly established, and the colony of New-Hampshire became independent of Massachusetts. Benning Wentworth was appointed governor of the former, and William Shirley governor of the latter.

Governor Wentworth sailed for America soon after his appointment, where he arrived in December, 1741 ; and was hailed as the immediate deliverer of the colony.

Governor Wentworth maintained a good understanding with governor Shirley, and their measures were pursued with general harmony.

The Spanish war continued to rage, and in 1743, France took part with Spain, (by the treaty of Fontainebleau) and was involved in the contest. The French war brought on collisions between Nova Scotia and Cape Breton, and the eastern colonies, and involved them in the war. The French commenced a successful attack upon the island of Canseau, which was defended by a small block house, and captured the garrison ; but an attack upon Newfoundland, at the same time, failed.

They commenced another attack, soon after, upon Annapolis, (formerly Port Royal) but were repulsed with loss. These attacks laid open the northern and eastern frontier of New-England, to the renewed ravages of the savage foe.

Louisburg, next to Quebec, had then become the strongest fortress in America, and was to France, a strong hold of more importance than even Quebec.†

which had commenced at Northampton, in 1737, and was extending throughout New-England. Mr. Whitfield labored with great zeal and activity in the vineyard of his Lord, and his labors were greatly blessed.

† The harbor of Louisburg lies in latitude 45 deg. 55 min. ; its entrance is about 400 yards wide. The anchorage is uniformly safe, and



It had now become an object of the first importance, that the colonies should possess or destroy this Dunkirk of America. Governor Shirley conceived the plan, and communicated his views to governor Wentworth, who approved of the measure.

To prepare the way for this important enterprise, governor Shirley obtained a grant of £200, from the general court, to strengthen the castle, at the entrance of Boston harbor, together with the frontier posts generally, and the fortress of Annapolis, in Nova Scotia. He next opened his plan to the British ministry, and requested a naval armament for the pur-

ships may run ashore on a soft muddy bottom. The depth of water at the entrance is about nine to twelve fathom. The harbor lies open to the southeast. Upon a neck of land upon the south side of the harbor, was built the town, two miles and a quarter in circumference; fortified in every accessible part, with a rampart of stone, from thirty to sixty feet high, and a ditch eight feet wide. A space of about two hundred yards was left without a rampart; on the side next to the sea, it was inclosed with a simple dike, and a line of pickets; the sea was so shallow in this place that it made only a narrow channel, inaccessible from its numerous reefs, to any shipping whatever. The side-fire from the bastions secured this spot from attack. There were six bastions and three batteries, containing embrasures for one hundred and forty-eight cannon, of which sixty five were only mounted, and sixteen mortars. On an island at the entrance of the harbor was planted a battery of thirty cannon, carrying twenty-eight pound shot; and at the bottom of the harbor, directly opposite to the entrance, was the grand or royal battery, of twenty-eight cannon, forty-two pounders, and two eighteen pounders. On a high cliff opposite to the island battery, stood a light-house; and within this point, at the northeast part of the harbor, was a careening wharf, secure from all winds, and a magazine of naval stores.

The town was regularly laid out in squares; the streets were broad, the houses mostly of wood, and some of stone. On the west side, near the rampart, was a spacious citadel, and a large parade; on the one side of which were the governor's apartments; under the rampart were casemates to receive the women and children, during a siege. The entrance of the town on the land side, was at the west gate, over a draw-bridge, near to which was a circular battery, mounting sixteen guns of twenty-four pound shot.

These works have been twenty-five years in building, and have cost the crown of France not less than thirty million of livres. The place was so strong as to be called the "Dunkirk of America." It was in peace a safe retreat for the ships of France, bound homeward from the East or West-Indies; and in war a source of distress to the northern English colonies; its situation being extremely favourable for privateers to ruin their fishery, and intercept their coasting and foreign trade; for which reason the reduction of it was as desirable to them, as the reduction of Carthage was to the Romans.--Abbe Raynal.

pose. In February, the governor opened his plan to the general court, under the injunction of an oath of secrecy ; but the boldness of the measure astonished the court, and they rejected it, as an enterprise too great even to be attempted. The merchants of Boston, and the friends of governor Shirley, opened the subject anew to the court, by numerous petitions, and the question was carried by a majority of one.

All parties at once entered with zeal and spirit into the measure. The governor next laid an embargo throughout the colony, and sent despatches to the other colonies, as far south as Pennsylvania, requesting an embargo, and a cordial co-operation in an expedition against Louisburg, which was rejected.

New-England stood alone to prosecute the plan. Massachusetts raised 3,250 men, exclusive of commissioned officers ; Connecticut 500, and Rhode-Island and New-Hampshire, each 300. The naval force consisted of twelve ships, with numerous transports ; and in three months, general Pepperell embarked with 4,000 troops. On the 24th of March, the fleet sailed from Nantasket, and arrived at Canso, on the 11th of April, 1745.

Roger Wolcott, esq. lieutenant-governor of Connecticut, appeared at the head of the colonial troops, and held the second command in the expedition.

Governor Shirley had sent a request to commodore Warren, upon the West-India station, to support the expedition with his squadron ; but he declined to engage without orders ; the commodore, however, received orders from the admiralty, in a few days, and on the last of April, joined the expedition with his squadron.

On the 30th of April, the troops were all landed at Chapeau-augue ; the fleet took their station off the harbor of Louisburg, and the city was invested before they had knowledge of the expedition. Such was the general surprise, that the troops destroyed all the houses and stores, without the walls, and took the grand battery, without exchanging a shot. Thus having entered upon the arduous duties before them, they next drew their cannon through a deep morass, covered by the fire of the main battery, which they had taken from the enemy ; this fire became very alarming and destructive to the town. Having surmounted the difficulties of the morass, and constructed batteries for the cannon, they were now pre-

pared to co-operate with the fleet, in one general attack upon the town.

At this critical moment, a store-ship from France appeared off the harbor, for the relief of the garrison, and was taken by the New-England fleet. This was a valuable acquisition to the besiegers, and a severe blow to the besieged.

The general next ordered a detachment of 400 men, to attack and carry the island battery, which failed with the loss of 60 men killed, and 116 taken prisoners. This occasioned the general to send an express to Boston, for a reinforcement.

Massachusetts sent on 400, and Connecticut 200 men; and at this eventful moment, one sixty and one forty gun ship, arrived from England and joined the fleet, May 22. Early in June, two sixty gun ships, and one of eighty guns, arrived, which augmented the squadron to eleven sail, besides the provincial fleet.

Elated with his prospects, the general pushed the siege by a heavy cannonade from his batteries, which silenced the harbor battery, demolished the west gate, and greatly distressed the town. At the same time the fleet made a movement to enter the harbor, and co-operate with the troops in a general assault. Alarmed at these movements, the governor sent out a flag, and proposed articles of capitulation. These were rejected, and others were sent in by the general and commodore, which were accepted. On the 17th of June, they entered the town in triumph, and the garrison were embarked for France.

The news of this glorious event reached Boston by express, the 3d of July, and spread like lightning throughout the country. Joy glowed in every breast, and beamed in every countenance, and exultation burst forth from all parts of the colonies.

The French flag continued to wave upon the walls of Louisburg, which decoyed in several India ships, supposed to be worth £600,000 sterling.

Governor Shirley embarked immediately for Louisburg, and persuaded most of the army to continue in garrison through the winter, and took the command until his majesty's pleasure could be known.

An armament of seven ships of the line, sailed from France, early in July, 1745, destined for the conquest of Nova Scotia, with orders to touch at Louisburg; but upon

intelligence at sea, of the fall of Louisburg, they returned to France.

The boldness of this enterprise against Louisburg, and the success with which it was crowned, astonished, not only America, but Europe, and led to a system of measures highly interesting and advantageous, both to England and her colonies.

England contemplated the reduction of Canada, and France contemplated the reduction of Louisburg and Nova Scotia, together with the whole American seaboard, from Georgia to Maine. To effect this, she fitted out her Brest fleet of seventy sail; fourteen of which were of the line. This fleet left Rochelle the 22d of June, 1746, with a land force of 3 or 4,000 men, destined for the reduction of Louisburg, and the conquest of Nova Scotia. Detachments of this fleet were seen in those seas, and spread a general alarm throughout the American coast; but storms and adverse winds arose, which scattered the fleet; some of them were driven to the W. Indies, some foundered at sea, and the remnant returned to France, with the melancholy tidings, that the whole expedition had failed, that one of their admirals had poisoned himself, through grief, and another had run mad and stabbed himself, through rage and disappointment, and that the remnant of the fleet had been overtaken by a cold and terrible storm, off cape Sable, where they suffered severely, as they bid a final adieu to the American coast.

Thus ended the French armada against the colonies of America.

All prospects of success on the part of France, appeared from this time to fail; and the war languished until the 30th of April, 1748, when hostilities ceased, under the preliminaries of Aix-la-Chapelle. In October following, peace was ratified and confirmed, and all conquests were relinquished.

The people of Massachusetts now began to feel the pressure of their affairs. A flood of paper money had been issued to support the exigencies of the war; taxes had multiplied, and their paper money had depreciated almost to a cypher; all which threatened the ruin of trade and of morals.

Parliament made a grant to the colonies of New-England, to indemnify the expenses of the capture of Louisburg; and Massachusetts redeemed her paper money with silver and gold, which rendered her medium permanent.

The ravages of the French and Indians from Canada, were carried on through the war and into the year 1749, upon the frontier towns generally, with great severity; and many persons were killed, wounded or carried away captive to Canada; but the settlements were not burnt, nor the people butchered, as formerly. This partial humanity, the enemy turned to his advantage, by extorting large sums of money for the ransom of their captives, which rendered New England tributary to Canada.†

---

## CHAPTER XI.

### GENERAL AFFAIRS OF THE COLONIES.

The peace of Aix-la-Chapelle, which restored the conquests of France and Britain, in America and in India, lulled the two nations into that state of security, which was improved by France, through a labyrinth of intrigues, to carry her ambitious plans into effect, upon a more extended scale than before. To accomplish this, she attempted to unite with Spain, in a family compact, but failed; yet Louis XIV. opened his intrigues in India. France continued, at the same time, to mature her plans, and sow the seeds of war in America.

By the treaty of Utrecht, France had ceded to England the whole country of Nova Scotia; but the boundaries had never been defined. Soon after the war, the English built the town of Halifax, in a commanding position, in that country, and sent out a colony of about 3000 families to settle it; this step kindled a fire about boundaries.

France had connected her settlements in Canada, with her settlements in Louisiana, by a chain of military posts, which extended from Quebec to New Orleans. With these, she expected to command the trade and friendship of the savages of the wilderness.

As the preparations of the parties progressed in America, collisions ensued, until the French and Indians in Nova Scotia, rose in arms and began their ravages.

† New-England lost in this war 3 or 4000 of her sons, and the wars of the last century have occasioned to New England, the loss of about 200,000 souls. The loss was felt by New York as well as New England, though not in an equal ratio.—Hutchinson's History.

An armed force at the same time surprised a fortress, or rather a trading establishment, upon the river Ohio, which belonged to the Ohio company of Virginia; murdered the people, and carried off the plunder, to the amount of twenty thousand pounds.† They next seized on another English fort at the forks of the Monongahela, with a force of one thousand men, and eighteen pieces of cannon.

The French next constructed a strong and regular fortress at the forks of the Monongahela, and called it fort Duquesne, which established a regular communication between the river Ohio and the lakes, and threatened the ruin of the Virginia company.

The governor of Virginia despatched major George Washington, then twenty-one years of age, with a letter to the commanding officer at fort Duquesne, demanding an explanation. The mission, perilous as it was, was faithfully executed, and the answer of the commandant returned, "that he had acted according to orders."‡

This mission was soon followed by orders from the British minister, that the colonies should assist Virginia, and repel the French.

A regiment was raised in Virginia, for the service, and major George Washington was appointed colonel and took the command.

South Carolina sent out one company and New York sent out two companies, to join colonel Washington, which formed a force of 400 men.

Colonel Washington surprised and attempted to cut off a party of French from fort Duquesne, near the Great Meadows, (so called) which he defeated with great loss; but the next day, De Villiers, the French commander, surprised colonel Washington, with a strong party of about 900 French and Indians.

The colonel had erected a stockade, to cover his party, which enabled him to maintain such a desperate resistance, as to obtain an honorable capitulation, and thus brought off his party with safety, by delivering up his temporary fortress, July 4th, 1754.

† This company had obtained a grant from the crown of 600,000 acres of land, lying upon the river Ohio, for the purposes of settling the country and extending a trade with the Indians.

‡ The distance was about 400 miles; about 300 of which lay through a pathless wilderness, across the Allegany mountains, and inhabited only by savages and wild beasts.

When the tidings of the depredation of the French, upon the Ohio company, arrived in England, the lords of trade and plantations recommended, "that commissioners be immediately appointed in America, to effect a union between the colonies, and a league of friendship with the neighboring Indians."

The recommendation was complied with, and a convention of the governors and principal gentlemen from all the colonies was agreed upon to be held at Albany, in the same year.†— But the commissioners of Delaware and the colonies south of the Potomac did not attend.

In this congress, it was proposed, "that a grand council should be formed, of members chosen from all the assemblies, and sent from all the colonies; which council, with a governor-general appointed by the crown, should be empowered to make general laws, and to raise money in all the colonies, for the defence of the whole." This plan was disapproved by the delegates of Connecticut, and the provincial assemblies generally; and wholly rejected in England, by the ministry.

The British minister next sent out the following plan:— "The governors of the colonies, with one or more of their counsellors, should form a convention to concert measures for the general defence; erect forts, and raise such numbers of men, as they should judge necessary; and that they should draw on the British treasury for such sums as should be thought requisite to reimburse their expenses; parliament to reimburse the whole by taxes on the colonies, after the war." This plan was rejected by all the colonies.‡

*Campaign of 1755.*—The campaign opened with the plan of four grand expeditions; the first against fort Duquesne; the second against Nova Scotia; the third against Ticonderoga and Crown Point; and the fourth against Niagara.

General Braddock embarked at Cork, January, 1755, with 1500 men, and arrived in Virginia about the first of March, destined against fort Duquesne.

The French fitted out a strong armament for the American service, early in the spring, consisting of twenty ships of the

† This congress was in session at the time of colonel Washington's defeat.

‡ The whole population of the colonies was estimated, at this time, to be about 1,046,000—385,000 of which belonged to N. England.

line, with frigates, transports, &c. carrying 4000 men, under the command of the baron Dieskau.

The British minister despatched a fleet of seventeen ships of the line and seven frigates, with a land force of 6000 men, under the command of admirals Boscawin and Holbourn, to watch the motions of the enemy upon the American station.

Both fleets appeared off the coast of Newfoundland, at the same time; but they were so enveloped in the fogs of that coast, that they did not discover each other until all the French fleet had entered the gulf of St. Lawrence, excepting two sixty gun ships, which fell in with the British fleet and were taken. This action opened the contest upon the water, and the war became serious.†

The spring opened in America, with active and vigorous preparations for the war. The legislatures of the several colonies were assembled, and communicated with each other by special messages, to unite and co-operate with all possible efforts, in raising men for the war.

New-England raised about 5000 men, which joined the northern army at Albany, about the first of June, under the command of general Shirley. A detachment of this northern army, about 6000 strong, besides a large body of Mohawk Indians, under Hendrick their chief, was entrusted to the command of general Johnson, and destined against Ticonderoga and Crown Point, but general Shirley commanded the division that advanced against Niagara.

Massachusetts sent on a strong detachment to Nova Scotia, to join colonel Moncton. This expedition succeeded, and by the first of July, colonel Moncton had taken all the fortresses in possession of the French, disarmed the Acadeans, and sent great numbers of them into New England.

General Braddock took the command of about 2000 regulars and provincials, in June, and commenced his operations against fort Duquesne, assisted by colonel Washington as his aid-de-camp. When he had surmounted the dangers and difficulties of the wilderness, and approached near to the object of his destination, he detached the flower of his army, and attempted, by forced marches, to surprise the fortress, before an expected reinforcement should arrive from Canada.

Blind to the dangers of Indian warfare, and regardless of

† The English commenced a general attack upon the French commerce, and captured more than three hundred trading vessels, with about 3000 seamen, in the course of the year.



the cautious advise of colonel Washington, he fell into an Indian ambush, within ten miles of fort Duquesne. The detachment was overwhelmed with the explosion ; Braddock and all his principal officers were slain ; and colonel Washington led off the fugitives, with the loss of all their artillery, baggage and military stores, together with about 700 men. The militia returned to Virginia, and the regulars repaired to Albany, to join the northern army.

When the news of Braddock's defeat reached general Shirley, it gave a general shock to the army, and caused such frequent desertions from the division destined against Niagara, that the general was constrained to defer the attack, and content himself with reinforcing and fortifying Oswego, and returning to Albany with the remnant of his army.

General Johnson advanced at the same time, at the head of the northern army, as far as lake George, and encamped on a rising ground, and secured his position with a breast work, until the cannon, batteaux, &c. could come up, and enable him to cross the lake.

The baron Dieskau, who then commanded at fort Ticonderoga, advanced at the head of a strong body of troops, (2000 French and Indians) to surprise and take fort Edward.

When intelligence of this movement, reached gen. Johnson, he detached a party of 1000 men, with the sachem Hendrick and his Indians, under the command of colonels Williams and Whiting, to intercept their march. Dieskau discovered this detachment, drew them into an ambush, and surprised them suddenly. Col. Williams fell—Hendrick fell, with many other brave officers and soldiers, and the remnant fled to the camp. The enemy pursued, and a warm action commenced ; the fugitives rallied under cover of the breast works, and the main body, under gen. Johnson, mowed down the ranks of the enemy. Dieskau manœuvred and advanced to the attack, with great skill and bravery ; but the contest was unequal, and he beat a retreat. General Johnson ordered the charge ; the troops leapt over the breast work, and pursued the victory. The enemy fled in disorder ; the carnage was great ; and the baron Dieskau, mortally wounded, fell into the hands of the victors.†

† “ The mountains which form the barrier of lake George, continue to the south after they leave the lake, forming a rugged, narrow defile, of several miles in length, most of which was then, and still is, filled with forest trees. In this defile, about four miles from gen. John

This victory gave access to Ticonderoga, but the season was so far advanced, that gen. Johnson abandoned the enterprise. When he had constructed two forts, built numerous boats and batteaux, and opened roads to lake George, he disbanded the levies, and retired into winter quarters at Albany.

son's camp, col. Williams' party, which left the camp between eight and nine o'clock in the morning of Sept. 8th, 1755, very unexpectedly fell in with the army of baron Dieskau; the two armies met in the road, front to front; the Indians of Dieskau's army were in ambuscade, upon both declivities of the mountains, and thus it was a complete surprise, for col. Williams had unhappily neglected to place any scouts upon his wings. A bloody battle ensued, and a deadly fire was poured in upon both flanks.—Col. Williams, endeavoring to lead his men against the unseen enemy, was instantly shot through the head, and he and hundreds of his party, including old Hendrick, the chief of the Mohawks, and forty Indians were slain. The remainder of the party, under the command of col. Whiting, retreated into the camp. They came running in, in the utmost confusion and consternation, and perhaps owed their safety, in a great measure, to another party, which, when the firing was heard, and perceived to be growing louder and nearer, was sent out to succor them.

“Nor did this battle terminate the fighting of this bloody day. The remains of Dieskau's army retreated about four miles, to the ground where colonel Williams had been defeated in the morning,—the rear of the army were there sitting upon the ground, had opened their knapsacks, and were refreshing themselves, when capt. McGinnies, who with two hundred men, had been despatched from fort Edward, to succor the main body, came up with this portion of the French army, thus sitting in security, and attacked and totally defeated them, although he was himself mortally wounded. Thus were three battles fought in one day, and almost upon the same ground. This ground I went over. The neighboring mountain, in which the French so suddenly made their appearance, is to this day, called French Mountain, and this name, with the tradition of the fact, will be sent down to the latest posterity. I was shown a rock by the road, at which a considerable slaughter took place. It was on the east side of the road near where colonel Williams fell, and I am informed is, to this day, called Williams' Rock.

“Just by the present road, and in the midst of these battle grounds, is a circular pond, shaped exactly like a bowl; it may be 200 feet in diameter, and was when I saw it, full of water, and covered with the pond lily. Alas! this pond, now so peaceful, was the common sepulchre of the brave; the dead bodies of most of those who were slain on this eventful day were thrown, in undistinguished confusion into this pond; from that time to the present, it has been called the Bloody Pond, and there is not a child in this region, but will point you to the French Mountain and the Bloody Pond.—I stood with dread upon its brink, and threw a stone into the unconscious waters. After these events, a regular fort was constructed at the head of the lake and called fort William Henry.”—Silliman's Tour.

Such was the general success of this expedition, that the king created gen. Johnson a baronet, and parliament awarded him with a present of £8000 sterling ; and the army received the applause of the nation.

The depredations of the Indians, continued upon the back settlements of Virginia and Pennsylvania, through the summer and winter of 1755—6.

*Campaign of 1756, in America* — The war had now raged in America two years, and upon the ocean one ; yet England and France still kept up their negotiations, and war was not declared by either until May, when Great Britain made her declaration, which was followed in June by France.

General Abercrombie was appointed to succeed gen. Shirley, and lord London was appointed commander-in-chief, and governor of Virginia. The colonies were active and zealous in their preparations for the war ; but the generals did not arrive in America, until June and July.

The plan of the campaign, had been early formed by a council held at New-York, and that of the last year was renewed. The northern expeditions were assigned to the northern colonies, and the expedition against fort Duquesne, to the southern.

The northern colonies assembled an army of 7000 men at Albany, which, added to the regulars, amounted to about ten thousand.

General Abercrombie arrived in June ; but all preparations were delayed until the arrival of lord London, in July.

The general detached colonel Bradstreet, with a strong party, to convey provisions to fort Oswego, and he executed his commission promptly ; but on his return, he fell into an Indian ambuscade, as he ascended the river Onondaga. He flew to a small island, landed his men, and prepared for his defence. The Indians rallied, rushed into the water, and commenced a desperate attack. Colonel Bradstreet repelled this attack by a well directed fire, and the enemy fled. He then advanced, with 200 men, against another party of the enemy, and put them to flight, in a close and desperate action. He next proceeded against a third party, still higher up the river ; put them to flight ; and in the three actions, destroyed about 150 of the enemy, with the loss of seventy of his party. This action opened his way back to Albany.

Colonel Bradstreet gave notice to general Abercrombie, on his return, that a formidable force of French and Indians from

Canada, were on their way against Oswego ; and the general detached colonel Webb, with one regiment, for the relief of the fortress.

On the 29th of July, lord Loudon arrived at Albany, and took the command. Gen. Winslow, at this time, had advanced to lake George, and lay with impatience, waiting for orders to advance against Ticonderoga ; but the general continued inactive at Albany, with three thousand regulars, until the middle of August. General Webb, at this time, commenced his march for the relief of Oswego.

On the 12th of August, the marquis de Montcalm, who had succeeded general Dieskau, invested the fortress of Oswego, with about 3000 Canadians and Indians, blocked up the river, and opened his trenches. On the 14th, colonel Mercer, the commanding officer, was killed, and the fort surrendered.

Thus fell Oswego, the strong hold of the west, defended by 121 pieces of cannon, 14 mortars, 2 frigates, 200 boats, and a garrison of 1600 men, well supplied with provisions and military stores. General Montcalm dismantled the fort, and carried off the booty into Canada.

With the fall of this fort, the lakes Erie and Ontario, with the whole north-western frontier, were laid open to the enemy, and the finest settlements fell a prey to their ravages.

Gen. Webb learned the fate of Oswego, when at the portage, between the Mohawk and Wood Creek, and immediately secured his retreat back to Albany.

Lord Loudon remained safe at Albany until September, when the provincials were disbanded, and the regulars went into winter quarters, and the campaign of 1756 closed. Dark and gloomy was the winter that followed.

*Campaign of 1757.*—The spring of 1757, opened with new efforts on the part of Great Britain, to prosecute the war in America. An armament of eleven ships of the line, a fire-ship, bomb ketch, and transports, with 6 or 7000 men, sailed from Cork in the month of May, under the command of admiral Holbourn, commodore Holmes, and general Hopson, and arrived at Hallifax on the 9th of July. The colonies met this armament with their regular quotas of men ; but when they found the object of destination to be Louisburg, they refused to co-operate. They feared to expose their northern and western frontiers, to the ravages of the enemy ; but the commander-in-chief was lord Loudon, and his commands were obeyed.

Lord Loudon sailed from New-York, on the 9th of July, and joined general Hopson at Halifax, with 6000 men, which gave him the command of a land force of about 12,000, and a powerful fleet destined against Louisburg; but all this was too late. Louisburg had been strengthened by the Brest fleet, of seventeen sail, and 9000 men from France, and the expedition failed. Lord Loudon returned to New-York, with his accustomed moderation, and repaired to Albany.

Not so with Montcalm; he was not an idle spectator of the farce the peer of England was acting in America. He, like an able general, faithful to his king, his country, and his honor, cut off col. Parker, who was detached with a force against Ticonderoga, and advanced victoriously against fort Wm. Henry. In six days, this fort surrendered to the conqueror, and the garrison marched out with the honors of war, protected by an honorable capitulation; but the savages under Montcalm, regardless of his engagements, broke into the ranks of the garrison, stripped, plundered, and butchered them in the most barbarous manner; and gen. Montcalm was accessory to the scene. Gen. Montcalm destroyed the fort and retired to Ticonderoga.†

The fall of Oswego had excited general alarm; but the massacre at fort Wm. Henry, filled the country with distress.

The enemy, elated with these successes, ravaged the frontier, and laid waste with fire and sword, the fine settlements called the German Flats, on the Mohawk.

At this time, there were more than 20,000 British regulars upon the American station, besides the numerous troops of the colonies; and yet the strong holds of America, were falling into the hands of the French, in regular succession, and the enemy rioted in their ravages, without so much as a field day opposition. But I forbear; the defence of America was intrusted to the service of British troops, and a peer of England had the honor to command.

Early in the season, the provincials were disbanded, and the regular troops, as before, retired into winter quarters.

† The massacre continued all along the road, through the defile of the mountains, and for many miles. the miserable prisoners, especially those in the rear, were tomahawked and hewn down in cold blood; it might be well called the *bloody defile*, for it was the same ground that was the scene of the battles, only two years before, in 1755.

## CHAPTER XII.

## CAMPAIGN OF 1758, IN AMERICA.

The affairs of Great-Britain in India, had been as unsuccessful as in America, until a captain, now colonel, Clive, appeared to lay the lasting foundation of the British empire in India.

During the operations in India, lord Walpole had been removed from the administration, and Mr. Pitt restored to the helm of state.†

With the change in the ministry, commenced a change of men and measures. New energies sprang up in the councils, and were diffused to the armies and the nation.

Mr. Pitt announced to the colonies his majesty's intention to prosecute the war with vigor in America, and requested New-England, New-York and New-Jersey, to furnish 20,000 men to meet the exigencies of the war, and enter upon the conquest of Canada. Assurances at the same time were given, that all the expenses of the colonies should be recommended to parliament for indemnification.

Fired with true patriotic zeal, the colonies aforesaid sent commissioners to Hartford, in April, 1758, to concert measures for mutual co-operation.

Lord Loudon had been recalled; general Abercrombie succeeded to the command of the northern army, and the northern colonies promptly furnished their several quotas of men, to the amount of 10,000.

Alive to the war and the interests of America, Mr. Pitt despatched a fleet from England, in February, under the command of admiral Boscawen, for the American station, with a land force, under the command of general Amherst and major-general Wolfe. This armament, when joined to the force at Halifax, amounted to 150 vessels and 14,000 men, destined for the reduction of Louisburg. Early in June, this whole force appeared before this Dunkirk of America.

The fortress was defended by a garrison of 2500 regulars, and about 600 militia, commanded by the chevalier Drucourt, and the harbor was defended by a naval force of five ships of the line, one of fifty guns, and five frigates; three of the latter had been sunk at the entrance of the harbor, to obstruct the English.

† Mr. Pitt had been removed from that office last year, by George II.

The troops were landed with great intrepidity, in the face of a resisting foe, and the town was invested by sea and land. The operations of the siege were prosecuted with great vigor, for about six weeks, when one of the French ships blew up. The flames communicated to two others, which also blew up. This prepared the way for the English admiral to make a descent upon the harbor, by a detachment of 600 marines in boats, who seized on the other two ships of war; destroyed the one and towed off the other, and thus the harbor was cleared at a blow. The batteries commenced, at the same time, a heavy cannonade, and the general threatened an assault upon the town.

The governor offered a reasonable capitulation, which was accepted, and on the 26th of July, the city of Louisburg, St. Johns, and the whole coast, from the St. Lawrence to Nova Scotia, were delivered up to the English. This blow in America, added to the successes in India, gave new spirit, and new energies to England and America, and opened the scenes of future triumphs in the war.

Pending these successes against Louisburg, general Abercrombie commenced operations with the northern army, against Ticonderoga and Crown Point. He advanced to lake George, early in July, at the head of 16,000 men; and on the 5th and 6th, crossed over and commenced his march for fort Ticonderoga.†

The general, after sustaining some losses in crossing the forests, advanced to the attack of Ticonderoga, before his cannon had come up. Among the heaviest of these losses stands the fall of the gallant lord Howe, who by his brave and interesting deportment had become the idol of the army.‡

“† The passage of Abercrombie across lake George on his way with his army to Ticonderoga, was effected by means of 1035 boats. The splendour of the military parade on the occasion, was eminently imposing, and deserves to be recorded. A late writer, (Dr. Dwight) thus describes it :

“The morning was remarkably bright and beautiful; and the fleet moved with exact regularity to the sound of fine martial music. The ensigns waved and glittered in the sunbeams, and the anticipation of future triumph shone in every eye. Above, beneath, around, the scenery was that of enchantment. Rarely has the sun, since that luminary was first lit up in the heavens, dawned on such a complication of beauty and magnificence.” How greatly did all the parade which was displayed, and all the anticipation which was indulged, add to the mortification of the defeat which followed.”

“‡ Lord Howe, who was killed near Ticonderoga, about two and a half miles from the French lines near the north end of lake George.

The fortress, protected on three sides by water, and on the fourth by a morass, was strongly fortified and defended by 5000 men, who were covered by an abattis and chevaux-de-frize.

The troops advanced to the charge with great intrepidity, but the contest was unequal ; the defence was firm, the conflict sharp and bloody, and the carnage great. The fortress was impregnable, and the general ordered a retreat to save his army from ruin. The flower of the English army were engaged in this desperate contest for more than four hours, and about 2000 were either killed or wounded.

The general felt the shock and disgrace, and retired with the remnant of his army, to his former position on lake George.

He next detached colonel Bradstreet with 3000 men, to reduce fort Frontenac.† Colonel Bradstreet, who had solicited the service, executed it promptly. He traversed the desert to Oswego, embarked upon lake Ontario, and on the 25th of August, landed his troops and summoned the fortress, which surrendered at discretion. Sixty pieces of cannon, nine armed sloops, and immense quantities of stores, provisions and merchandize, were the trophies of this victory.

This success was followed by another triumph, under general Forbes. The general commenced his march from Philadelphia, in July, and advanced into the wilderness, to humble the French at fort Duquesne. At Ray's town he was joined by colonel Washington, at the head of the Virginia regulars, which rendered his army about 8000 strong. General Forbes detached major Grant with about 800 men, as an advanced guard, to reconnoiter. This party fell into an ambush, a desperate combat ensued, and a gallant resistance was made, but

in a rencounter the day preceeding the disastrous assault upon that fortress, was not the father, but the eldest brother of the *two Howes*, who were so conspicuous in the revolutionary war, and from him the admiral, (being the eldest of the two surviving brothers) inherited the title of viscount, and afterwards became an earl. Lord Howe was at the time of his fall, a young man, though a major-general. Richard, who succeeded to the title, was then a captain in the British navy, and general sir William Howe was then a colonel. In the accounts of the celebrated battle, on the plains of Abraham, he is mentioned as commanding the British light infantry. These three Howes, were in fact, the grandsons of George I, being the children of his illegitimate daughter by lady Darlington, married to lord viscount Howe."

† This fort stands at the outlet of lake Ontario, into the river St. Lawrence.



the English were overpowered by numbers, and beat a retreat, with the loss of 300 men. Major Grant, with thirteen of his officers fell into the hands of the enemy. General Forbes advanced to the support of his detachment, resolved to carry the object of his destination. In November, he arrived before the fortress, but the enemy had taken the alarm, abandoned the fort, and retired down the Ohio, to the Mississippi; and fort Duquesne fell into the hands of the victors. The name of this fortress was now changed, in honor of the British minister, and the flag of old England waved upon the walls of fort Pitt.

This was a commanding position, which connected the western posts with the great chain of posts on the lakes, and was defended by fifty pieces of cannon, sixteen mortars, and contained a treasure in goods, provisions and military stores, to the amount of 800,000 livres of France.

The possession of this fortress gave to the colonies a commanding influence over the Indians in that region, and awed them into peace and submission. General Forbes garrisoned the fortress, made treaties with the Indians, and led back his army to Philadelphia, where he died through excessive fatigue, greatly beloved, highly applauded, and universally lamented.

After the fall of Louisburg, general Amherst repaired, with a body of regulars, to Albany, and from thence to lake George, to join the northern army; but the season was too far advanced to admit of further operations; the general disbanded the provincials, and retired with his regulars into winter quarters, as before.

The success of this campaign had given a new face to the war. Louisburg had fallen, and the entire conquest of capé Breton and Nova Scotia, had secured the fisheries, and covered the whole eastern frontier from the ravages of the enemy. An easy access was opened to the river St. Lawrence, the fortress of Quebec, and the heart of Canada.

The fall of Frontenac and Duquesne, had broken the chain of defence on the west, and thus the way was prepared for the next campaign.

The fleet and remainder of the armament, that had triumphed over Louisburg, repaired in autumn to the West-Indies; and Gandaloupe, Mariagalante, and several other small islands became the trophies of their victories, in those seas.

## CHAPTER XIII.

## CAMPAIGN OF 1759.

The successes of the last campaign had raised the confidence of Mr. Pitt, and inspired him with those efforts that led to the conquest of all French America. Louisburg and forts Frontenac and Duquesne had fallen, and the successes in the West Indies, closed the last campaign gloriously.

The seaboard was thus cleared of French marauders, and the western frontier, of savage depredations; the northern frontier was opened for an expedition into Canada, and the conquest of Quebec. The minister communicated the plan of the campaign to the governors of the northern colonies, and called on them for their several quotas of men, to be raised as heretofore, to the amount of 20,000. The colonies met this requisition promptly. The requisite troops were raised, equipped, and early in the field. General Amherst took the command of the northern army, and began his operations in June. In July, he crossed lake George, and appeared before Ticonderoga. The garrison blew up their magazine, abandoned the fort and retired to Crown Point. The garrison at Crown Point caught the alarm, and the whole force retired to the isle Au Noix.† The general advanced and took possession of these forts, in succession, without a gun; and thus the keys of Canada were removed. General Amherst next proceeded to construct a naval force, to dislodge the enemy from their strong hold, at the isle Au Noix.

During these operations, general Prideaux, with his division of the army, in conjunction with sir William Johnson and the Indians of the Six Nations, advanced against Niagara; about the middle of July, he invested the fort, and opened his trenches; but in the midst of anxious hope and active duty, the gallant Prideaux was killed, by the bursting of a cohorn. The command devolved on general Johnson, and the siege was continued with vigor. The French commander, dreading the horrors of a storm, determined to risk a battle. He accordingly marched out with his garrison and numerous Indian allies, and commenced the attack. The action soon became warm and bloody; the carnage was great, but the conflict was short. The enemy fled, and general Johnson pursued. A general slaughter marked the footsteps of the fugi-

† In the northern part of lake Champlain.

lives for more than five miles. De Aubry, their general, was taken, and the fort surrendered to the victors.

With the fall of Niagara, a way was opened to the heart of the enemy; Canada was unmasked, and Quebec and Montreal became the immediate objects of the war.

To effect the conquest of Canada, a formidable naval armament arrived at Halifax, from England, under the command of admirals Saunders, Holmes and Durel, together with a land force of 8,000 men, under the command of general Wolfe.

As soon as the river was clear of ice, admiral Saunders set sail for Quebec, with his whole force, and on the 26th of June, general Wolfe landed his troops upon the isle of Orleans, and commenced the siege.†

Quebec was defended by a strong garrison, and covered by an army of ten thousand men, under the command of the gallant general Montcalm, strongly posted below the town, between the rivers Montmorency and St. Charles.

Struck with astonishment at the magnitude of the object before him, general Wolfe commenced his operations; first by fortifying the western extremity of the isle of Orleans, and next by erecting batteries on point Levi.

Admiral Saunders took his station just below the town, to cover the batteries, and divide the attention of the enemy. Admiral Holmes took his station directly above the town.

Thus posted, general Wolfe opened his batteries, at point Levi, upon the lower town, and at the same time landed a body of troops, and commenced an attack upon general Montcalm. Both parties suffered severely in the conflict, but nothing decisive occurred. The troops were withdrawn, the ships removed from their stations, and no impression was made.‡

† The city of Quebec stands upon the north side of the river St. Lawrence, and upon a peninsula formed by the junction of the river St. Charles with the St. Lawrence. The city is divided into the upper and lower town, by a ledge of rocks almost 300 feet perpendicular, and is enclosed by a strong wall upon the land sides, that is capable of a powerful resistance. Below the city lies the isle of Orleans, about twenty miles long and seventeen broad; extending up to the harbor of Quebec, and covered with villages and plantations highly cultivated. Opposite to the western point of the island, stands point Levi, which overlooks both the city and harbor, from the southern bank of the St. Lawrence.

‡ The following anecdote may serve as a specimen of the sufferings then common to French and Indian wars:

“Captain Ochterlony and ensign Peyton belonged to the regiment”

General Wolfe resolved on making one more effort to draw general Montcalm into the field. He accordingly landed an-

of brigadier general Moncton. They were nearly of an age, which did not exceed thirty; the first was a North Britain, the other a native of Ireland. Both were agreeable in person, unblemished in character, and connected together by the ties of mutual friendship and esteem. On the day that preceded the battle, captain Ochterlony had been obliged to fight a duel with a German officer, in which, though he wounded and disarmed his antagonist, yet he himself received a dangerous hurt under the right arm, in consequence of which, his friends insisted on his remaining in camp during the action the next day: but his spirit was too great to comply with this remonstrance. He declared it should never be said that a scratch, received in a private rencounter, had prevented him from doing his duty, when his country required his service; and he took the field with a fusil in his hand, though he was hardly able to carry his arms. In leading up his men to the enemy's entrenchment, he was shot through the lungs with a musket ball, an accident which obliged him to part with his fusil; but he still continued advancing, until, by the loss of blood, he became too weak to proceed further. About the same time, Mr. Peyton was lamed by a shot, which shattered the small bone of his left leg. The soldiers, in their retreat, earnestly begged, with tears in their eyes, that captain Ochterlony would allow them to carry him and the ensign off the field. But he was so bigotted to a severe point of honor, that he would not quit the ground, though he desired they would take care of his ensign. Mr. Peyton, with a generous disdain, rejected their good offices, declaring he would not leave his captain in such a situation; and in a little time, they remained sole survivors on that part of the field.

"Captain Ochterlony sat down by his friend, and, as they expected nothing but immediate death, they took leave of each other; yet they were not altogether abandoned by the hope of being protected as prisoners; for the captain, seeing a French soldier, with two Indians, approach, started up, and accosting them in the French language, which he spoke perfectly well, expressed his expectation that they would treat him and his companion, as officers, prisoners and gentlemen. The two Indians seemed to be entirely under the conduct of the Frenchman, who, coming up to Mr. Peyton, as he sat on the ground, snatched his laced hat from his head, and robbed the captain of his watch and money. This outrage was a signal to the Indians for murder and pillage. One of them, clubbing his firelock, struck at him behind, with a view to knock him down; but the blow, missing his head, took place upon his shoulder. At the same instant, the other Indian poured his shot into the breast of this unfortunate young gentleman, who cried out, 'O Peyton! the villain has shot me.' Not yet satiated with cruelty, the barbarian sprung upon him, and stabbed him in the belly with his scalping knife. The captain having parted with his fusil, had no weapon for his defence, as none of the officers wore swords in the action. The three ruffians finding him still alive, endeavored to strangle him with his own sash; and he was now upon

other strong force, and commenced an attack ; but the conflict was unequal, and he was obliged to retire with the loss of more than 500 men, besides distinguished officers.

his knees. struggling against them with surprising exertion. Mr. Peyton, at this juncture, having a double barrellled musket in his hand, and seeing the distress of his friend, fired at one of the Indians, who droppèd dead on the spot. The other, thinking the ensign would now be an easy prey, advanced towards him, and Mr. Peyton, having taken good aim, at the distance of four yards, discharged his piece a second time, but it seemed to take no effect. The savage fired in his turn, and wounded the ensign in the shoulder ; then rushing upon him, thrust his bayonet through his body ; he repeated the blow, which Mr. Peyton attempted to parry, and received another wound in his left hand ; nevertheless, he seized the Indian's musket with the same hand, pulled him forwards, and, with his right, drawing a dagger which hung by his side, plunged it into the barbarian's side. A violent struggle ensued ; but at length, Mr. Peyton was uppermost, and with repeated strokes of his dagger, killed his antagonist outright. Here he was seized with an unaccountable emotion of curiosity, to know whether or not his shot had taken place on the body of the Indian ; he accordingly turned him up, and stripping off his blanket, perceived that the ball had penetrated quite through the cavity of the breast. Having thus obtained a dear bought victory, he started up on one leg, and saw captain Ochterlony standing at the distance of sixty yards, close by the enemy's breast work, with the French soldier attending him. Mr. Peyton then called aloud, ' captain Ochterlony, I am glad to see you have at last got under protection. Beware of that villain, who is more barbarous than the savages. God bless you, my dear captain. I see a party of Indians coming this way, and expect to be murdered immediately.' A number of those barbarians had for some time been employed on the left, in scalping and pillaging the dying and the dead, that were left upon the field of battle ; and above thirty of them were in full march to destroy Mr. Peyton. This gentleman knew he had no mercy to expect ; for, should his life be spared for the present, they would have afterwards insisted upon sacrificing him to the manes of their brethren whom he had slain ; and in that case, he would have been put to death by the most execrating tortures. Full of this idea, he snatched up his musket, and, notwithstanding his broken leg, ran above forty yards without halting, and feeling himself now totally disabled, and incapable of proceeding one step further, he loaded his piece, and presented it to the two foremost Indians, who stood aloof, waiting to be joined by their fellows ; while the French, from their breast-works, kept up a continual fire of cannon and small arms upon this poor, solitary, maimed gentleman. In this uncomfortable situation he stood, when he discerned at a distance, a Highland officer, with a party of his men, skirting the plain towards the field of battle. He forthwith waved his hand in signal of distress, and being perceived by the officer, he detached three of his men to his assistance. These brave fellows hastened to him through the midst of a terrible fire, and one of them bore him off on his shoulders. The Highland officer was captain Macdonald, of colonel Frazer's bat-

General Wolfe next detached admiral Homes, with 1200 men, under the command of general Murray, to commence an attack upon the shipping, in the harbor of Quebec ; this also proved unsuccessful.

The season was now far advanced ; all had been done that could be done, and yet the fortress remained inaccessible. The indefatigable efforts of general Wolfe wasted his strength ; his health began to decline, and he wrote to the minister, (Mr. Pitt) that he began to despair of success.

Stung with chagrin at his own, as well as his country's disappointment, general Wolfe called a council of war, in which it was determined to carry his operations, if possible, upon the plains of Abraham.

The troops were immediately embarked on board the fleet ; the post at point Levi was strengthened, and a manœuvring commenced for several days, up and down the river, to draw the attention of the enemy from the city.

Montcalm, alive to his duty, sent a detachment of 1500 men, to guard every accessible point, and watch the motions of the enemy.

On the night of the 13th of September, the troops landed near their place of destination ; crawled up a steep and almost inaccessible precipice, (more than 150 feet perpendicular height) by the assistance of rocks, stumps, bushes and limbs of trees, through a narrow winding path ; and at break of day the gallant Wolfe, with his intrepid band, were formed on the plains of Abraham. }

talion ; who, understanding that a young gentleman, his kinsman, had dropped on the field of battle, had put himself at the head of this party, with which he penetrated to the middle of the field, drove a considerable number of the French and Indians before him, and finding his relation still unscalped, carried him off in triumph. Poor captain Ochterlony was conveyed to Quebec, where, in a few days, he died of his wounds. After the reduction of that place, the French surgeons who attended him, declared that, in all probability, he would have recovered of the two shots he had received in his breast, had he not been mortally wounded in the belly, by the Indian's scalping knife.

" As this very remarkable scene was acted in sight of both armies, general Townsend, in the sequel, expostulated with the French officers upon the inhumanity of keeping up such a severe fire against two wounded gentlemen, who were disabled, and destitute of all hope of escaping. They answered, that the fire was not made by the regulars but by the Canadians and savages, whom it was not in the power of discipline to restrain." Silliman's Tour.

On the 12th of September, one hour after midnight, general Wolfe, with his army, leaving the ships, embarked in boats, and si-

When the tidings of this masterly movement reached Montcalm, he saw himself out-generaled, and immediately

lently dropped down with the current, intending to land a league above cape Diamond, and thus to gain the heights of Abraham. But, owing to the rapidity of the current, they fell below their intended place, and disembarked at what is now called Wolfe's cove, a mile, or a mile and a half, above the city. The operation was a most critical one—they had to navigate in silence, down a rapid stream—to hit upon the right place for a landing, which in the dark, might be easily mistaken—the shore was shelving, and the bank to be ascended was steep and lofty, and scarcely practicable even without opposition. Doubtless, it was this combination of circumstances, which lulled the vigilance of the wary and discerning Montcalm: he thought such an enterprise absolutely impracticable, and therefore had stationed only sentinels and picket guards along this precipitous shore.

Indeed, the attempt was in the greatest danger of being defeated by an occurrence, which is very interesting, as marking much more emphatically, than dry official accounts can do, the very great delicacy of the transaction.

One of the French sentinels, posted along the shore, challenged the English boats in the customary military language of the French, "Qui vit!" who goes there! to which a captain of Frazer's regiment, who had served in Holland, and was familiar with the French language and customs, promptly replied, "la France." The next question was much more embarrassing for the sentinel demanded, "a quel regiment?" "to what regiment." The captain, who happened to know the name of one of the regiments which was up the river, with Bougainville, promptly rejoined, "de la Reine," "the queen's." The soldier immediately replied, "passe," for he concluded at once, that this was a French convoy of provisions, which, as the English had learned, from some deserters, was expected to pass down the river to Quebec. The other sentinels were deceived in a similar manner; but one, less credulous than the rest, running down to the water's edge, called out, "Pourquoy est ce que vous ne parlez plus haut?" "why don't you speak louder." The same captain, with perfect self command, replied, "Tais toi, nous serons, en endues!" "hush, we shall be overheard and discovered." The sentry, satisfied with this caution retired. The British boats were on the point of being fired into, by the captain of one of their own transport ships, who, ignorant of what was going on, took them for French; but general Wolfe perceiving the commotion on board, rowed along side in person, and prevented the firing, which would have alarmed the town, and frustrated the enterprise. General Wolfe, although greatly reduced by a fever, to which a dysentery was superadded, was nevertheless the first man to leap ashore. The rugged precipices, full of projections of rocks and of trees, and shrubs growing every where among the cliffs, into which the bank was broken, presented a most forbidding appearance, and general Wolfe familiarly speaking to an officer who stood by, said, "I don't believe there is any possibility of getting up, but you must do your endeavour." There was only a narrow path, leading obliquely up the hill; this had been rendered by the enemy impassible, in consequence of being brok-

marched out of his camp, to take vengeance on the temerity of the foe.

Wolfe, and his little phalanx were soon in view, and the French commenced a distant and scattering fire, accompanied with such tremendous yells of the savages, as filled all the plain with the horrors of a scene unknown to British troops. Their hearts were unappalled; they received the French with great coolness, and at the distance of forty yards, opened a fire upon the enemy, which checked their career. Wolfe now received a wound in his wrist, which he disregarded. They repeated their fire, which threw the enemy into disorder; this when renewed, caused them to fly. At this eventful moment, fell general Wolfe, and with him general Moncton, (previously wounded) and the command devolved upon general Townsend. He advanced to the charge, to take vengeance on the foe. The cry of *they run*, reached the ears of general Wolfe, who exclaimed, '*who run?*' the reply met his ear, '*the enemy run;*' then said he, 'I die in peace,' and expired. The gallant Townsend and Murray took vengeance on the enemy with the bayonet and broad

en up by cross ditches, and there was besides an entrenchment at the top, defended by a captain's guard. This guard was easily dispersed, and the troops then pulled themselves up by taking hold of the boughs and stumps of the trees and of the projections of the rocks.

This precipice, (which may be in different places, from one hundred and fifty to two hundred feet high) is still very rude and rugged, but probably much less so than in 1759; it can now be surmounted, without very great difficulty, by men who are unmolested.

Wolfe staked all, upon a very hazardous adventure; had he been discovered prematurely, through a spy, a deserter, or an alarmed sentry, his army would have been inevitably lost; but having gained the heights, he formed his troops, and met the enemy in good order.

The plains of Abraham lie south and west of Quebec, and commence the moment you leave the walls of the city. They are a very elevated tract of ground; this must of course be the fact, as they are on the summit of the heights which terminate at the river; they are nearly level—free from trees and all other obstacles, and I presume were nearly so at the time of the battle. Our military friend, captain —, with true professional feelings, remarked, that it was "a fine place for a battle." I went to the brink of the precipice, where my guide assured me that Wolfe and the army came up; a foot path, much trodden, leads through low bushes to the spot. I presume, that five hundred men, posted on this edge, would have repelled the whole army.

It was about an hour before the dawn, that the army began to ascend the precipice, and by day light, they were formed and in perfect preparation to meet the enemy.—Silliman's Tour.



sword, until they reached the gates of the city, which alone covered them from total ruin.

The gallant Montcalm fell mortally wounded, in the action, but lived not to witness the fall of the city. Quebec surrendered to the conquerors in five days.

Thus fell Montcalm, the hero of French America ; thus fell general Wolfe, the glory of his country, and his country's arms ; and thus fell Quebec, the Gibraltar of America.†

General Townsend embarked about 1000 French officers and soldiers, and sent them to France. He also left a garrison of 5000 men under the command of the gallant general Murray, and then embarked on board the fleet, and set sail for England.

General Amherst had succeeded in destroying the naval force of the enemy, upon lake Champlain ; but the season had become so tempestuous before he could carry on his operations against isle Au Noix, that he abandoned the enterprise, and returned to Crown Point for the winter.

---

## CHAPTER XIV.

### CAMPAIGN OF 1760.

At the close of the action that decided the fate of Quebec, the main body of the French army, consisting of about ten battalions of regulars, retired to Montreal, under the command of monsieur de Levi, where they were reinforced with 6000 Canadian militia, in the course of the winter.

With the opening of the spring, monsieur de Levi, who had succeeded general Montcalm, commenced his operations for the reduction of Quebec. He embarked about 11,000 men at Montreal, with a great body of Indians, and descended the river, under the protection of six large frigates, and landed his whole force at Point au-Tremble, on the 28th of April. With this force, de Levi had resolved to carry the city by a coup de-main. But the gallant Murray had otherwise determined ; accordingly, he marched out at the head of 3000

† The French lost about 1000 men, killed and wounded, in the action and the English about 500.

men, (the remains of the 5000 left in autumn) and gave the enemy battle. The van of the French were routed by the impetuosity of the charge, and driven in disorder upon the main body ; the English pursued, and the action became general and bloody. Overpowered by numbers, the gallant Murray beat a retreat, and led back his heroes into the city, with the loss of 1000 of his garrison.

Elated with this victory, the enemy pursued to the walls, and commenced the most vigorous operations to carry the city. The strife became desperate between the parties, until the 9th of May, when an English frigate arrived, and announced the approach of an English fleet.

On the 15th of May, a part of the fleet arrived, and gave relief to the garrison. On the 16th, the French frigates were all taken or destroyed, and monsieur de Levi abandoned his camp in the night, and fled with the greatest precipitation towards Montreal. Lord Colville arrived with the remainder of the fleet, two days after ; and the flag of old England waved triumphant on the walls of Quebec.

General Amherst had now assembled his forces at Crown Point, and was in readiness to commence operations. He directed one expedition by the way of lake Ontario, and the other against the isle Au Noix, by the way of lake Champlain ; and ordered general Murray, at the same time, to embark his troops at Quebec, and meet him on a given day, before Montreal.

These movements were executed with great precision ; the generals arriving on the same day, and the division from the isle Au Noix, the next ; and the city was completely invested. On the 8th, monsieur Vaudreuil, the governor, signed a capitulation, and the garrison marched out with the honors of war. The French troops were conveyed to France, and Canada was cleared.

France now saw herself stripped of all her vast possessions in America, excepting New-Orleans, on the Mississippi. This she retained as a solitary monument of all her greatness ; from this she stimulated the Cherokees to commence their ravages upon the defenceless frontiers of the south, through the winter and spring.

General Amherst sent on a body of regulars, to co-operate with the troops of Virginia and Carolina ; and before midsummer, the enemy were humbled and peace was restored.

## CHAPTER XV.

GENERAL ARRANGEMENTS IN EUROPE TO PROSECUTE THE WAR,  
WITH A VIEW TO OBTAIN AN EQUITABLE PEACE.

The war still raged with violence in Europe and in India. Spain became alarmed for the fate of her American colonies when she saw the unparalleled success of the British arms. France took advantage of this, and commenced negotiations with Spain, to engage her in the war, under the alliance of the family compact. This roused the jealousy of England, and Mr. Pitt demanded an immediate declaration of war against Spain, which was refused; and he turned his attention to the ocean, and commenced vigorous war upon the West-Indies.

The allies in Europe, pushed the war in Prussia, and the French attempted to seize on Hanover.

Mr. Pitt sent a naval armament to the coast of France, and took Belle-Isle, (off the mouth of the Loire) which filled England with spirit and hilarity. This blow, trifling as it was, called the attention of France to a peace, and she actually offered to yield to England all her conquests in America and India; and offered Minorca for Gaudaloupe and Mariagalante; also to relinquish all her conquests in Germany, provided England would make restitution for her commerce taken before the declaration of war. All these concessions the minister refused, and his refusal sealed the family compact, August 15, 1761. The basis of this compact was a community of interest, and a mutual naturalization of the subjects of both kingdoms; and its obligations were mutual and reciprocal. It also extended to the king of the two Sicilies, and embraced the unity of the three monarchies.

This compact gave a shock to Europe, and threatened the subversion of her balance of power. Mr. Pitt rose indignant at the pusillanimity of the king and council, in refusing him a declaration of war against Spain, and resigned in disgust.

The earl of Egremont was raised to the helm of state. He felt the high responsibility attached to that station; and entered with spirit into the measures of Mr. Pitt. He wrote to the governors of New-England, to furnish the same number of men, for the service of this year, as the last, to secure the conquests in America. The troops were as promptly raised as before, and general Amherst took the command.

To meet the exigencies of the approaching war with Spain, the minister sent a powerful armament to the West-India station, consisting of eighteen ships of the line, besides frigates, fire-ships, bomb-ketches &c. under the command of admiral Rodney, with about 9000 land forces, under the command of general Moncton. This armament was joined by about three thousand regulars and provincials from America.

On the 7th of January, the whole force arrived off the island of Martinico, and on the 14th of February, the island was given up, by capitulation, to the British arms. With the conquest of this island, succeeded the conquest of every French island in the West-Indies, viz. Gaudaloupe, New-Granada, St. Lucia, and St. Vincent.

These conquests produced the war between England and Spain, and this armament was turned against the Spanish West Indies. To strengthen this force, the minister despatched another armament from Portsmouth, (England) under the command of admiral Pocock, with lord Albemarle, as commander of the land forces.—This armament, when joined by the detachments from the fleet of admiral Rodney, consisted of nineteen ships of the line, eighteen frigates, and one hundred and fifty transports, carrying 10,000 land forces; all destined against the island of Cuba. A land force of from 4 to 6,000 men, embarked at New York, and joined this armament; and on the 17th of June the troops were landed, and commenced their operations against the city of Havana, capital of the island of Cuba.

This city is walled, and strongly fortified by nature and art, and protected by a fortress, called the Moro Castle, deemed impregnable, which cost the British armament a siege of two months. In this memorable siege, the army experienced every possible hardship, from the nature and difficulty of the service, the heat of the climate and a wasting, pestilential disease, with which 6 or 8,000 of the troops were sick at one time.

As the hurricane months approached, the general began to despair of success; but his hopes were revived by the appearance of a body of New England troops, who had been sent home sick, from Martinico, and had recovered on their voyage; put about, and joined their companions before the city of Havanna. This unexpected reinforcement inspired the desponding troops with fresh hopes, courage and zeal. The vigorous efforts of the siege were renewed, and on the

13th of August, the city of Havanna, with twelve ships of the line, three frigates, and several merchantmen in the harbor, together with a district of country of 180 miles in extent were surrendered to the arms of his Britannic majesty.

This blow was serious in its effects and consequences ; it struck at the vital interests of French and Spanish commerce, and led them to think seriously of peace.

Commissioners were soon appointed by all the parties, and preliminaries of peace were arranged at Fontainebleau, upon the principles of *uti possidetis* entered upon by Mr. Pitt ; and on the 18th of February, 1763, the definitive treaty was signed at Paris, and peace was restored.

By this treaty, all French America, including Nova Scotia, except New Orleans, was ceded to Great Britain ; but all the conquests of Europe, India, and the West Indies, were restored *in statu quo*. Spain ceded to England, the Floridas, in exchange for Havanna ; and France agreed to demolish the fortifications of Dunkirk, as a general acknowledgment for the indulgences she had received in the treaty.

With the treaty of Paris was soon united the treaty of Hubertsburg, which closed the war between Austria and Prussia, and all christendom was once more hushed to repose.

The cession of French America to Great Britain, cost the colonies an arduous and expensive eight years war ; and it was then believed, that it would have disarmed the Indians of the murderous hatchet and scalping knife ; and extinguished the torch that had for so many years laid waste their frontier settlements ; but their savage spirits were not yet subdued.

---

## CHAPTER XVI.

### INDIAN WAR.

The treaty with the Cherokees, of 1761, was considered by both parties, as the basis of a lasting peace ; not only with the Cherokees, but with all the Indian tribes, throughout the western wilderness. To render this peace the more permanent, three Cherokee chiefs went over to England, and there confirmed the peace with the British court.

Sir William Johnson made a tour through the interior of the northern tribes, to avert that jealousy which the conquest

of Canada had excited, and which the emissaries of France were endeavoring to kindle into a flame.

At the same time, the governors of several of the northern colonies held a conference with the Six Nations, at Albany, to strengthen the force of former treaties, engage their confidence, and fix a permanent and lasting peace between them and the colonies.

At this conference a plot was concerted by the Indians to surprise the English forts, butcher the garrisons and destroy the settlements. This plot produced a confederacy of all the tribes north of the Ohio, to engage in the war.

In the month of harvest, 1763, a general attack commenced upon the frontier settlements of Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Virginia; and they fell a defenceless prey to the ravages of an Indian war. All the traders in the Indian country were murdered, at the same time, and plundered to the amount of several hundred thousand pounds, which furnished supplies to carry on the savage war. The forts of Le Boeuf, Venango and Presque-isle, became the first objects of the war. These, with Michilimackinac, were soon surprised and taken by the Indians, and the garrisons butchered or carried into captivity.

Forts Pitt, Detroit and Niagara, became the next objects of the war. The two first were immediately invested by numerous parties of Indians, and the garrisons shut up within the forts. Gen. Amherst, alarmed for the safety of these posts, after the fall of the others, despatched captain Dalyell, with a reinforcement to strengthen the garrison of Detroit. This detachment succeeded, and after some severe skirmishing, raised the siege, and the savages withdrew.

General Amherst sent another party at the same time, to strengthen the garrison at fort Pitt, under the command of col. Bouquet. This party was met on their way, and fell into an ambuscade at Turtle creek, which commenced an action that continued two days successively. The savages fought with the most desperate fury; but the English met the shock with firmness, repelled the enemy at the point of the bayonet, and drove them into the forest. These attacks were renewed, again and again, and as often repelled; until the savages were overpowered and abandoned the contest. Colonel Bouquet pursued his march without much further molestation, and in four days reached fort Pitt.

General Amherst sent a third detachment to the relief of Niagara, but they fell into an ambuscade near the point of destination, and were all cut off and destroyed, September, 1763 ; the garrison, however, held the fortress.

General Gage now succeeded general Amherst, and the war continued. The colonies roused to the combat, raised a force which entered the Indian country, under the command of colonels Bouquet, Bradstreet and Putnam, with such success, as compelled them to sue for peace.

The English dictated the articles of this treaty, with such severity, as they hoped would secure their frontiers from all future savage wars.

Ten chiefs were detained as hostages from the council, to guaranty the safe return of all prisoners taken in the war : all which was duly fulfilled, and the hostages released. Peace was restored.

---

## CHAPTER XVII.

### SUSQUEHANNAE CLAIMS CONTESTED BETWEEN CONNECTICUT AND PENNSYLVANIA.

It will be recollected that the original grant of the colony of Connecticut was included in the grant, made by king James I. of England, in the year 1620, to the earl of Warwick and others, and that this patent conveyed all the lands in America, lying between the fortieth and forty-eighth degrees of north latitude, extending from the Atlantic ocean on the east, to the Pacific ocean on the west, and including those tracts of country, which afterwards became the colonies of Pennsylvania and New York. It will also be recollected, that in 1631, the earl of Warwick, president of the council of Plymouth, granted by patents to lords Say and Seal, and Brook, and associates, as described in note to page 22.

This territory was again confirmed to Connecticut, as a colony of England, by her charter granted by king Charles II. in 1662, and has been noticed ; which confirmation under the great seal of England, was considered as divesting the crown of all possible legal claims, and vesting in the colony of Connecticut, all possible legal rights to said lands. These grants were all made, as well as the charter of Charles II.

and given many years before any grants were made to Wm. Penn ; and the settlers of the colony of Connecticut, had not the least doubt but their title to the lands was clear, and that they had good right to sell or settle all lands heretofore described. Accordingly in the year 1754, a company of gentlemen, (afterwards known by the name of the Susquehannah company) purchased of the Iroquois, or Six Nations, (when in council, at the congress held at Albany at that time) a tract of land lying west of the colony of New York, and upon the waters of the Susquehannah, extending seventy miles north and south, and ten miles east of said river ; being within the degree of latitude described in the grant first made to the earl of Warwick, and afterwards conveyed by him to lords Say and Seal, and Brook, and confirmed by king Charles II. to the colony of Connecticut. These purchasers, with full confidence in their claim, petitioned the general assembly, at their session in May, 1655, praying for an act of incorporation, with permission to form a distinct commonwealth, if it should meet with his majesty's pleasure ; which petition was granted, and the company was recommended to the favor of his majesty.

These lands, at the time this company extinguished the Indian claims at Albany, were uninhabited and unoccupied ; and at the close of the war, in 1763, the company began the Wyoming settlement, upon the river Susquehannah. At the same time, the company sent out col. Eliphalet Dyer, as their agent to the court of Great Britain, to manage the concerns of the company. The agent presented a petition to his majesty, praying " that the company might become colonists on said lands, and that he would grant them such power, privileges and authorities, as in his great wisdom he should think fit." His majesty took this petition into his most gracious consideration ; but it had not been acted upon when the revolutionary war commenced, and the contested claims of Pennsylvania remained unsettled.

Pending this petition to the crown, the assembly of Connecticut, at their May session, 1770, passed a resolve to transmit a statement of the case in controversy, to a learned counsel in England, who gave their final answer in the following words : " In case the governor and company of Connecticut, shall in point of prudence, think it expedient to make this claim and support it, it will be proper, either amicably, and in concurrence with the proprietaries of Pennsylvania, or in case



of the refusal of these proprietaries, without them, to apply to the king in council, praying his majesty to appoint commissioners in America, to decide the question, with the usual power of appeal;" signed by four of the first counsellors at law in England. This decision was received by the assembly, at their October session, 1773, whereupon they resolved, "that this assembly, at this time, will assert their claim, and in some proper way, support such claim to those lands, contained within the limits and boundaries of the charter of this colony, which are westward of the colony of New-York." The assembly appointed col. Dyer, doctor Johnson, and J. Strong, to carry this resolve into effect, by treating with governor Penn, concerning the lands in question. These commissioners accepted their appointment, and in December following, went to Philadelphia to confer with gov. Penn, and if possible, to settle the controversy. They opened their commission to his excellency, and communicated the acts of assembly, relative to the lands in question, and their appointment; but the governor declined all discussion upon the subject of the controversy, and the commissioners returned, and made their report to the assembly, at their session in January.

Upon this report, the general assembly proceeded to incorporate the town of Westmoreland, upon the river Susquehannah, with the same privileges as the other towns in the colony of Connecticut. This act of the assembly gave a general alarm throughout the colony; many saw, or thought they say, that the peace and interest of the colony were about to be committed, to gratify the avarice and ambition of a company of speculators; they accordingly assembled in large numbers at Middletown, and drew up a remonstrance to the general assembly, in which they style themselves—"A meeting of the committees of twenty-three towns," and in which they state largely and extensively, their grievances and fears, as well as their objections to the measure at large, and the more unjustifiable proceedings of the Susquehannah company, &c. This petition was met by a petition to the assembly, from the Susquehannah company, in which they state the legality of their claims, the great expense they have incurred in support of those claims, their prospects of success, and the good that will result to the public. Pamphlet writers entered largely into the merits of the question, pro and con; but the revolutionary war commenced in the midst of the controversy, and both parties went on to settle the lands; the Connecticut claims were

inally overpowered by the violence of the Pennsylvania settlers, and her title was lost.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

### VERMONT.

The settlement of the Dutch at Manhattan, at the mouth of the Hudson, and at Albany, together with the grant of the colony to the duke of York, by king Charles II. and the settlement of New-Hampshire by the English, have been noticed ; but the contested claims between New-Hampshire and New-York, that led to the settlement of Vermont, now claim particular notice.

The colony of New-Hampshire, after she had settled her southern boundary with Massachusetts, in 1741, claimed as far west as the western line of Massachusetts ; and the then governor of the colony, Benning Wentworth, made a grant of a township, six miles square, upon the south-western corner of the claims ; bounded south on Massachusetts, and west on New-York, and lying twenty miles east of Hudson river, and called it after his own christian name, Benningtown. The same governor continued to make grants of those lands, lying west of Connecticut river, until the war of 1754 commenced, (called the old French war) and from that time, all grants ceased, until the close of the war in America, 1761.

In 1763, about 100 townships had been located, west of Connecticut river, extending to the boundary of New-York, viz. twenty miles east of the Hudson river, and above the source of that river, to the shore of lake Champlain.

The lieutenant governor of New-York claimed all these lands west of Connecticut river, by proclamation ; and asserted the right of jurisdiction, as belonging to the colony of New-York, by virtue of the patent of the duke of York.

The governor of New-Hampshire, rejected the claims of New-York, by his proclamation ; confirming the New-Hampshire grants, and exhorted the settlers to be firm, and persevere.

The colony of New-York carried her claims to the crown, by the way of memorial, and obtained the following order, 1764 :

“His majesty orders and declares, the western banks of the Connecticut river, from where it enters the province of Massachusetts-Bay, as far north as the 45th degree of north latitude, to be the boundary line between the said two provinces of New-Hampshire and New-York.”

The colony of New-York next proceeded, upon this decision, to lay out four counties, extending upon the eastern and western sides of the mountain, and covering the New-Hampshire grants. In these counties, they erected courts of judicature, and summoned the settlers to surrender their grants. This kindled a warm dispute. Some towns complied, and repurchased their lands under New-York, and others wholly refused. Against these, suits of ejectment commenced, and other grants were issued by the governor of New-York, to other settlers ; and all was confusion.

Both governors were enriching themselves with heavy fees, and the settlers were left to fight out the quarrel.†

When the sheriff's attempted to serve the writs of ejectment, the people were firm, and resisted the officers. This roused the energies and resentment of the governor of New-York, and he ordered out the militia to support the officers. The settlers were firm, appeared in arms, and foiled the attempts of the sheriffs, and supported their claims.

Bold and aspiring men had managed the affairs of the settlers, behind the curtain, until the parties became firmly united. They then came forward, and openly defended the rights of the people. At the head of these, appeared Ethan Allen ; a man of daring spirit, and unbounded ambition ; fixed and determined in his purposes ; rough and severe in his manners ; but a firm protector of the rights of the settlers.

Allen, by his writings, unmasked the views of the N. York speculators, and showed the weakness and absurdity of their claims, and the futility of their grants ; and urged to union, effort, and resistance.

These writings were, like the author, coarse, but full of energy, and perfectly conformable to the sentiments and feelings of the settlers. They were greedily received, and promptly obeyed, and raised Allen to the head of the party.

Next to Allen, appeared a Mr. Seth Warner, who was a man of great coolness, but equally firm, and as decided a friend to the cause, as Allen. When Mr. Warner was designated as

† The governor of New-Hampshire took only \$100 for each grant ; but the governor of New-York, took two or three thousand.

a rioter, and an officer attempted to arrest him, he boldly resisted, wounded the officer, disarmed him, and took him into custody, until he was willing to desist.

Under this state of things, the settlers sent out special agents to England, and laid their grievances before the king. Their complaints were graciously received, and his majesty, upon a full hearing, issued the following order to the governor of N. York, 1767 :—

“ His majesty doth hereby strictly charge, require and command, that the governor or commander-in-chief of his majesty's province of New-York, for the time being, do not, upon pain of his majesty's highest displeasure, presume to make any grant whatsoever, of any of the lands described in the 2d report, until his majesty's pleasure shall be known concerning the same.”

The governor of New-York disregarded the royal mandate, and in place of coercion, attempted to cajole the settlers into a compliance with his measures ; but Allen, Warner, and three others, he proscribed.

In 1774, the governor of New-York published the following decree :

“ Whereas, &c. And in case the said offenders shall not respectively surrender themselves, pursuant to such orders of his excellency the governor and commander-in-chief, for the time being, to be made in council as aforesaid, he or they so neglecting or refusing to surrender himself, or themselves, as aforesaid, (that is, within seventy days) shall, from the day to be appointed for his or their surrendry as aforesaid, be adjudged and deemed (and if indicted for a capital offence, hereafter to be perpetrated) to be convicted and attainted of felony, and shall suffer death, as in cases of persons convicted and attainted of felony, by verdict and judgment, without benefit of clergy ; and it shall or may be lawful for the supreme court of judicature of this colony, or either of the courts of oyer and terminer and general gaol delivery, for the respective counties aforesaid, to award execution against such offender, or offenders,” &c.

This high stretch of despotic power, was accompanied with a proclamation, offering a reward of fifty pounds per head, for Allen, Warner, and six others, who had taken the lead in support of the settlers. This step cut off all possible accommodation between the parties, and a general meeting was convened on the west side of the Green Mountain, which passed the following resolve, April 14, 1774 :

“Resolved, That for the future, every necessary preparation be made, and that our inhabitants hold themselves in readiness at a minute’s warning, to aid and defend such of our friends, who for their merit to the general cause, are falsely denominated rioters ; but that we will not act any thing more nor less, than on the defensive, and always encourage due execution of the laws, in all civil causes, and also in criminal prosecutions, that are so indeed ; and we will assist to the utmost of our power, the officers appointed for that purpose.”

Having obtained this support, the proscribed persons published the following declaration, in their address to the people :—“ We will kill or destroy any person or persons, whomsoever, that shall presume to be accessory, aiding or assisting, in taking any of us.”

Here the parties were at issue, and war was declared.

They next sent out colonel Skeene to England, to petition his majesty, that the settlers might be formed into a royal government, as a new province ; and colonel Skeene actually received the appointment of governor of Crown Point and Ticonderoga, as a preparatory step to meet their petition.

During these movements, a congress had been held at Philadelphia, September, 1774, who recommended that the colonies should maintain their liberties with firmness ; which occasioned a suppression of all courts, held under the authority of the crown. This led to an insurrection at Westminster, in March, 1775, for the suppression of the court ; in which one man was killed, and the officers of the crown were seized by the people, and sent to the gaol at Northampton, in Massachusetts, April 11.

Thus the parties were balanced, when the revolution commenced, and the first blood was spilt upon the plains of Lexington, April 19, 1775.

All parties then seriously engaged in the magnitude of the object before them ; suspended their private animosities, and became the zealous defenders of their common country.

In July, 1776, a representation of one member from each town, met in convention at Dorset, and entered into a joint association for mutual defence. In September they met again, by adjournment, and resolved “ to take suitable measures, as soon as may be, to declare the Hampshire grants, a free and independent District,” and then dissolved their sittings.

In 1777, a general representation from all the towns, met in

convention at Westminster, and resolved, "that the New-Hampshire grants are, and of right ought to be, and they are hereby declared, a free and independent jurisdiction or state, known and distinguished by the name of New-Connecticut, alias Vermont," &c.

Under this character, the convention petitioned congress, then sitting at Philadelphia, that they might be owned and received as a free and independent state; and that their delegates might be admitted to a seat in that honorable body.

New-England favored the measure, but New-York opposed, and the controversy in congress was spun out through the war. The whole history of the revolution will shew, that no one section of the United States, was more distinguished for patriotism and valor, than Vermont.

In 1780, New-York withdrew her troops from Skeenesborough, and congress withdrew all continental troops from the state of Vermont, and she was abandoned to her fate.

At this time, a few of her leading men,† made proposals of neutrality to the British general, in Canada; and under this mask, commenced a negotiation for a re-union with the crown of England. This farce was managed with great adroitness, and spun out to the close of the war; and thus Vermont was shielded from the subsequent ravages of the enemy.

During this negotiation, the controversy between New-York and Vermont became so serious, as to endanger the peace, not only of the two states, but of the Union.

In this critical state of their affairs, governor Chittenden wrote to general Washington, and solicited his advice, 1781. To which the general returned such a conciliatory reply, as led finally to an amicable adjustment of all their differences; although the party strife continued to rage, down to the peace of 1783.‡

† Eight only were entrusted with the secret.

‡ The following is general Washington's answer, in reply to governor Chittenden's letter:

"It is not my business, neither do I think it necessary now to discuss the origin of the right of a number of the inhabitants, to that tract of country, formerly distinguished by the name of the New-Hampshire grants, and now known by that of Vermont. I will take it for granted, that their right was good, because congress, by their resolve of the 2<sup>th</sup> of August, imply it; and by that of the 21<sup>st</sup> are willing to confirm it, provided the new state is confined to certain described bounds. It appears to me, therefore, that the dispute of boundary is the only one that exists, and *that* being removed, all others would be removed also, and the matter terminated to the satisfaction.

In 1790, Vermont entered into an amicable negotiation with New-York, and agreed to pay the sum of \$30,000, and take her quit-claim to all the lands in controversy ; which was done accordingly. In 1791, Vermont was admitted into the Union.

The constitution of 1778, was revised in 1789, and again in 1792 ; but the present constitution was not established until 1793.

The rapid increase of wealth, population, and literature in Vermont, have rendered her a valuable member of the national Union.



#### GENERAL REMARKS ON PART I.

That period of our history, which is included within the limits of the first part of this work, presents to our view a novel scene, whose parallel is not to be found upon the whole historic page. All those emigrations from the parent stock, that commenced the settlement of all the ancient, as well as the modern kingdoms, laid their foundations under some military chief, or some particular leader, whose will gave law to the colony ; but the settlement of New-England, commenced with a colony of freemen, who laid their foundations deep and lasting. They took the bible for the rule of their faith and practice, as well as for the standard of their civil and religious government, and founded the whole, upon the will of the people. They felt themselves competent to this, because they had been trained in a school of civil and religious controversy, and persecution, in England, that had taught them the practical use of all those civil and religious virtues, that were alone

of all parties. You have nothing to do but to withdraw your jurisdiction to the confines of your old limits, and obtain an acknowledgment of independence and sovereignty, under the resolve of the 21st of August, for so much territory as does not interfere with the ancient established bounds of New York, New-Hampshire, and Massachusetts. In my private opinion, while it behoves the delegates to do ample justice to a body of people, sufficiently respectable by their numbers, and entitled by other claims, to be admitted into that confederation, it becomes them also to attend to the interests of their constituents, and see, that under the appearance of justice to the one, they do not materially injure the rights of the other. I am apt to think this is the prevailing opinion of congress."

absolutely necessary for such an establishment. The rulers of this colony, and all such as have grown out of it, were first chosen by the people, for short periods, and possessed no power, but such as was delegated to them by their constituents, and this power was checked and balanced by fixed constitutional principles. When they had thus laid the foundations of government, they commenced their arduous duties of purchasing lands of the natives, clearing the forest, building towns, gathering churches, establishing a regular system of public worship, and laying permanent foundations for the support of a liberal plan of education. Upon this broad basis of wisdom and strength, were the foundations of the colonies of New England laid, and upon this we have seen them rise to that high elevation of national prosperity they now enjoy.

To understand correctly the character of this people, it may be necessary to trace a little more particularly, the prominent features of this general policy.

*Religion, manners and customs*—The religion of the founders of New England was strictly puritan, and of the congregational or independent denomination; it commenced under the great English reformer, John Wickliffe, in the 14th century, and having passed through those scenes of persecution in England, that distinguished the reigns of Henry VIII. and his successors, down to the time of James I., Charles I. and the Commonwealth, sought a retreat for peace and safety in the wilds of N. England. The manners and customs that grew out of this religion, were rigidly puritanical. Grave, severe, and circumspect in their deportment, our ancestors combined a practical religion, with the most scrupulous morals, which laid the foundation for a set of customs and habits, that operated upon society more forcibly, if possible, than the laws, and gave a peculiar force and energy to their civil codes. Under such a system, industry and frugality, patience and perseverance, magnanimity and valor, with a practical display of all the moral virtues, formed the characters of the first settlers of New England.

*Trade and commerce*—The first trade of the colonies of New England commenced with the natives; furs and peltry of all descriptions, were purchased and exported to England, in large quantities, for which they paid the Indians in blankets, and other articles of coarse clothing, fire arms, ammunition, hatchets, rum, &c. As the forest receded before the cultivator, lumber, grain of all kinds, beef, pork, lard, butter, cheese,



and live stock, were soon exported in large quantities, to the West-India Islands, for which they received in exchange all the productions of those islands. This trade commenced as early as 1635. The next year ship-building commenced, and the first vessel then built in New England, made her first West India voyage; and ship-building progressed so rapidly, that the colonies of New England became their own carriers. soon after, in their European and West India trade, and furnished vessels for their cod and whale fisheries. At the close of this period of their history, more than 10,000 tons of shipping were built annually in New England; these either supplied their carrying trade, were sold in foreign markets, or were used in their cod and whale fisheries, which commenced as early as 1639, and had now become a most lucrative branch of their commerce.

*Agriculture*—This was not only the first employment of the first colonies, but continues to this day, to be the basis of their wealth. They found in America, the Indian corn, a grain not known in England, from whence they came; the culture of which, and its use, they learnt from the Indians; to this they added the culture of all the grains of Europe, together with hemp and flax, peas, beans and potatoes; and their artists soon began to manufacture their own tools for husbandry. Horses, cattle, sheep and goats, when introduced into New-England, from Europe, flourished well, and soon became important articles in their exports to the West Indies.

Although the expense of labor was high, and the labor of clearing their lands arduous and difficult; and above all, the numerous Indian wars, to which they were continually exposed, and with which they were often harassed, distressing beyond expression; still the rich and luxuriant soil yielded them abundance for their support, in peace and war, and a good supply for the purposes of commerce.

*Arts and manufactures*—It was a part of the policy of Great Britain to discourage, and even suppress, as far as possible, the arts and manufactures of her American colonies, in order to encourage her own, by supplying them from England. But necessity soon taught them to manufacture coarser articles, for common use; they built their own houses, mills and ships; their domestic manufactures furnished many articles of clothing; they manufactured their own furniture, and had made some progress in the manufacture of iron.

The art of printing was introduced as early as 1639, and at the close of this period had extended throughout N. England.

*Population.*—The general estimate for the close of this period, stands at about 400,000 for New England, which amounted to nearly one half of the white population of the then British colonies.

It is worthy of particular notice, that so small a population, scattered over such an extent of country, should have been able to support so many Indian and French wars, and make such conquests, in Nova Scotia and Canada, as appear in their history.

*Education.*—This, next to the religion of the colonies, engaged their earliest attention; and for the support of this they made provision by law, as appears by the earliest acts of their legislative bodies. They instituted primary, or district schools, in all their towns, and obliged by law, every county town to maintain a grammar school, where the youth could be fitted for college. They also made such provision for the support of these schools, as rendered them free to all classes of the people, and the children of the poor had equally the advantages of early education, with those of the rich. All classes could read and write, and understand common arithmetic. These institutions afforded the means of instruction to the yeomanry of the country, sufficient for all the purposes of business, in common life. All the heroes, statesmen and clergy of New England, except the first emigrants, received the rudiments of their education in their primary schools. This free and liberal system of education, gave that general expansion to the minds of the people, that led them to feel and highly appreciate their own civil and religious rights, and taught them how to maintain and defend them. Academies in New England, at this period of their history, were not known; and their colleges have been noticed in their places.

*Wars.*—These, from the commencement of the Pequot war, in 1637, to the close of the French and Indian war, in 1763, were frequent, and with short intermissions. The rival spirit of France and England, through that period, was in its full strength; and whenever they were at war in Europe, it extended to their colonies in America; and New England was sure to be involved in a French and Indian war. They had also frequent collisions with the frontier tribes of Indians, and suffered severely from their cruel ravages and depredations, as may be seen through the whole of this period of their history.

# UNITED STATES.

---

## PART II.

---

### CHAPTER I.

#### VIRGINIA.

In the introduction of this work, particular notice has been taken of the numerous adventures, that led to the discovery of Virginia, and the founding of Jamestown.

The patent granted to the London company, by king James I. in 1606, which guaranteed to them the possession of South Virginia; also his patent to the Plymouth company, which guaranteed to them the possession of North Virginia, have been noticed in the first part of the work.

In the month of December, 1606, the London company sent out captain Christopher Newport, with a colony of 105 persons, to commence the settlement of Virginia. In April, 1607, he arrived in the Chesapeake bay, and sailed up a noble river, then called Powhatan; he landed in May, and commenced a settlement, which, in honor of his sovereign, he called James-Town.

Captain Newport brought over with him a form of government for the colony, which consisted of a council of seven, chosen and named by the London company, with a president, who was to be chosen by the council, when they should arrive in Virginia, who also should be one of their number, and have two votes in all questions before them. In June, captain Newport sailed for England.

Captain John Smith soon succeeded to the command of this colony, and became very active in their service.

The talents of captain Smith were well adapted to the command of such a colony, in such perilous times. He entered with spirit upon the arduous duties of his office, and put forth all his efforts to build up the settlements and secure the sinking colony.

Captain Smith was equally active in exploring the country, and in encouraging and bringing forward the colony. In one

of his efforts to explore the Chickahominy river, he was seized by a party of the warriors of the great Powhatan, and conducted in triumph, into the presence of the sachem, who received him with all the pomp, majesty and terror, which a savage could assume. He ordered his prisoner to be stretched on the ground, his head to be placed upon a large flat stone, and his brains to be knocked out with the war club. The eyes of the spectators viewed with impatience the executioner, as he raised the massy club, to gratify their thirst for blood. But lo! to their astonishment, Pocahontas, daughter of the sachem, and child of his delight, sprang through the crowd, flung herself upon the ground, and placed her head upon the head of captain Smith.

Struck with amazement, Powhatan raised her from the ground, dismissed her with kindness, and ordered captain Smith to be set at liberty. In a short time, he sent him back to Jamestown, under a faithful escort, loaded with presents for his family and friends.

Thus relieved from impending death, by the benevolence of a female savage, then only thirteen years of age, captain Smith returned to his little colony, which he found in the utmost possible distress and confusion. He once more restored union and effort to the colony; and his little deliverer, with her little female attendants, made him frequent visits, loaded with such presents as were very useful to the sick and infirm.

At this time, captain Newport arrived from England with supplies, which contributed to the present relief, as well as the future prosperity of the colony. Mr. Hunt, their clergyman, commenced a regular course of public worship, with the administration of the ordinances of the gospel; and harmony and order began to arise upon the solid basis of civil and religious liberty.

This prosperity was not of long continuance. In the following winter, their store-house caught fire and consumed, not only their stores, but extended to the town, and destroyed their dwellings. These calamities they bore with patience and fortitude, and put themselves upon an allowance of meal and water, through the winter.

In the spring, captain Nelson arrived from England, (by the way of the West-Indies, where he had wintered) with a supply of men and provisions for the colony. This arrival gave them new spirits and new energies; they united their labors through the summer, rebuilt the town, cultivated their fields,

and in autumn they were blest with a good supply for the winter.

But this prosperity was not permanent. Many of the company were bred in habits of indolence, and when they embarked for America, vainly expected to find gold without labor, and riches without industry ; and when they began to realize their mistake, they commenced a clamor against captain Smith, that not only embarrassed his government, but reached even to London.

At this time, sir Walter Raleigh was attainted of high treason, and his charter was forfeited.† Notwithstanding all that captain Smith had done for this colony, the London company petitioned the king, and obtained a new charter. They appointed sir Thomas West, (lord De La War, or Delaware) captain general, sir Thomas Gates, lieutenant general, and sir George Somers, admiral, &c.

Admiral Somers set sail from England in May, 1609, with a fleet of nine ships, and 500 people, to strengthen the colony at Jamestown ; but the admiral, with three noblemen, and fifty others, together with a ketch, were cast away upon Bermuda islands, where they wintered.

When the remainder of the fleet arrived in Virginia, they found the colony distracted by their vices, corruptions, and licentiousness.

In September, 1609, president Smith was so severely burnt, by an explosion of gunpowder, that he was constrained to abandon the colony, and return to England.

Jamestown could now boast of about 500 inhabitants, comfortably accommodated, in about sixty houses, well fortified, and defended by three ships, twenty-four pieces of cannon, and a good supply of muskets, ammunition, &c. with necessary tools for labor. They also had a good supply of hogs, sheep, goats, and fowls, together with nets and boats for fishing ; but president Smith was gone, and with him, all that was valuable to the colony.

Captain Piercy, who succeeded president Smith, was truly a man of worth ; but his feeble health unfitted him for those arduous duties, the factious state of the colony required.

The vices of the planters provoked hostilities with the natives, who destroyed their settlements, stole their tools, and drove off their stock ; all which reduced them to the extremes of distress.

† See introduction, for the year 1585

Such was the wretched situation of the colony when admiral Somers arrived, in the spring of 1610, that the 500 colonists were reduced to 60 ; and such were their sufferings and prospects, that they actually abandoned their village, embarked on board their fleet, and set sail for England.

At this eventful crisis, lord Delaware met them near the mouth of the bay, with a fleet and supplies from England, and by his influence, persuaded them to return, resume their dwellings, and submit to his government, June, 1610.

Lord Delaware brought out about 600 people, 200 hogs, 200 cattle, with a year's provisions for the colony, as well as a good supply of all necessary tools for husbandry. Order, tranquility, and plenty were again restored.

---

## CHAPTER II.

### HERE COMMENCES THE HISTORY OF VIRGINIA.

The prosperity of the colony revived under the administration of lord Delaware. He restored public worship, appointed all the necessary officers, established a due degree of subordination, and thus gave tone to his government, and industry, harmony and plenty to this late ruined colony.

In 1611, the health of lord Delaware began to decline, and he returned to England. The government devolved upon sir Thomas Dale.

Under the administration of governor Dale, the colony sunk into their former corruptions, and he was constrained to exercise the most rigid military government, to check their licentiousness, and save them from ruin ; this, added to their habits of vice, and indolence, checked their enterprise, and kept them down, for many years.

In 1613, Mr. Rolf, (then secretary of the colony) became attached to Pocahontas ; obtained her affections ; offered his hand, and with the consent of her father, and governor Dale, married her, April, 1614. Mr. Rolf, like a true and affectionate husband, sought to improve the mind of the young princess, both in useful knowledge, and religion ; and by the assistance of Mr. Whitaker. she soon acquired the English language, embraced the christian religion, and was baptised, by the name of Rebecca.

In 1616, Mr. Rolf, with his wife, visited England, where she was introduced to her majesty, and treated with great respect at court, and by the people of the first distinction in London. She died when about to return to America, and left one son, who was handsomely educated in England.

When he became a man, he removed to Virginia, where he lived in affluence and respectability, and died much lamented. Some of the most respectable families sprang from Mr. Thomas Rolf, son of the princess Pocahontas, the deliverer of captain Smith, who may well glory in the excellent virtues of such an ancestor.

About this time, governor Smith again visited the coast of America, in the character of an adventurer, and drew charts of the coast of North Virginia, to which he gave the name of New-England. This coast, with its settlements, has been fully noticed in the first part.

In 1616, sir Thomas Dale returned to England, and was succeeded by Mr. George Yeardley. The administration of governor Dale had been prosperous, and the colony flourished, and continued to flourish, through the administration of governor Yeardley.

In 1617, governor Argall succeeded to the chair, and governor Yeardley returned to England.

In two years, this despot subverted the prosperous administrations of a Delaware, and a Dale, and threw the colony back into the times of former distress, and ruined all the efforts which had been made by the London company, for ten or twelve years; a period, in which they had expended more than eighty thousand pounds sterling, and from the number of 1670 souls, that had been transported into the colony, more than 1200 had been lost by sickness, savage barbarities, or an oppressive and rapacious government.

Sunk again to the lowest state of distress, the people awaited, with anxious impatience, the return of lord Delaware, to bless the colony with his presence and government; but again their hopes were blasted; his lordship reached the mouth of Delaware bay, where he died, 1618; and thus gave name to a bay, that has ever continued.

A change in the London company, this year, removed governor Argall, and restored governor Yeardley to the government of Virginia. This change abolished the oppressive government of Argall, and restored the colony to the liberties of

free-born Englishmen, and thus laid the foundation of liberty, enterprise, and industry, in Virginia.

The London company gave orders, that governor Argall should be arrested and tried in the colony, for mal-administration ; but justice was robbed of her rights, and Argall escaped to England unpunished.

During all this time, the planters had endured all their distresses as single men, and had settled, or attempted to settle, only six or seven towns ; but this year, the London company sent out a new recruit, of about 1216 men, together with a colony of 140 young and virtuous women, and assigned them a settlement called Maidstown.

Woman pawned her jewels to furnish Columbus with money to discover America.—Woman saved Virginia, by rescuing captain Smith, at the hazard of her life, and by the powers of virtuous affection, gave to Virginia some of her best citizens ; and woman, by the settlement of Maidstown, gave to the colony new spirits, and new energies, and laid the permanent foundation of Virginia, 1619.†

The planters selected their wives from the new settlement of Maidstown, and new scenes, new amusements, as well as new habits of industry and enterprise, became general throughout the colony.

In June, 1621, governor Yeardley convened the first assembly, and as the elections were made from towns that held the rights and forms of boroughs, the representatives were therefore termed burgesses.

This assembly abolished martial law, and gave freedom, and the rights of civil law to Virginia.‡

This general assembly decreed, “ that the colony should hereafter be governed by two supreme councils ; the one called the council of state, and the other the general assembly ; to be convened annually by the governor, or oftener, as circumstances may require. The general assembly to consist of a council of state, and two burgesses from each town, hundred or plantation, and all decisions to be made by a majority of votes ; reserving to the governor, a casting vote. The powers of this assembly, to be strictly legislative ; and all laws enacted by them, to be in conformity to the laws of England. No laws to become binding, until ratified by the

† About this time, a Dutch vessel landed about twenty negroes, who were sold for slaves, which commenced African slavery in the south

‡ This was the first legislative assembly held in America,



company in England, and returned under their seal.—And no laws of the company in England, to be binding on the colony, until ratified by the colonial assembly.”

This year, king James ordered the bishops of England to make a general collection in all their several dioceses, to found a college in Virginia. The order was carried into effect, and £1500 sterling was raised, which, added to 10,000 acres of wild land, laid the foundation of the first college in Virginia.

About this time, a mortal sickness swept off above 300 of the planters, and king James ordered the London company to transport 100 convicts into the colony.

In 1622, private adventurers in England, fitted out twenty-one ships, with 1300 passengers, to Virginia, and sir Francis Wyat, was sent out as governor.

Those early attempts that had been made to introduce some form of religion in the colony, had long since been destroyed, through the licentiousness of the planters ; and the new addition of convicts, had increased the evil.

The London company at this time, made one effort, through the instrumentality of sir Francis, to give a christian form to the colony, and lay the foundations of such institutions, as might train up the rising generation to the knowledge of the one true God.

Powhatan was now dead, and his successor Opecancanoah, formed a general conspiracy among the savages, to exterminate the English.

On the 22d of May, the whole confederacy entered the English settlements at mid-day, under the mask of their usual friendship, and at a signal given, commenced an indiscriminate butchery ; and in less than one hour, about 300, of all ages, fell a sacrifice to their savage fury.

A Mr. Vace had warning from a friendly Indian, and gave such seasonable notice to Jamestown. that the people stood to their arms, and rallied from the neighboring villages, and thus saved that settlement ; but the savages drove off the cattle, burnt and destroyed their mills, iron works, and even the houses upon the plantations, and swept the country with a general pillage. Their new college was destroyed, and the superintendent, Mr. Thorpe, was killed.

Roused by a sense of their wrongs, the planters rallied to the combat, entered the enemy's country, laid waste their villages with fire and sword, and carried off their corn ; all

which proved very destructive to the Indians, the ensuing winter, 1623.

The settlement of this colony, down to the year 1621, had cost the company more than £150,000 sterling, besides the expense of private adventurers; and more than 4,000 lives had been lost.

In 1624, king James issued writs of quo warranto, against the London company, and dissolved their charter, and the government reverted to the crown.

In 1625, king Charles I. succeeded to the throne, upon the death of his father, James I. and immediately granted a new charter to the colony of Virginia; which charter, vested in the governor and council, unlimited powers.

The king next appointed sir John Harvey, their governor. This tyrant ruled with such despotic sway, that the people arrested him in his mad career, and sent him to England for trial, accompanied by two agents, as his accusers.

King Charles resented this indignity offered to his governor; dismissed the suit, and sent him back to his government, 1639.

The people became so indignant, under his second administration, and accused him so severely to the king, that he recalled him the same year, and sent out sir Wm. Berkeley, as his successor.

To add to the calamities of the administration of governor Harvey, the savages resented his encroachments upon their lands, commenced a second massacre upon the colony, and murdered more than five hundred people, in the settlements upon James river, York river, and others. This, added to the oppressions of Harvey, gave such a check to the colony, that many years could not fully recover.

Sir Wm. Berkeley entered upon his administration, by calling an assembly, upon the plan of the old charter. This caused the restoration of law, order, and civil rights, agreeable to the laws of England. These combined, restored the colony to her former situation in the days of lord Delaware.

These blessings would have given new enjoyments to the colony; but the murder of 500 people in cold blood, called for that justice, which could not be obtained of a savage, but by the point of the sword. To the sword they appealed; and although the appeal was just, yet a long and bloody war ensued, before the savages were humbled, and a firm and permanent peace restored.

During these changes, under the administration of governor Berkeley, the civil war in England, had subverted the monarchy, and raised Oliver Cromwell to the throne, as lord high protector, 1653.

Governor Berkeley refused to do homage to the protector; and Cromwell despatched a fleet to the coast of Virginia, under the command of captain Dennis, to reduce the colony to obedience. Governor Berkeley submitted to an honorable capitulation, which was expected to secure to the colony, all the rights and privileges of the old charter. But Cromwell rigidly enforced upon Virginia, the famous British *navigation act*, (which parliament had passed in 1651) which embarrassed her trade and kept her down.†

When governor Matthews, (the last of the governors appointed by Cromwell) had died, Virginia took advantage of the imbecile reign of Richard Cromwell, and proceeded to re-elect sir Wm. Berkeley as their governor, and published their declaration in favor of Charles II. Sir Wm. upon the strength of this, ventured to proclaim Charles II. as king of England, Scotland, France, Ireland and Virginia, several months before the restoration. By this act, Virginia hoped to recover her ancient charter privileges, which Cromwell had wantonly violated, and destroyed. She also anticipated the favor of the king, in consequence of their legislative resolve, of 1612, which declared "that as they were born under a monarchy, they would never degenerate from the condition of their births, by being subject to any other government."

Upon the accession of Charles II. 1660, Virginia presented to his majesty, a humble address, in which they spread their grievances before the throne, and prayed for a relief from their burdens, and a restoration of their ancient chartered rights.

Vain were their remonstrances, deaf was the king, and desperate was their cause.

Upon the back of all this, Virginia soon became entangled in a long and distressing Indian war, that raged down to the time of the famous war in New-England, called Philip's war. 1675; and the whole country was full of distress.

In the midst of this war, a faction sprang up, which threatened the subversion of the government.

† This act decreed "that the colonies should not import or export any foreign commodities, except in ships built and navigated by Englishmen."

A bold and aspiring adventurer, by the name of Bacon, who had been bred a lawyer in London, had emigrated to Virginia, like thousands of others, to seek his fortune ; he soon became a member of the council ; took advantage of his popular talents ; volunteered his services against the Indians, assembled a company, and demanded of the governor a commission. This was refused ; and the governor demanded, that Bacon should disband his men, and come down to Jamestown, on pain of being declared a rebel.

Bacon assured his men, that he would never lay down his arms, until he had revenged their cause, and punished the Indians ; but upon reflection, he selected forty men to accompany him to Jamestown, in obedience to the governor. Here a quarrel ensued with the governor, and he suspended Bacon from the council.

Bacon resented the indignity, made his escape, put himself again at the head of about 600 men, and marched down to Jamestown ; drew up his troops before the house of assembly, and demanded a general's commission, to go against the Indians. The commission was granted, and signed by the governor, (with reluctance) and general Bacon marched off in triumph.

The governor, by advice of the assembly, immediately issued a proclamation of rebellion, against Bacon, and ordered out the militia to arrest his progress. A civil war commenced ; general Bacon marched immediately to Jamestown, in quest of the governor, who fled at his approach, and crossed over to Accomack. Bacon immediately called a convention of his partizans ; issued a manifesto against the governor, and assumed the reigns of government.

In the mean time, the governor assembled a force, under the command of major Beverley, who crossed the bay, and commenced operations against Bacon. A severe skirmish ensued ; blood and slaughter marked the violence of the parties, until the death of Bacon checked this mad career of party, and closed this civil war. The insurgents immediately dispersed ; a general amnesty was granted, and peace was restored.

The blood spilt in this contest, bore no proportion to the other calamities that followed. Jamestown was laid in ashes ; the flocks of cattle were butchered for the use of the parties, or wantonly destroyed ; agriculture was neglected ; and to crown all, the savages renewed their depredations and mur-

ders, with such increased violence, that at the close of the war, the country was threatened with famine. Virginia groaned under the effects of these calamities for more than thirty years.

At the return of peace, a regiment of soldiers arrived from England, by the request of the governor, to maintain the order of the colony.

Governor Berkeley soon after abandoned Virginia, and returned to England, where he died.

In 1679, lord Culpepper was appointed to succeed governor Berkeley, and he set sail for Virginia, with a code of new laws for the government of his colony. Thus armed, with his code of new laws in one hand, and a regiment of British soldiers on the other, governor Culpepper offered pardon to the insurgents, provided the assembly would pass the new laws ; and threatened them with vengeance if they refused.

The assembly complied, and passed the laws, and thus reverted upon themselves a system of perpetual duties for the support of government. The governor next obtained, out of these duties, a fixed salary of £2,000 sterling, with an addition of £60 annually, for house rent ; together with a demand of twenty shillings perquisite, upon the clearance of every vessel of 100 tons, and thirty shillings upon the clearance of every vessel over 100 tons, for every voyage.—These were fixed laws ; but he oppressed the people by giving currency to a light coin, at the full value, and making it a tender of just debts. This the people abolished, by turning it upon the governor, in payment of duties.

Virginia continued to groan under these oppressions, through the reigns of Charles II. and James II. down to the accession of William and Mary, 1688.

Under this mild reign, the affairs of Virginia began to assume a more favorable aspect ; and from this time, she has been rising in the scale of importance, down to the present time.

In 1692, the charter of William and Mary college was granted ; and in 1693, it was liberally endowed and fixed by law at Williamsburg.

In 1694, the state-house at Jamestown was burnt, and the seat of government removed to Williamsburg, where a new capitol was built for their accommodation.

In 1712, a general field was opened for the diffusion of re

ligion ; the colony was divided into thirty nine parishes, and the support of the ministry provided for by law.

“ The Anglicans,” says Mr. Jefferson, “ had retained full possession of the country, about one century (down to 1712) ; other opinions began then to creep in, and the great care of the government to support their own church, having begotten an equal degree of indolence in the clergy, two thirds of the people had become dissenters, at the commencement of the revolution. The laws indeed, were severe upon them ; but the spirit of the one party had subsided into moderation, and of the other, had risen to a high degree of determination, that commanded respect.”

At this time a discovery was made of the country west of the Allegany mountains.

In 1732, the illustrious George Washington was born in the parish of Washington, county of Westmoreland.

From the time that he began to act on the theatre of his country, the general history of Virginia has been carried forward in the general history of her wars, in Part I. down to the peace of 1763.

Virginia adopted her constitution on the 5th of July, 1776 ;

In 1790 Virginia ceded to the United States the one half of the district of Columbia.

---

## CHAPTER III.

### NORTH AND SOUTH CAROLINA.

In the preceding chapters, and in the introduction, the discovery of Virginia, the origin of its name, and the rise and progress of the colony generally, down to the peace of 1763, have been considered.

The discoveries upon this coast, by Laudonniere ; the name he gave to the country, in honor of his master, Charles IX. king of France, by calling it Carolina, have all been noticed in the introduction.

Before we commence a detail of the adventures that awaited the first settlers of Carolina, we will notice an anecdote, related by doctor Williamson, their excellent historian, upon the first attempts to settle this coast.

Speaking of the adventures of sir Walter Raleigh, in the

year 1584, he says, "they landed at the mouth of an inlet, which they took for a river, and returning thanks to God, they took possession for queen Elizabeth. The land was sandy ; but every tree and shrub was loaded with grapes, and the low grounds were covered with cedar. They soon discovered that they were upon an island, about twenty miles long, which the Indians called Wockocken.

"On the third day of their arrival, three of the natives appeared, for the first time, on the beach, and received some presents.

"On the following day, forty or fifty Indians appeared, and approached their ships. They left their canoes at a small distance in the cove, and presented themselves on the beach. Granganimo, the sachem, was among these Indians ; his rank appeared by his deportment ; he took his seat upon a long mat, and four of his chief men seated themselves upon the other end of it ; the rest of the Indians stood at a respectful distance.

"The masters of the ships landed, with some of their people, in arms ; the prince made them signs to sit by him. He first touched his head and breast, and then touched theirs, to signify his desire of mutual confidence and friendship. At the same time, the sachem made a long speech which they wished, in vain, to understand.

"They gave him sundry presents, which he thankfully received ; and they gave presents to his officers, who attended him ; but the prince took the whole to himself.

"The next day a profitable trade was opened with the natives ; twenty skins, to the value of twenty crowns, were received for a tin dish, and other articles in proportion, &c.

"After a few days, Granganimo introduced his wife and children ; she was ornamented with strings of pearls, and wore a cloak and apron of skins, dressed in the fur.

"When the ships had been some time at their anchorage, one of the captains, with seven or eight of the adventurers, proceeded in a boat towards Roanoke island, where they arrived the next day.

"On the north end of the island, was a small town, consisting of eight or ten houses, built of cedar, and ornamented with pallisadoes, for defence against an enemy. Granganimo lived in that town ; he was not at home ; but the untaught civility of his wife, left the captain and his company nothing to desire. She ordered her people to carry them ashore on their backs ;

the boat was drawn up on to the beach, and their oars secured. She placed her guests by the fire to dry their clothes, for it was rainy ; some of her women washed their stockings, others their feet. Their clothes being dry, she conducted them into another apartment, and gave them a plentiful dinner, consisting of roasted venison, homony, fish, melons and sundry fruits ; they used earthen pots and wooden dishes. While the strangers were at dinner, two Indians entered the house with bows and arrows ; the white men looked at their arms ; the princess did not want any further remonstrance ; the Indians were turned out, and their bows broken. She entertained her guests to stay all night in the palace, but they launched their boat, and dropped a grapnel at some distance from the shore. She observed, with marks of grief, that she had not gained their confidence ; but she pressed them no further. Their supper was sent to their boat, and they were supplied with mats, as a defence from the rain. Thirty or forty men and women were ordered to watch near them all night, upon the beach."

The particulars of this visit have been detailed, because the conduct of that woman, is a correct portrait of the female character, and a specimen of that attention, which the stranger and afflicted may expect to receive from woman, in any part of the world.

These strangers took on board two natives, and carried them to England, where one of them learned the English language, and became a useful interpreter. The friendship of Mantineo (that was his name), continued to his death.

In 1685, a squadron of seven ships from England, under the command of capt. Ralph Lane, arrived, and one touched at Wockocken, and proceeded to explore the coast. These merciless adventurers, to revenge the loss of a silver cup, set fire to a village on the Neuse, and reduced it to ashes.

This wanton abuse of power, sowed the seeds of future judgments and calamities, which arose from savage revenge. Soon after this event, the fleet returned to England, laden with red cedar, sassafras and peltry. The colony continued at Roanoke island, under captain Lane, and were prosperous through the season.

In autumn and winter, gov. Lane explored the coast, and visited the Indian tribes extensively. All the Indians upon the eastern borders of Albemarle Sound, were called Weapomiocks : and Okisko was their chief.



A conspiracy commenced among these tribes, to draw off captain Lane from his settlement at Roanoke, and murder him, and all his people ; but this plan failed.

Wingina, the brother of Granganimo, commenced a new conspiracy. He invited to a grand festival, about 1500 warriors, who, at a given signal, were to set fire to the governor's house, and murder the governor, and commence, at the same time, a general butchery of the English, and burn their village. This plot was disclosed to the governor, by a generous captive, and he commenced an immediate attack upon Wingina and his warriors ; put them to the sword, and saved the colony.

At this eventful moment, sir Francis Drake arrived in the road, and offered them a supply of boats, stores, &c. and a vessel ; but all to no purpose, their spirits were low ; and they broke up the colony, and returned to England, June 19th, 1586.

I shall pass over the several attempts made by sir Walter Raleigh, to settle this coast, through sir Richard Grenville and governor White, by referring to the introduction, for their adventures ; and carry forward the colony, from the grant of Charles I.

Upon the accession of king Charles I. to the throne of his father, 1625, he granted to sir Robert Heath, (his favorite) his heirs and assigns, forever, all the coast lying between thirty and thirty-six degrees of north latitude, and extending west to the Pacific ocean ; also all the Bahama islands, not actually possessed by some christian prince.

This territory thus granted, was erected into the province of Carolina.

Upon the 23d of Charles I. sir Robert granted this province to lord Matrovers, afterwards earl of Arundel and Surry ; but the civil wars that distracted England, under that reign, prevented any settlements in Carolina, under this grant.

Upon the accession of Charles II. 1660, this patent was declared void, and Charles made a new grant of the same district, to Edward, earl of Clarendon ; George, duke of Albemarle ; William, earl of Craven ; John, Lord Berkeley, Anthony, Lord Ashley, sir George Carteret, sir John Calleton, and sir Wm. Berkeley ; conveying all the lands lying between the thirty-first and thirty-sixth degrees of north latitude, and the Virginia seas, and the Pacific ocean.—Bearing date March 24, 1663.

This charter was afterwards enlarged so as to include the twenty-ninth degree of north latitude, which included what is now Georgia, and part of Florida.

Under this charter, Carolina began, and continued to flourish among the colonies.

---

## CHAPTER IV.

### CAROLINA, CONTINUED.

This little colony struggled with the severest adversities possible, for more than sixty years, to obtain two solitary settlements ; the one by the quakers, upon the waters of Albemarle, and the other from Massachusetts, upon Charles river, called Old Town.

Sir William Berkeley, governor of Virginia, superintended these settlements ; formed counties for them, and regulated their affairs.

Pleased with the colony from New-England, at Old Town, the proprietors published a declaration, " That all actual settlers should receive gratuities in lands, directly according to the number of each family ; that they should be free from all customs, according to the charter ; that they should present thirteen persons to the proprietors, who should choose a governor and council of six, out of that number ; but that the choice should rest in the people, as soon as they became sufficiently numerous ; and that they should make laws, if they were not repugnant to the laws of England ; which laws should be in force, unless disapproved by the proprietors."

The object of the declaration, was to invite in settlers from New-England. This colony transported several Indian children into New-England, under a pretence of educating them, which roused the revenge of the savages, and they commenced general depredations upon the settlement ; killed and drove off their cattle ; and they abandoned the settlement, and returned to New-England.

In 1665, a colony from Barbadoes, came upon the coast ; resumed the settlement at Old Town, and commenced the province of Clarendon, upon the same constitution as that of Albemarle. Sir John Yeamens became their first governor.

This colony entered with spirit, upon the labors before

them, and greatly enlarged the land bounty, offered by the former colony, to induce settlers to come in.—They were also indulged with the special privilege of choosing their own governors, who continued in office three years. In 1666, this settlement amounted to about 800.

In 1667, the county of Albemarle convened the first assembly in Carolina, under governor Stevens.

By this assembly, it was enacted “that none should be sued in five years, for any cause of action arising out of the country; and that no person should accept a power of attorney, to receive debts contracted abroad.” It was also enacted, “that none might be hindered in so necessary a work for the preservation of mankind, any persons wishing to marry, by declaring their purposes before the governor and council, and their neighbors, should be considered as man and wife.”

A law was also passed, imposing a duty of thirty pounds of tobacco, upon every law suit, to defray the expenses of the government. These laws were approved by the proprietors.

The people had thus far lived without law, or law suits; they were free from debt, without taxes, and hardly knew the use of money.

This year, 1668, the proprietors enlarged their bounty lands, by what was then called the great deed or charter, and the county flourished.

In 1669, the proprietors fitted out three vessels, and planted a colony under gov. Sayle, at Port-Royal; and erected it into a county, which they called Carteret. Thus, three distinct governments were formed in Carolina.

The attention of the proprietors was now turned towards a permanent government. Their avowed object was “to make the government of Carolina agree, as nearly as possible, with the monarchy of which it was a part; and to avoid erecting a numerous democracy.” Lord Ashley, afterwards earl of Shaftsbury, at the request of the proprietors, obtained a singular constitution from the celebrated John Locke.†

† This constitution provided, that all the proprietors should compose a palatine court, who should elect a president for life. That an hereditary nobility, termed landgraves, caziques and barons, should be formed. That a parliament should be held once in two years, consisting of the proprietors, the nobility, and the representatives chosen by the people, who were all to meet in one apartment, and have an equal vote. All business, however, was to originate in the grand council of the two first orders.

Gov. Sayle attempted to put into operation, the non-descript constitution of Mr. Locke ; but found it impracticable. He soon fell a victim to the climate, and was succeeded by sir John Yeamans, governor of Cape Fear, whose authority was extended over this southern district.

Thus the colony of Carolina was formed into two government, August, 1671.

Charleston had been founded by governor Sayle. No general staple had, as yet, appeared in Carolina ; but the proprietors believed that silk, raisins, (from the multitude of grapes) capers, wax, almonds and olives, might be encouraged and cultivated here, as in Turkey in Europe, and they exempted all these articles from duties, for seven years.

In 1680, not one of these articles had been cultivated, and the king caused fifty families of Huguenots, who had fled into England, from the persecutions of France, to be transported into Carolina, gratis, for the express purpose of introducing the culture of the above articles. The plan wholly failed, and the culture was neglected.

In 1690, the settlement at cape Fear, was abandoned, and the settlers joined the southern colony.

About the year 1670, governor Stevens died at Albemarle, and gov. Cartwright succeeded for a short time ; but being called to England, Eastchurch was appointed governor, and entered upon the administration of the colony, then consisting of about 1400 taxable inhabitants ;† one third of whom were slaves. The produce of the colony was then estimated at 80 hogsheads of tobacco, annually. This was said to be of little value to the planters, for the New-England traders engrossed nearly the whole, with their whiskey, and other ardent spirits ; together with a few trifles, which they brought into the country.

Governor Eastchurch sailed for England, to promote the interest of the colony ; and in his absence, Miller, his secretary, acted as president, and was so severe in collecting the revenue, and in attempting to suppress the whiskey trade from New-England, as to raise a rebellion.

The people rose in arms, headed by one Culpepper, (a surveyor of South Carolina) who had fled from justice, and taken refuge at Albemarle.

† These were either white males of 16 years old, or slaves, either negroes, mulattoes or Indians, male or female, 12 years old.

Culpepper arrested Miller and six of his council, and put them into close confinement ; assumed the reins of government, seized on the treasury, (containing about three thousand pounds) and entered upon the collection of the customs.

The next year, governor Eastchurch arrived, and finding the colony in a state of rebellion, he applied to the governor of Virginia for a military force to restore order ; but before the troops arrived, he died.

The next year, Culpepper and Miller both went over to England, to make their defence to the lords proprietors, and seek redress. Culpepper was arrested, and tried for high treason ; but was acquitted upon the ground, that the affray could not amount to any thing more than a riot.

This subject now engrossed the attention of the lords proprietors, to determine, whether they should provide by force, to render the laws respectable, or receive the submission of the offenders, upon easy terms. They chose the latter ; the offenders were pardoned, and the government received a wound from which it never recovered, 1675.†

The lords proprietors next appointed one Sothel, to succeed governor Eastchurch. Sothel had recently become a proprietor, by buying the share of lord Clarendon, and of course received the appointment of governor, and set sail for Carolina. He was taken on his passage, and carried into Algiers ; and John Jenkins was appointed to fill the chair of Albemarle, *pro tem*.

During his administration, an act of general amnesty was passed in favor of the late rioters, saving the indemnity to the crown, for duties.

Thus relieved from the arm of the law, the rioters commenced a general persecution against their opponents, with such bitterness, that many fled into Virginia, for safety and protection.

In the midst of this persecution, governor Sothel arrived, with instructions from the lords proprietors, to redress all grievances, and by a firm, yet mild and equitable government, restore order, peace, and concord in the colony.

What is the force of council to a mad-man, or the power of wisdom to an idiot, or the influence of justice and moderation, upon the sordid and avaricious ?

Sothel entered upon his administration, as an adept in all

† This year commenced Philip's war in New-England.

those arts, by which man oppresses his fellow man. Justice and injustice, innocence and guilt, were with him synonymous terms; and money was the only make-weight in his scale. Well might it be said of him, "*When the wicked bear rule, the people mourn.*"

The people did mourn; but not in silence and despair. They siezed the offender, and were about to send him off to England for trial; but he plead for mercy, and prayed to be tried by the colonial assembly; they granted his prayer. The assembly tried him, and sentenced him to depart the colony in twelve months; and he complied with their decree.

Sothel retired into the southern colony, where, like Culpepper, he put himself at the head of a faction, who were opposing the governor, and by his popular zeal, obtained the reins of government; and the people of the south, like those of the north, were brought to feel the oppression of his ruthless power.

Doomed to perpetual civil war, Carolina saw no end to her troubles. Torn with internal dissensions, which arose from the corruptions of the people, and the corrupt administration of her government, she hoped to remove the latter, by returning to the *charter*; but in making this change, new troubles arose.

The first sketch of the constitution of Mr. Locke, had been sent over in a rough, unfinished state, and was at once received and put into operation, in 1669; but the true constitutions, as they were designed by the lords proprietors, to become the basis of the government, were not received until March, 1670. The first being then in operation, and most favorable to the people, was received and supported by them, and the latter were rejected. This excited party strife again for a time; but the people finally united in rejecting the constitutions, and a state of anarchy ensued, that distracted the colony, and produced all those excesses that arise out of idleness and dissipation; and many of the best members of society fled the colony.

This state of anarchy reigned triumphant in both colonies, for more than twenty years. Sometimes a civil war, and sometimes a religious persecution prevailed; and all was confusion, until governor Archdale was sent out as an instrument of peace for Carolina.

In 1695, governor Archdale arrived in South Carolina, and entered upon the arduous duties of his office. He first re-

moved the high toned partizans from the council, and appointed moderate men in their places. He next began to reform the factions of the colony at large, by administering justice, with a liberal hand ; and when the heat of party began sufficiently to abate, he called an assembly of the people. This step restored order.

---

## CHAPTER V.

### CAROLINA, CONTINUED.

All the wisdom that Wm. Penn displayed, in quieting the feuds of his colony, was found in governor Archdale, in quelling the feuds of Carolina ; both were quakers, and in their governments, exhibited the true character of their religion.

Governor Archdale, although a quaker, promoted a military law, for the defence of the colony, which he soon found to be very useful, in the support of their just rights.

The Yamusee tribe of Indians, who lived near to Charleston, had put themselves under the protection of the English. These Indians, in their wars with the Spanish Indians, had taken some prisoners, which they offered for sale, according to custom. Governor Archdale sent for the chief of that tribe, and gave him a letter to the Spanish governor, at St. Augustine, with orders to restore the prisoners, and deliver the letter, which laid the foundation of mutual harmony between the parties, and raised the reputation of the governor.

The distance of the capitals of North and South Carolina, was at this time, about 300 miles. The tribes of Indians about Pamlico, Neuse and Trent rivers, were numerous ; and the cape Fear Indians were robbers and plunderers, from a custom they had ever practised, of pillaging all such vessels as were at any time cast away, or driven ashore upon the cape, as well as murdering the people.

A war commenced between the Indians of the two colonies ; and the Indians of the south took several prisoners of the cape Fear Indians, and sold them for slaves. The fame of governor Archdale had reached their ears, and they applied to him in their distress, and sought relief. The governor listened to their complaints, and promised relief, provided they would never more plunder, and murder the unfortunate, who should

be cast away upon cape Fear. They readily complied, then prisoners were restored, and they manifested their sincerity, by affording relief to about fifty unfortunate New-England adventurers, who were cast away upon cape Fear, soon after, on their way to Charleston.

The fame of governor Archdale soon reached the northern colony, and prepared the way for him to take the chair there, and enter upon the Herculean task, of reforming the abuses, and corruptions of another profligate, and factious government.

The reformed example of the south, had shone so conspicuously, that it greatly facilitated the reformation of the north; and the quakers in the north, being numerous, rendered the administration of governor Archdale the more easy and pleasant, he being one of their sect. He took up his abode with them, purchased an estate at Albemarle, married his daughter at Pasquetank, and left a progeny behind him, that are respectable to this day.

Sir Nathaniel Johnson succeeded to the chair in South Carolina, upon the departure of governor Archdale. The old religious feuds sprang up under his mild administration, and distracted the colony. In 1699, Thomas Harvey succeeded governor Johnson; and in 1703, Robert Daniel became president of the council, and Thomas Carey succeeded to the chair. The high church party had gained an ascendancy, and oppressed the dissenters; they remonstrated to the house of lords, who laid their remonstrance before queen Ann. The queen ordered their oppressive laws to be repealed; but left the colony to settle their own feuds.

During this period of ten or twelve years, both colonies flourished, and settlements were made upon the Neuse and Taw rivers. The county of Bath was formed in the south, and general peace and good order had succeeded the times of anarchy, and misrule.

In 1690, a mortal sickness raged among the Indians upon Pamlico river, and nearly swept off that tribe; and the Carolina Indians were severely humbled, by another powerful tribe, and the settlers entered without molestation, upon those vacated lands, 1698.

In the forepart of the 18th century, the settlement thus extended, changed the name of "Albemarle county in Carolina," to that of the "colony of North Carolina," and the governor took his title accordingly.

Such was the scarcity of money in those days, that the sev-



eral articles of traffic were substituted in the place of money, and their prices fixed by law. Even judgments of courts were entered upon the dockets as payable in particular articles therein specified.†

With the change of the constitution, the name of the supreme court was changed, from that of parliament, to that of general assembly. This change of name could be remembered; but the laws they enacted could hardly be expected to be remembered, for they were not yet printed.

At the rising of each assembly, the laws then enacted, were read aloud in the audience of the people, and no man was allowed to plead ignorance of the law. At one session of a biennial assembly, more than fifty laws were passed, and published to the people at one reading.

At this time, printing presses were prohibited, both in Virginia and Carolina. Even sir Wm. Berkeley had expressed his emotions of gratitude to heaven, “*that there was not a printing press in all the southern provinces.*”

About the first of the 18th century, a ship from Madagascar, bound to London touched at the bar, on her passage; and the captain gave the governor a small quantity of rice, and from *this present*, rice became one of the staples of Carolina.

In the reign of queen Anna, and about the same time the Swedes, who had hitherto furnished tar for the English navy, became extravagant in their demands. The queen offered a bounty upon tar, which encouraged the manufacture of that article in Carolina, and soon rendered it another staple in that colony, 1704.

Hitherto all religions had prevailed in Carolina, and but little regard had been paid to any, unless by the way of party, as has been noticed. “In the year 1702,” says doctor Williamson, “the assembly passed an act, by which thirty pounds currency, were raised in each precinct, towards the support of a minister. In the following year, the first episcopal minister arrived from England; he was principally supported by lord Weymouth.

“In the year 1705, the first church was built in Chowan precinct, and a larger church was built, the year following, at Perquimons. Two episcopal ministers arrived about this time.

† Deer-skins, hides, tallow and small furs, were the articles in general use, at country prices.

“The province was afterwards divided by law, into parishes ; each precinct, in general, forming one parish. The people on the Neuse and all the southern settlers, were included in Craven parish.

“Magistrates were authorised by law, to join parties in marriage, provided there was not a minister in the parish, otherwise they were subject to a fine of five pounds for performing the service. Protestant dissenters were allowed to worship in public, by another act, subject to the same rules, regulations and restrictions, as were contained in the several acts of parliament in England. Quakers were also permitted by law to affirm, instead of swearing ; but they could not by virtue of such affirmation, give evidence in any criminal case, or serve on a jury, or hold any office of profit or trust in the land. These were the first departures in the northern government, from the original engagement of the proprietors, on the subject of religion ; but the spirit of intolerance grew stronger, as the province increased in population ; for the constant influence of patronage, and numerous emigration from Virginia, had given the episcopalians a majority in the legislature.†”

Thomas Carey, lieutenant-governor of the northern colony, had been collector of the proprietary quit-rents ; but for mal-administration, they removed him from his offices, and directed the council to administer the government. A meeting of the deputies was held, and they elected Mr. Glover president. Carey continued his seat at the council board, with apparent satisfaction, until he had by his intrigues formed a party, which he believed to be sufficiently strong to seize on the government. He made the attempt with an armed force, and failed. At the same time a commission arrived from the lords proprietors, to Edward Hyde, as lieut. governor.

Governor Hyde promised to redress all the grievances of which Carey complained ; but this was not the object. Carey had been deposed, and now taken arms to recover the government, and was resolved to persevere. Governor Spotswood, of Virginia, attempted to interfere, by offering his mediation, but all in vain. Carey looked to the government, and was resolved to recover it.

Carey commenced an attack upon Edenton, but failed, and

† I have given this extract from the historian of Carolina, to show their religious character.

was repulsed with loss. He made several attempts to augment his forces ; but the people were not ripe for such an insurrection.

Governor Hyde applied to governor Spotswood, for aid, who sent him a small armed force, and Carey's mob were soon dispersed. He fled into Virginia, where the governor seized him, and sent him prisoner to England.

Governor Hyde, agreeable to his instructions, issued his proclamation, offering pardon to all the insurgents, excepting Thomas Carey, John Potter and three others. Tranquility was again restored.

Notwithstanding the black catalogue of events that marked the early settlements of Carolina, it stands recorded by their faithful historian, doctor Williamson, " that in 1708, only two persons had been executed for capital offences ; the one a Turk, and the other an old woman, suspected of witchcraft."

In 1703, Albamarle sound was frozen over.

Thus situated, the colony flourished, and the population progressed, until the several precincts in the original counties of Albemarle and Bath, became so extensive, that the whole were called counties, about the year 1738.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

### CAROLINA CONTINUED.

The last chapter was closed with the suppression of Carey's rebellion. The history of the Huguenot and Palatine colonies, now claims attention.

In 1690, a colony of French Huguenots came into Virginia, from England, under the patronage of king William, and settled at the Mamakin Town, upon James river. Displeased with their situation, they removed into Carolina, and settled upon the river Trent, under the pastoral care of their beloved Ribourg. This colony was a valuable acquisition to Carolina, on account of their pious, industrious and frugal habits ; and they flourished under these virtues, and became useful and valuable citizens.

A colony of German protestants, from Heidleburg, upon the Rhine, fled also from the persecutions of their lordly, despotic rulers, and took refuge in England : where they

were cordially received, and supported at the expense of the government.† At their request 100 families were transported to Carolina, through the agency of Christopher Graffenried, and Lewis Mitchell, who had been in America, exploring the country of Virginia and Carolina, to prepare the way for a colony.

These speculators entered into a contract with the proprietors of Carolina, upon the following conditions, viz. That 10,000 acres of land should be surveyed to them, lying between the Neuse and Cape Fear rivers, at the ratio of twenty shillings per hundred acres, and six pence the yearly quit-rent. Also another tract, in reserve, of 100,000 acres, for twelve years. And whoever should pay the usual price for 5,000 acres, should possess a title, which fell to Graffenried.

Queen Ann had appointed commissioners to make provision, and furnish support for this colony of Palatines, whilst they yet remained in England; and these commissioners entered into a contract with Graffenried and Mitchell, upon the following terms, viz. "That they, Graffenried and Mitchell, would transport to Carolina, 650 men, women and children, of these Palatines, (100 families) and that they would convey to each family, 250 acres of land, surveyed into lots of that size, free of rent for five years, and then at an annual rent of two pence per acre, currency, per annum, for ever. That they would supply each family with provisions for one year, for which they were to pay a reasonable consideration, at the end of the following year. They also agreed to furnish each family with the necessary implements of husbandry, free of expense; as well as tools to erect houses, &c.; also cows, hogs and sheep, to a certain number, within four months after their arrival in Carolina; to be paid for in seven years; and half of the remaining increase to be returned as a consideration of interest."

The commissioners stipulated to pay five pounds per head for their transportation, and at the same time, gave each one, either old or young, twenty shillings from the charitable funds, collected for their support. The Palatines delivered this money to Graffenried and Mitchell, in trust, to be paid on

† The religious persecutions in France and Germany, were then in their extremes. Queen Ann at this time, had invited these fugitives into England, by her proclamation of 1703.

In December, 1709, the colony arrived at the confluence of the rivers Neuse and Trent, where they erected huts to shelter them, until they could enter upon their lands. This place of their first residence, they called New-Bern, in honor of the native place of Graffenried, in Switzerland.

Graffenried, who had gained his title by his purchase, and now become baron de Graffenried, was content to mortgage his lands to Thomas Pollock, for £800 sterling; deliver over his palatine colony, and return to Switzerland.

Thus abandoned by their chief, they were constrained to take up such lands as they could procure; and by their industrious and frugal habits, they acquired a subsistence.— They soon after petitioned king George I. and he granted them 10,000 acres of land, rent free, for ten years, as a recompense for their losses.

The first settlers of America, not only speculated upon each other, but they too often speculated upon the Indians, and purchased their land for trifles, as light as air; entered into unjust and forcible possession, or what is worse than both, corrupted them by rum, and thus obtained their lands.— Through the medium of all these evils, the Indians were often provoked to revenge their wrongs, which produced war, and sealed the other evils with blood. Hitherto the prudence of the first settlers of Carolina, had so far shunned these evils, as to escape war; but their population had increased so rapidly, their encroachments become so frequent, and the use of rum so common, that all those numerous tribes, who dwelt upon the great rivers near the sea-coast, were nearly all extinct. At this time, one Lawson, a surveyor, (who from the nature of his office was generally known among the Indians, and who had lately marked off a survey, that encroached upon their lands) attempted to explore the lands upon the river Neuse, accompanied by the baron de Graffenried, for whom he had recently surveyed the 10,000 acres, that had given the Indians an alarm. When he had ascended the river to the first night's lodging, they found a reception unusually cool, and their suspicions of danger led them to retire to their boat; but the Indians detained them as prisoners, and the next day they held a solemn trial upon them, and condemned and executed Lawson; but the baron, upon a plea of being a foreigner, and not English, they acquitted, and suffered to return; but not until they had attempted to execute their cruel design, which was to murder all the English to the south of

Albemarle sound. Accordingly upon the 22d of September, 1711, the Indians divided themselves into small companies of six or seven each, and entered the villages, put whole families to indiscriminate death, with all their wonted savage cruelty, to the number of 130 ; young men and maidens, old men and babes, were all devoted to indiscriminate butchery by the tomahawk. This instrument they had chosen in preference to their guns, to avoid suspicion ; but all could not be massacred at once ; and the remnant seized their guns, and made their defence, until they were relieved by their friends.

South Carolina sent colonel Barnwell, with a small body of white men, and a large body of friendly Indians, to their relief ; they also made them a grant of about £4,000 in money.

The friendly Indians were Creeks, Cherokees, and Catawbas. With this force, colonel Barnwell entered the northern province, and laid waste the settlements of the Corees, Bear River, Neuse, and Mattamuskeet Indians, who had all been confederate against Neuse and Pamlico settlements ; killed and destroyed about fifty, and carried off about 200 women and children, as prisoners.

The Tuscaroras, a tribe who dwelt more remote from the English settlements, were both numerous and warlike.—These also, had been engaged in the conspiracy against the English ; and to secure themselves from the vengeance of colonel Barnwell, had taken shelter in an Indian castle, to the number of about 300 warriors.

Colonel Barnwell, with two field pieces, approached the fort regularly, with Mitchell the speculator, for his engineer, and might have destroyed this nest of murderers, at a blow ; but he made peace, and suffered them to escape. As soon as Barnwell had withdrawn his troops, these Indians returned to their accustomed ravages. The northern colony again applied to the southern for aid, and they sent out colonel Moor, with about forty white men, and 800 Ashley Indians, who arrived in the northern colony, in December.

Virginia sent out some troops, and about £1100 in money, to relieve the sufferings of Carolina, and clothe her troops ; but the troops were never raised, and the county of Bath was left to suffer. More than forty settlers were either killed, or carried off, during the winter, and the settlements thoroughly ravaged.

When colonel Moor arrived at Albemarle, he was constrained to halt several weeks, for the want of provisions.

On the first of January, he began his march in pursuit of the enemy. On the 4th of February, he reached the Taw river, where he was detained by a deep snow, and the Tuscaroras dreading the Ashley Indians, had secured themselves in their forts, about fifty miles up the Catechony.

Knowing that colonel Moor had marched against them with cannon, they secured their forts by a deep ditch, and pallisadoes; and in the centre they sunk large pits, and threw up the earth on all sides, to shield them from the shot of the cannon. Thus fortified, the Indians awaited their pursuers.

Colonel Moor approached their fort regularly, knowing the enemy to be in great force, and well supplied with muskets. He first cut off their communication with the water, and next carried forward his regular approaches, until he entered the fort with the point of the bayonet, and made the whole garrison prisoners, to the number of 800 warriors. These prisoners were delivered to the Ashley Indians, as a reward for their services, who carried them into South Carolina, and sold them for slaves.

Colonel Moor lost in this memorable seige, about fifty white men, killed and wounded, and about eighty or ninety friendly Indians. The enemy abandoned their other forts, and fled into the wilderness. The eastern Tuscaroras sued for peace, which was granted upon the following terms, viz.

1st. The Tusks shall deliver twenty Indians, who shall be named, who were the chief contrivers of the massacre, and who took Lawson and Graffenried.

2d. They shall restore all their prisoners; also the horses and cattle, arms and goods, which they have taken from the inhabitants.

3d. They shall pursue the Choleenec, and Mattamuskeet Indians, as enemies.

4th. They shall deliver two hostages for each of their towns.

Thus ended the most memorable Indian war recorded in the annals of Carolina.

The remaining Tuscaroras fled their country, and took refuge among the Iroquois, or Five Nations—1712.

King Blount, who dwelt upon the east side of Taw river, put himself at the head of his warriors, and in the service of the English, became very successful, in killing, capturing, and destroying the remaining Corees and Mattamuskeets, who were mostly taken and sold as slaves.

The remnant of these tribes sued for peace, which was granted upon condition, that they should dwell at Mattamuskeet, under the care of an inspector. Thus closed this ever memorable war, February, 1715.

Colonel Moor returned in triumph to South Carolina, where his services were soon required, to quell an insurrection among the savages of the south. This he soon effected, and peace was restored.

To defray the expenses of these wars, South Carolina was constrained to issue eight thousand pounds in bills of credit ; and to support their value, they were made a lawful tender, in payment of just debts. This, by its depreciation, soon became an evil, worse than an Indian war.

In 1676, Carolina consisted of fourteen hundred taxable inhabitants ; and in 1717, it did not exceed two thousand, allowing one third for slaves. Then the fencibles of the colony did not exceed thirteen hundred. This fact alone, is a sufficient comment upon the genius of their government, as well as upon its administration.

Such were the emigrations, during the administrations of Sothel, Culpepper, and Car, that the governor of Virginia was constrained to issue a proclamation, ordering, “ that all fugitives from Carolina, without a pass, should be arrested and sent back.”

Their historian, doctor Williamson, thus remarks :—“ The temperature of the climate in Carolina, was so inviting, the soil so fertile, and the means of living so easy, that the people must have been very numerous, if the government had been administered with any degree of wisdom.

“ The farmer was not constrained to make provision for his cattle in winter, for they found a sufficient supply in the woods, and flocks of wild cattle became the subjects of profitable game to the hunter.”

---

## CHAPTER VII.

### CAROLINA, CONTINUED.

President Pollock presided over the northern colony two years, and was succeeded by governor Eden, who arrived from England, in May, 1714.



That buccaniering spirit which had raged with so much success, upon the coast of Spanish America, in the 17th century, had now extended to the coast of North America, and was patronised by certain characters, high in office, in many of the colonies.

Governor Eden had not been long in office, before the same suspicion fell upon him. He was accused of holding piratical intercourse with the noted pirate Theach, (commonly called Black Beard) through the agency of the secretary of the province, and collector of the customs, Tobias Knight.

Although Theach was afterwards taken with his crew, and condemned and executed in Virginia; and although upon his trial, strong circumstantial evidence appeared against Knight; yet no facts were proved against him or the governor, and they both escaped without further inquiry.

In March, 1722, governor Eden died, and Thomas Pollock was again chosen president. He died soon after, and was succeeded by William Reed, who presided until governor Barrington arrived, the ensuing summer.

In 1715, the Yammassee Indians conspired against the southern colony; ravaged the country, and threatened Charleston; but governor Craven rallied a force of about 1200 men, and fell upon the savages with such success, that they were routed, after a severe action; driven beyond the river Savannah, and dispersed. This war was short, but severe; the English lost more than 400 men, but they expelled the Yammassees, who took refuge among the Spaniards in Florida.

This year about forty buccaniers were taken and executed at Charleston. This, with the late executions in Virginia, gave a severe check to piracy, in those seas.

In 1717, a savage conspiracy broke out in the county of Bath; but the vigilance and activity of the English, soon brought the Indians to terms.

In 1719, the people of South Carolina, became impatient of the proprietary government; entered into a solemn league and covenant to support each other in opposing it, and in asserting their own just rights and privileges.

They next met in general assembly, and requested governor Johnston to accept an appointment under the crown; but he refused; and they proceeded to elect colonel James Moor, and proclaimed him governor. The king in coun-

cil, approved the choice ; yet they sent out Francis Nicholson, as provisional governor, and he was well received.

In 1725, the southern colony, provoked by the savage depredations of the Yammasees, from Florida, sent colonel Palmer, with about 400 men, whites and Indians, to check their ravages. He marched to St. Augustine, chastised that nest of marauders ; burnt all the settlements ; destroyed their provisions ; drove off their cattle ; killed, took, and dispersed the savages, and laid the foundation for a lasting peace.

In 1728, the boundary line was amicably settled between Carolina and Virginia, and a bone of long contention was thus removed.

In 1729, the proprietors of Carolina sold their claims to the agents of the crown, for £17,500 sterling, and surrendered all their rights ;† and the crown appointed separate governors for each colony.

King George II. re-appointed governor Barrington, to the chair of North Carolina ; and he entered upon his administration, in February, 1731. In 1734, he abandoned a stormy, vexatious administration, and returned to England, where he was robbed and murdered, soon after ; and governor Johnston succeeded to the chair.

Governor Johnston turned the attention of the first assembly, to the education of the youth, and the support of the gospel. The assembly complied with the recommendation ; but it was for the support of a particular church, which greatly excited the public mind. They also granted money to endow a seminary, without providing for the support of common schools, and the object failed.

The depreciation of their paper money, now became alarming, and they attempted to remedy the evil, by granting new emissions. This increased the calamity, by increasing the depreciation. In 1739, they were paying off their just debts in paper money, at the depreciated value of seven for one.

Thus says doctor Williamson : “ There were men banished from Carolina, for stealing a hog, whilst those who banished them, would contend for paying a debt of seven pounds, with the value of twenty shillings.”

In 1738, the Spaniards instigated an alarming insurrection

† Excepting one-eighth, belonging to lord Carteret, which he retained upon the northern border, and adjoined the Virginia line.

among the negroes in Carolina ; but the whites soon suppressed this, by the aid of their muskets and rum ; and the blacks were again reduced to obedience.

This year the precincts were converted into counties, and the marshals were called sheriffs.

In 1743, commissioners were appointed, between lord Carteret and the governor, to set off his lordship's one-eighth, and they ran out the line, as far as Pamlico river. In 1746, they continued the line about 100 miles, and stopped ; but with orders to finish it.

The next object that interested the attention of the assembly, was a division line between North and South Carolina : hitherto this had only been nominal. The two colonies appointed commissioners for the purpose, who met and commenced their labors, in 1737. They ran out the line until they reached the Pedee, and there stopped. As late as 1771, this line was not completed.

In 1740, things had generally become quiet, and their paper money was fast rising in its value, when an expedition was projected against Carthagea, (as has been noticed under New-England) and North Carolina furnished 400 men, to embark on this foreign adventure. A tax of three shillings on the poll was levied, to defray the expenses of this expedition, which called in the principal part of their paper money.

In 1744, Carolina began to feel the effects of the Spanish war. At the mouth of Clarendon river, stood fort Johnston, and three other forts ; yet a Spanish privateer landed a party at Brunswick, who began to plunder the town. Alarmed for their safety, they rallied a force, and commenced so brisk an attack upon the privateer, that she was blown up and destroyed, and the town relieved.

---

## CHAPTER VIII.

### CAROLINA, CONTINUED.

In the reign of king James I. the earls of Tyrone and Tyrconnell, put themselves at the head of a Catholic insurrection in Ireland, which proved to be a very serious rebellion against the English government, but being subdued, they fled

and left their vast estates, upon a process of outlawry, to escheat to the crown.

King James ordered these estates to be surveyed into small tracts, and offered to settlers, who would commence their settlements within four years. The terms were liberal, and a preference was given to the protestants, in the west of Scotland.

These people readily accepted the terms, and emigrated from Scotland, to avoid that prelacy, which had been imposed on them in 1637 and 1661. The presbyterian, or the religion of the kirk of Scotland, was the religion of their hearts, and they fled to Ireland to enjoy it.

This colony of Scotch flourished greatly in Ireland, and when augmented with the remains of Cromwell's army, they had become the principal, or most numerous inhabitants, in the six northern counties of Ireland, at the close of the seventeenth century; and have ever continued firm supporters of a protestant succession in England, and faithful friends of the dynasty of Hanover. The Irish catholics felt indignant at this change and persecuted them to such a degree, that they resolved to emigrate in a body, and seek a retreat in the wilds of America. They accordingly embarked from Ireland, with their families and effects, and landed in Pennsylvania.—From thence they continued southerly, until they reached Carolina, where they settled, and became both numerous and respectable.

About the year 1753, six young men from Pennsylvania, of the Moravian fraternity, removed into the interior of North Carolina, and obtained a survey of 10,000 acres of land, for the accommodation of a Moravian colony, then in England, who had been driven by a religious persecution, from the land of their fathers, and now looked for a quiet retreat in the wilds of America.

In the same year, twelve young men from Pennsylvania, commenced a settlement upon the same tract; and the next year, they were joined by several others. An Indian war soon commenced, that checked their progress, and they secured their settlements with pallisadoes, after the manner of an Indian castle; for the Moravians, like the quakers, never bear arms. In this state of their settlement, they were incorporated, and their village was called Bethabara.

In 1759, they commenced the settlement of Bethany, dis-

tant about three miles ; and in 1763, they were able to erect a church, and support a preacher.

The Moravian colony arrived from England, soon after, and commenced the village of Salem, as a manufacturing establishment. These people had held all their property in common until the artists removed from Bethabara to Salem ; then the joint partnership ceased.

Such was the prosperity of this settlement, that a colony from New-England joined them, and erected a church, and school-house upon one corner of the Moravian purchase.

A colony also from Maryland, settled upon the purchase, and erected a church and school-house, upon another part of the tract. These three colonies lived, and continue to live in the greatest harmony, and enjoy the pleasures of social intercourse, in peace, happiness, and prosperity.

In the year 1747, a colony from the Highlands of Scotland, under their laird or chief, Neal McNeal, embarked for America, and landed at New York. In 1749, they proceeded southerly until they reached Carolina, where they made a purchase, and commenced a settlement, near to Fayetteville, (then called cross roads.) This colony consisted of about one hundred families, who finally settled in the counties of Cumberland, Anson, and Bladen.

In 1754, another Highland colony arrived in Carolina ; and for several years successively, the Highland Scotch continued to emigrate to Carolina. These hardy, industrious adventurers, were mostly from Argyleshire.

Thus the persecutions of Europe, continued to people America, from various parts of the different kingdoms ; and thus the religion of the reformation was transplanted into the remote regions of the west.

Governor Johnston died in 1752, and was succeeded by governor Dobbs ; but Nathaniel Rice, and Matthew Rowan, presided in succession, until governor Dobbs arrived, in 1754.

Under this administration, the assembly granted thirteen thousand pounds, for the general support of religion, and six thousand pounds, to endow a public school ; but the last was never applied.

Governor Dobbs entered upon his administration, at the commencement of the old French war, in America. This war, with all its operations and bearings on the colonies south

of the Hudson river, has been noticed in the history of New England, down to the peace of Paris, 1763.

Under this administration, several controversies sprang up between the governor and house of assembly, which continued to rage, as we have seen in New England, until they obtained the removal of the governor, in 1764; and the king appointed gov. Tryon, as his successor.

The remaining history of Carolina, will be carried forward collectively, under the national history.

---

## CHAPTER IX.

### NEW-YORK—ITS DISCOVERY. RISE AND PROGRESS OF THE COLONY.

In 1608, captain Henry Hudson, under a commission from king James I. discovered Long Island, and the river in the colony of New-York, that bears his name, and returned to England.

In 1610, captain Hudson, (for some reason not satisfactorily explained) sailed from Holland, in the service of the Dutch, and again visited his former discovery; and in the year 1614, the states-general granted a patent to several merchants, for an exclusive trade upon Hudson's river. They accordingly built fort Amsterdam, at Manhattan, (now New York island) and another called fort Orange, (now Albany) for the protection of their trade.

The same year, gov. Dale of South Virginia, sent captain Argall to dispossess the French at Port Royal, in Nova-Scotia. Having executed his commission, he visited the Dutch settlement at Manhattan, and took possession, in the name of the king of England.

In 1621, the states-general, regardless of the visit from captain Argall, granted this district of country, by letters patent, to the Dutch West India company, and called it New Netherlands.

In 1623, the Dutch proceeded to extend their trade to Connecticut river, where they built a trading house, with a small fort, at the mouth of the little river, where Hartford now stands, and called it the Hirse of Good Hope.

In 1629, Wouter Van Twiller arrived from Holland, with

a commission of governor of New Netherlands ; took possession of fort Amsterdam, at Manhattan, and entered upon the government of the colony.

Governor Van Twiller published his commission in the following style :

“ We, director and council, residing in New Netherlands, on the island of Manhattan, under the government of their high mightinesses, the lords, the states-general of the United Netherlands, and the privileged West India company,” &c.

The Dutch claimed not only Connecticut river, and the lands lying west of it, but also Delaware, or South river, and the adjoining lands, as far south as Delaware bay.† They claimed also to the north, as far as the river St. Lawrence, and called the country north-west of Albany, Terra Incognita. In 1638, Wm. Kieft succeeded gov. Van Twiller, and entered upon the controversy about lines and boundaries.

In 1640, the English attempted to settle a part of Long-Island ; but the Dutch, under the command of Jan Jansen Alpendam, dispossessed them, and held the jurisdiction.

In 1643, commenced the New England league, and Connecticut and New Haven attempted to arm the league against the Dutch ; not only to punish them for furnishing the Indians with arms, but to drive them from their borders. Massachusetts declined, and it failed.

In 1647, Peter Stuyvesant succeeded governor Kieft, in the government. Claims upon New Netherlands multiplied upon all sides, during this administration. New England on the east, Maryland on the west, the duchess dowager of Sterling, claimed Long Island, and the Swedes claimed and encroached upon the Delaware.

About this time, a Swedish vessel entered the Raritan river, and the Dutch governor seized her, which opened a controversy ; the Swedes rose in arms, under governor Rising, and seized fort Casimer, which the Dutch had built upon the Delaware.

Governor Stuyvesant assembled a force, and embarked in person, at the head of his troops, to recover the fort ; the commandant capitulated, and resigned up the fort. Governor Stuyvesant pursued his victory, took fort Christiana, by capitulation, and sent gov. Rising to England. All such Swedes as

† The Swedes commenced the settlement of this district of country 1727, and called it New-Swedeland.

refused to swear allegiance to the states-general, were sent to Sweden, and New-Swedeland was added to New Netherlands, 1655.

New Swedeland now took the name of the three lower counties, upon South river, and Johan Paul Jaquet was appointed their first vice-director, by the director-general at New Netherlands. The successors of Jaquet, were Alricks, Hinnojossa and Wm. Beekman—These lieutenants had full power to grant lands, and their deeds have ever been considered as valid.

In the year 1659, Wm. Beekman, agreeable to order, purchased cape Henlopen, and commenced a settlement, under the protection of a fortress.

In the spring of 1660, governor Stuyvesant entered into a treaty with governor Berkeley, (governor of New Jersey) for a free trade, and a league, offensive and defensive.

In 1664, king Charles II. granted to his brother, the duke of York, all that extent of country in America, lying between Nova Scotia and Delaware bay.

The same year, the duke of York conveyed to John, lord Berkeley and baron of Stratton, sir George Carteret, of Salt-rum, in Devon, all that part of his patent lying between Hudson's river on the east, and Delaware bay on the west, extending south to cape May, or the main ocean, at the mouth of Delaware bay, &c. This patent embraced what became New Jersey.

The same year a number of settlers removed from Long-Island into New Jersey, and commenced the first settlements.

The same year, colonel Nicoll, from England, entered the harbor with a small squadron, and summoned the governor to surrender the fort to his Brittanic Majesty. The governor convened his council to deliberate, and attempted to palliate; but colonel Nicoll pressed his demands with severe threats, and the next day the governor capitulated upon conditions, "that the Dutch and English limits should be settled by the crown and the states-general." Commissioners were accordingly appointed by the parties, and the articles drawn, signed and accepted, the same month; and colonel Nicoll took possession of the fort and colony, and conducted their affairs with wisdom and prudence.

Sir George Carteret was commissioned to reduce fort Orang, which lay 170 miles up the river; this he soon effec-



ted. At the same time, he held a conference with the chiefs of the Five Nations, and settled a treaty, which proved of lasting advantage to the colony.

The name of New-Amsterdam was now changed to that of New-York; and fort Orange, soon after, to that of Albany, in honor of the duke.

Robert Carr was commissioned about the same time, to subdue the settlements on Delaware, or South river, and he effected his object by the first of October.

Thus the whole of the colony of New-Netherlands, was subdued to the crown of England, in less than two months—1664.

Governor Stuyvesant continued in the colony, where he lived in affluence, and died much respected.

The Dutch settlers all remained in the colony, and became valuable citizens; and their descendants are greatly respected to this day.

The same year, governor Nicoll seized on the property of the Dutch West-India company, in consequence of the war that commenced between the English and Dutch.

On the 12th of June, 1665, governor Nicoll incorporated the city of New-York, and introduced the British mode of government. He also settled the boundary line with Connecticut, and regulated the limits of the townships on Long-Island.

In 1667, the conquest of New-York was confirmed to the English, by the peace of Breda.

Soon after the peace, governor Nicoll returned to England, after having presided over the colony, in wisdom, moderation and justice, with a plenitude of power, that was uncontrolled.

Governor Nicoll closed his administration, by erecting a court of assizes, consisting of the governor and council, and justices of the peace; and collected a code of laws, usages, &c. for the colony.

In 1667, the duke of York sent out Francis Lovelace, as successor to governor Nicoll, and he ruled with wisdom and moderation, down to the year 1674, when the colony was again taken by the Dutch, which closed his administration.

In 1674, this colony was again restored to the English, at the peace of Westminster, upon the grounds of *uti possidetis*. At the conclusion of this peace, the king granted to the duke of York, a new patent, bearing date June 29th, 1674, and the

\* But more particularly in exchange for Surinam, in South America.

duke commissioned sir Edmond Andros, as governor-general over all his territories in North America.

Governor Andros received the resignation of this province from the Dutch, October 31, next ensuing ; and entered upon the duties of his office, by calling a court-martial, to try captain Manning, for his treacherous and cowardly conduct, in betraying the colony to the Dutch. To these charges Manning plead guilty, yet the court spared his life, by ordering his sword to be broken over his head, in front of the city hall, and himself disabled from holding any place of public trust in the colony, hereafter.

In 1680, governor Andros claimed the jurisdiction of New-Jersey, and caused Philip Carteret, the governor, to be arrested and brought to New-York ; but the duke of York interposed ; restored governor Carteret to his government ; removed Andros, and appointed colonel Thomas Dongan, as his successor—1682.

On the 27th of August, 1683, governor Dongan arrived and entered upon the government of the colony. The same year he issued orders to the sheriffs, to summon the freeholders to elect their representatives, to meet in general assembly : the election was made, and the assembly convened accordingly on the 17th of October. This proved useful to the colony, and rendered the governor highly popular. This assembly consisted of a council of ten, and a house of representatives of eighteen.

In 1684, governor Dongan, at the request of lord Howard, governor of Virginia, assembled a council of the chiefs of the Five Nations, at Albany, where they united in a firm treaty of peace.

In the same year, De la Barre, governor of Canada, enraged at this treaty, commenced a war upon the Five Nations : entered their country with an army of 1700 men, resolved on their ruin. Governor Dongan gave the Indians seasonable notice of this invasion, and put them on their guard.

When De la Barre entered their country, the Indians retired into the forest ; and a mortal sickness commenced in his army, which defeated the enterprise. He called a council of the chiefs ; settled a peace, and withdrew into Canada.

In 1688, De la Barre was succeeded by the marquis Denouville, who brought out with him from France, a regiment of troops, with a view of carrying into effect the plans of De la Barre, and proceeded to erect a fort at Niagara.

Governor Dongan remonstrated against the measure, and threatened him with hostilities, but without effect. Denonville persisted in his plans, and carried the war into the country of the Five Nations, and finished fort Niagara.

These movements led governor Dongan again to assemble the chiefs of the Five Nations, at Albany, in August, and the treaty was renewed. Thus governor Dongan maintained the supremacy of peace and war over the Five Nations. Whenever they showed a disposition to treat with the French, he withheld his supplies, and refused all aid, which brought them to terms.

In 1685, Charles II. died, and the duke of York succeeded to the throne, as James II. who appointed sir Edmond Andros, governor of New-England. Sir Edmond arrived in Boston, December, 1686.

In 1688, the grand news of the revolution in England, the flight of James II. to France, and the accession of William and Mary were announced to the colony. Joy and satisfaction beamed in every protestant countenance, and gladdened their hearts. They, with colonel Leisler at their head, seized on the fortress at New York, in the name of king William, and the militia gave their support.

Governor Dongan resigned the chair to lieutenant-governor Nicholson, and embarked for England. A scene of discord ensued ; but the appearance of three ships in the harbor, from England, decided the controversy. The people supported Leisler in holding the fort, and subscribed to a declaration of mutual support to the prince of Orange. Nicholson absconded, and the people triumphed.

King William graciously received the address of colonel Leisler, and confirmed him in his command—1689.

Governor Dongan repaired to Ireland, where he became earl of Limerick, and colonel Nicholson was appointed governor of Virginia, the same year.

Colonel Bayard, and Courtland, the mayor of New-York city, opposed the government of Leisler, and retired to Albany, where they formed a strong party, who resolved to hold fort Orange for the prince, in defiance of the authority of colonel Leisler.

Colonel Leisler sent his son-in-law, Milbourn, as colonel of an armed force, to reduce fort Orange to obedience ; but the passions of the parties were high, and he did not succeed until the spring of 1690. He then availed himself of the In

dian war that raged, took possession of the fort, and triumphed over his enemies.

In March, 1691, colonel Humphrey Sloughter succeeded colonel Leisler, in the government of New-York. Colonel Leisler, with Milbourn, refused to deliver up the fort at New York ; but governor Sloughter pressed his demands, and Leisler complied, and surrendered the fort. The governor caused Leisler and Milbourn to be arrested, tried, and executed for high treason. Many of the partizans of Leisler fled the colony ; but they were soon recalled by an act of general amnesty, which settled the peace of the colony—April, 1691.

The assembly then in session, was the second that had been held in this colony. They passed their censures upon the administration of colonel Leisler, and approved the proceedings of governor Sloughter. This assembly abolished the old court of assizes, and established new courts of law. They next erected a supreme court of justice, with four assistant justices, and an attorney-general.

They also formed a constitution, or bill of rights, securing trial by jury, freedom from taxes, without consent of assembly, toleration to all christians, except papists, &c.

A question was discussed in this assembly, “Whether the people have a right to be represented in general assembly, or whether it be a privilege enjoyed through the grace of the crown.” The sense of the house was taken upon this question, and an act passed in favor of the former opinion ; but this act was repealed by king William, in 1697.

In 1691, governor Sloughter met the chiefs of the Five Nations, in council, at Albany, and renewed their former league with the English, to prevent the Mohawks from making peace with count Frontenac, then governor of Canada. Governor Sloughter, on his return to New York, died, July 23d, 1691 ; and the government devolved on the council. They appointed Richard Ingoldsby president, and he was sworn into office on the 26th.

At this time, major Schuyler assembled a party of Mohawks, crossed lake Champlain, and commenced an attack upon the French settlements in Canada ; gained a signal victory over de Callieres, governor of Montreal ; killed and took about 300 French, and returned in triumph to Albany. This commenced an Indian war with Canada, that raged through the winter, with various success.

On the 29th of August, colonel Benjamin Fletcher arrived from England ; published his commission as governor, and entered upon the duties of his office. He brought out an acceptable present to the colony, of arms, military stores, &c. which called forth an address of thanks to his majesty, with a request, that he would order the neighboring colonies to join their aid in defence of the colony.†

Major Peter Schuyler, of Albany, had at this time, by his great abilities, as well as active zeal in defence of his country, acquired such influence over the Five Nations as not only secured their friendship, but rendered them entirely subservient to his will. Quider (as they called him) was the director of their movements, and thus became very useful to governor Fletcher : and he raised him to the council board.

In 1693, count Frontenac invaded the Five Nations, with an army of six or seven hundred French and Indians ; and on the night of the 6th of February, this army passed the village of Schenectady, and entered the country of the Mohawks. They surprised the Indians in their castles, and killed and captured about 300 of the confederates.

Major Schuyler appeared for their relief, at the head of his volunteers, and routed the enemy. The confederates joined in the pursuit, and the French were driven back into Canada, with great loss and distress. Peace was restored.

This year, the king vested governor Fletcher with full powers, to command the militia of the neighboring colonies, for the defence of New York, agreeable to their petition to his majesty : and the governor attempted to assume the command of the Connecticut militia at Hartford, as has been noticed.‡

At this time, there was no religious establishment in this colony ; but a free toleration was granted in their bill of rights. The first settlers had been educated in Holland, under the religion of the Dutch Reformed church, and they continued in the belief and practice of the same, and their descendants after them, as far as religion occupied their attention.

Governor Fletcher, in his speech at the opening of the first assembly, urged the importance of providing for a reli-

† The colony at that time contained about 3000 souls.

‡ Governor Fletcher extended his government over the colony of Pennsylvania, this year, by a special commission from the crown, 1693:

gious establishment; but the house declined it. At the second session of the assembly, he pressed the subject again, and the house passed a bill accordingly, and sent it up to the governor, for his concurrence. The governor returned the bill, with this amendment upon that clause that regarded the choosing and settling ministers: "And presented to the governor, to be approved and collated."

The house returned the bill, praying "that it might pass without the amendment, having in the drawing of the bill, a due regard to the pious intent of settling a minister for the benefit of the people."

The governor in his wrath, prorogued the assembly. Here opened the first religious controversy. The governor set up his prerogative, and the house their privilege. This spirit appeared in the adjourned session, in September, and the governor dissolved the assembly.

In the midst of this religious quarrel, a new Indian war commenced. Count Frontenac again invaded the country of the Five Nations, and commenced the repairs of the fort at Cataraqui. The governor published the king's orders, that the following colonies should furnish their several quotas of men for the war.

Massachusetts 350, Connecticut 120, Rhode Island, &c. 48, Pennsylvania 80, Maryland 160, New York 200, and Virginia 240.

The governor used all his efforts to carry this order into effect; but the colonies resisted the measure, as dangerous and impolitic, to trust too much power in the hands of the governor of New-York.

This Indian war continued to rage, down to the peace of Ryswick, 1697—this closed the horrid scene.†

Upon the peace of Ryswick, Richard, earl of Bellomont, was appointed to succeed governor Fletcher, and he arrived in New-York, April 2, 1698. His excellency laid before his council, his commission against the pirates, who then infested the American seas. He next laid before the council, an affidavit, delivered him by secretary Vernon, and the East-India company, alleging "that Fletcher had permitted the pirates to land their spoils in this province, and that Nicoll had bargained for their protection, and received eight hundred dollars in specie."

† See king William's war, under New-Hampshire, in Part I.

Nicoll acknowledged the receipt of this money ; but plead the act of assembly, allowing privateers to enter, upon giving security. This affidavit opened the field for the enemies of Fletcher to attach themselves to the earl, and rendered his administration popular.

His lordship repaired to Boston in June, to enter upon the government of that province, as was noticed under Massachusetts, where he apprehended the noted pirate, Kidd. When he had settled the affairs of that government, he returned to New-York, where he died, March, 1701, much lamented.

---

## CHAPTER X.

### NEW-YORK, CONTINUED.

The earl of Bellomont was a minister for the good of the colonies over which he presided, and his death was severely felt.

Nanfan, the lieut. governor, was then absent in the island of Barbadoes, and the council were divided upon the question who should rule.

On the first of May, lieutenant-governor Nanfan arrived, and closed the controversy, and entered upon the government. The parties continued warm in the assembly. The governor, to lay the storm, dissolved them, June, 1701.

On the 2d of September, the governor instituted a court of chancery, by order of the lords of trade. This court was to commence, and continue its sittings on the first Tuesday of each month ; and commissioners were empowered to appoint masters, clerks, and a register, for the same.

I pass over those civil and religious controversies that distracted this colony, through this and the succeeding administration, under lord Cornbury, down to the administration of lord Lovelace, 1708.

His lordship received his appointment from her majesty, (queen Ann) in the spring ; but did not arrive in the colony, until December following.†

The jealousy excited by the mal-administration of lord Cornbury, carried its effects into this administration, and led

† King William died March, 1702, and queen Ann succeeded to the throne.

the assembly to maintain that caution they had used towards the former, lest lord Lovelace should tread in his steps, and defraud the public revenue. His lordship felt the cruel indignity, and in this trying scene he died, and left his wife and family to feel the severity of their neglect, until the queen interposed, and compelled the assembly to do them justice.

Upon the death of lord Lovelace, the administration again devolved on lieut. governor Ingoldsby.

At this time, 1709, the expedition contemplated against Canada, engrossed the attention of this colony. General Nicholson, formerly lieut. governor, had engaged in the enterprise, as commander-in-chief; and he entered into the war with zeal and spirit.

The colony of New-York raised 700 men, with two independent companies; employed six hundred Indians in their service, and supported their families at Albany, at the same time. They also constructed 200 batteaux, and 200 birch canoes, to transport the troops over the lakes, and built two forts, besides the expense of transporting provisions, military stores, &c. all which cost this colony about £20,000; but when the promised fleet had failed, they were left to provide for this expense, by an emission of paper money.

It appeared from the letter of lord Sanderland, (the British minister) that the fleet promised by the queen, had been called into service to support the Portuguese fleet, which had been defeated by the French; and thus the expedition failed.

In 1710, lieut. governor Ingoldsby was superceded by governor Hunter. The governor brought out with him from England, a colony of Palatines, to the number of 2,000; a part of this colony settled in New-York, where they built a Lutheran church, and established the Lutheran religion; others planted a beautiful village upon the Manor of Livingston; others removed into Pennsylvania, where they settled, and drew out into that province, several thousands of their persecuted brethren from Germany, who also settled in Pennsylvania.

Another colony came out from Germany, and planted the village west of Albany, upon the Mohawk, known by the name of German Flats. All these Germans were peaceable, industrious, good inhabitants, and a great acquisition to her majesty's colonies.



Governor Hunter saw the importance of securing the peace of the frontier, by a friendly intercourse with the Indians. He accordingly assembled the chiefs of the Five Nations in council, at Albany, and renewed the former covenants.

In 1709, colonel Schuyler sailed for England, with five sachems of the Five Nations, at his own private expense, to promote the best good of his country. These Indian kings were objects of particular admiration in England, throughout the kingdom. They were introduced at court, and presented to her majesty, who received them graciously. They visited all parts of the kingdom; and when they had been fully satisfied with the enjoyments of England, they returned to America, with commodore Martin and general Nicholson, who commanded the forces destined against Port Royal, 1710. (See New England.)

The next year, New-York again made great efforts to co-operate with the fleet and armament from England, in the conquest of Canada; but the destruction of the fleet in the gulf of St. Lawrence, again defeated the enterprise, and left the colony again involved in debt.

In autumn, the governor convened the assembly, to provide for the exigencies of the colony; but a controversy sprang up between the two houses, which marred the interest of the colony, and defeated the object of the session. Both parties were obstinate, and the debts of the colony remained unpaid.

In May, 1712, the governor again convened the assembly, and the same evils continued. The public groaned under the accumulated pressure of the debts incurred by the war; yet the house was obstinate, and the governor dissolved the assembly.†

In March, 1713, the treaty of Utrecht was signed, and the peace was soon announced in America. By this treaty, the Five Nations of Indians, were (for the first time) acknowledged subjects of the crown of England.

In May, 1713, the governor convened a new assembly; and by his laconic speech, broke the obstinacy of the house, and they promptly provided for the exigencies of the public.

In 1719, governor Hunter took an affectionate leave of the colony, and sailed for England; and colonel Peter Schuyler,

† Port Royal was taken at this time.

‡ This year has been distinguished for the union of the Tuscaroras of Carolina, with the Five Nations, from which time they became the Six Nations.

as eldest counsellor, took the chair.—The most conspicuous features in this administration, were a new treaty with the Six Nations, at Albany, and the settlement of the colony line with New Jersey.

On the 17th of September, 1720, Wm. Burnet, esq. arrived in New York with the king's commission, and relieved colonel Schuyler from the duties of the chair, and commenced his administration as governor; colonel Schuyler became his senior counsellor.

In 1727, governor Burnet was removed by his majesty, George II. and placed in the chair of Massachusetts, and governor Montgomery succeeded to the chair.†

The administration of governor Montgomery settled the boundary line with Connecticut, by exchanging lands near the sound, for a tract lying between the colonies, of 60,000 acres, called the oblong, 1731.

The same year, the French built the fortress at Crown Point, on lake Champlain.

The subsequent history of New York has been carried forward in the general history of New England, down to the peace of Paris of 1763.

---

## CHAPTER XI.

### RISE AND PROGRESS OF NEW-JERSEY.

The patent of the duke of York to lord Berkeley, and sir George Carteret, bearing date 1664, which laid the foundation of the colony of New Jersey, has been noticed in the history of New York; and the incipient stages of the rise of New Jersey, has been carried forward in that history, because they were inseparably connected.

The next year, Philip Carteret was appointed governor. He came over from England and settled at Elizabethtown; and laid the foundation of the colony upon the free and independent plan of the colonies of New-England, and presided with wisdom and dignity, until the colony was conquered by the Dutch, 1673.

The Dutch erected the colony of New Jersey into three

† King George ascended the throne in June, 1727.

jurisdictions, viz. Niewer Amstel, Upland, and Hoel-Kill, and appointed Anthony Colve, governor.

The next year, the colony was restored to the English by the peace of Westminster. The king granted a new patent to the duke of York, and the duke appointed sir Edmond Andros governor of all his territories in America.

"In 1676, the province was divided into East and West Jersey. Lord Berkeley's assignees released East Jersey to Carteret, who in return, conveyed West Jersey as a dependency of New York; but Carteret retained the government of East Jersey."

"In 1667, a vessel arrived from England, with 230 passengers, mostly Quakers, who proceeded up the Delaware, treated with the Indians for a tract of land, and commenced a settlement, at what is now called Burlington. Two vessels arrived the same year, with about 200 passengers, and settled at the same place."

"West Jersey continued to be held as a dependency of New York, or rather as a conquered country, until the year 1680, when the duke of York, after much solicitation from the proprietors, restored to them the rights granted by his patent of 1664; and West Jersey was no longer subject to New-York."

This year the first mills were erected in New Jersey. Governor Andros caused Philip Carteret, governor of East-Jersey, to be arrested this year, and brought prisoner to New York; but the duke interposed, restored Carteret to his government, and removed Andros.

In 1685, the duke of York, then king James II. appointed sir Edmond Andros, to the government of New England.

In 1702, the proprietors of East and West Jersey, resigned up their colonies to queen Ann. and they were governed by the crown, down to the time of the revolution of 1775.

One common governor, under the crown, from 1702 to 1733, governed the colonies of New York and New Jersey; they then became distinct and separate governments, and have continued so to this day.

In 1738, Princeton college was founded, by the name of Nassau Hall, by charter from John Hamilton, president of the council, and liberally endowed by governor Belcher, in 1747.

In 1776, the present constitution of government was framed and adopted

## CHAPTER XII.

## RISE AND PROGRESS OF DELAWARE.

In the year 1627, this country was visited by a party of Swedes, by permission of Gustavus Adolphus, king of Sweden, who commenced a settlement at cape Henlopen, (then called Paradise Point) under the command of William Use-ling, a noted Swedish merchant, who called it New Swedeland.

In 1631, they built a fort near where Wilmington now stands, which they called Christeen or Christiana, and laid out a village, which the Dutch afterwards destroyed.

Soon after this, Peter Minuet was commissioned by the regency of Sweden, under the minority of the queen, to the government of the colony.

When queen Christiana ascended the throne of Sweden, 1633, she commissioned John Printz to the government of the colony; and his administration continued to the year 1654, when he was succeeded by his son-in-law John Papgoia.

In the year 1655, Peter Stuyvesant, governor of New Netherlands, made a general conquest of New-Swedeland, and added it to the Dutch colony, and Alric became their first governor.

In 1644, the English took possession of the Dutch colony of New Netherlands, and king Charles II. conveyed this district in his patent to the duke of York. The whole was confirmed to the English at the peace of Breda.

In the year 1662, the Dutch incorporated the town of New-Castle, and the inhabitants had a free trade, without being obliged to make entry at New-York.

In 1681, this country was covered by the patent of Pennsylvania, which king Charles II. granted to Wm. Penn.

In the year 1682, the duke of York conveyed to Penn all his claims upon that district, and he annexed it to his government.†

After the union of the province and the three lower counties, (then so called) the representatives held their first session at Upland, (Chester) on the fourth of the tenth month, 1682.

† Their deeds embraced New-Castle and twelve miles round it, extending to cape Henlopen.

In 1685, the boundary line between Delaware and Maryland was settled, between Wm. Penn and lord Baltimore, as follows, viz. "That tract of land lying between the river and bay of Delaware and the eastern sea, on the one side, and the Chesapeake bay on the other, be divided into two equal parts, by a line from cape Henlopen to the 40th degree of north latitude, and that one half lying between the bay of Delaware and the eastern sea, belong to his majesty, and the other half to lord Baltimore."

During the three years residence of Wm. Penn in the colony, all was harmony and good order; but when he returned to England, to settle this controversy with lord Baltimore, Nicholas Moor, chief judge of the colony, threw the province into the utmost disorder, until he was removed by Blackwell, the deputy governor, in 1688. He in his turn, played the tyrant over the people.

Upon the accession of William and Mary, the colony of Pennsylvania neglected to acknowledge their sovereignty; but continued their administration in the name of king James II. which gave just offence to king William, and in 1693, he assumed the government, and appointed colonel Fletcher, governor of New-York, to administer the government of both colonies.

In the year 1694, Pennsylvania was again restored to Wm. Penn, and in 1696, he gave the colony a new frame of government, which continued to the year 1701, when the counties of Delaware rejected the constitution, and declared their independence of Pennsylvania.

Wampum was the principal currency of Delaware, through the early periods of her settlement, and governor Lovelace gave it a current value, by proclamation; ordering four white grains and three black ones, for a stiver, or penny.

The repose of the counties of Delaware remained undisturbed for many years, until the old proprietary controversy was renewed; then the claimants became warm, and the weight of anxiety and expense obliged them to adjust all their differences, by commissioners, May, 1762.

By reason of numerous delays, the doings of these commissioners were never carried into effect, until March, 1762, when the division lines were run out in due form; but they

\* Governor of New-York.

were not fully established until the proclamation of Richard Penn, in 1775.

The remainder of the history of Delaware, will be carried forward with the colonies collectively, in their national character.

## CHAPTER XIII.

### RISE AND PROGRESS OF PENNSYLVANIA, DOWN TO THE PEACE OF 1763.

The distinguished services of admiral Penn, had brought him into favor at court. This favor descended to his son, Wm. Penn, although a quaker, and enabled him to obtain, by way of compensation for a large sum of money, due from the government to his father, that district of country in North America, now known by the name of Pennsylvania.

Wm. Penn was constituted full and absolute proprietor of all this tract of land, or province, with full powers of government over the same, by a charter bearing date, Westminster, March 4th, 1781 ; which province is thus defined :

“ Charles, by the grace of God, &c. Therefore, know ye, &c. do give and grant unto the said Wm. Penn, his heirs and assigns, all that tract of land in America, with the islands thereunto pertaining, as the same is bounded on the east by Delaware river, from twelve miles distance north of New-Castle town, unto the 43d degree of north latitude, if the said river doth extend so far, but if not, then as far as it doth extend, and from thence to the 43d degree, as aforesaid. The said lands to extend westward, five degrees of longitude ; to be computed from said eastern bounds. Said lands to be bounded on the north by the 43d degree of north latitude, and on the south by a circle drawn twelve miles distance from New-Castle, northward and westward, until the beginning of the 40th degree of north latitude, and then westwardly by a straight line, to the limits of the longitude above mentioned.”

This patent continues in this style through twenty-three long sections, in which the rights, powers, and privileges of the proprietary, are fully and clearly defined.

These preliminaries being closed, Wm. Penn published his patent, with such a description of the country as could then

be obtained, and offered his lands for sale, at forty shillings sterling the hundred acres, or one shilling per annum, forever ; with good conditions of settlement, for such as wished to become adventurers.

The disciples of George Fox,† whose confidence was strongly fixed in Wm. Penn, soon formed a company in London, under the name of “The Free Society of traders in Pennsylvania.” Twenty thousand acres of land were soon purchased ; articles of trade were drawn up, published and entered upon, by several divisions of the company, which were soon followed by others ; and the emigrations to Pennsylvania, rapidly progressed.

In 1781, two ships from London, and one from Bristol, sailed for Pennsylvania, and arrived safe, with settlers for the new colony, and brought out Wm. Markham, the deputy governor, with several commissioners, to treat with the Indians, and purchase their lands. A policy well calculated to insure the peace and prosperity of the colony.

Wm. Penn guaranteed to his settlers, a constitution, entitled, “The Frame of Government for the colony of Pennsylvania, in America,” &c. in which the civil and religious privileges of the citizens were clearly defined, cautiously guarded, and fully protected. The true principles of this government may be seen in the following remarks :

“The true design of government, is to support power in reverence with the people, and to secure the people from the abuse of power ; for liberty without obedience is confusion ; and obedience without liberty, is tyranny,” &c.

In 1682, William Penn obtained of the duke of York, a release of all the right, claim, or title, which he had, or might be supposed to have, in the province of Pennsylvania ; together with another conveyance of all claim to the territory lying upon the river Delaware, called by the Dutch the “three lower counties,” which are fully defined under New-York and Delaware.

In 1682, Wm. Penn arrived at New-Castle, Pennsylvania, on the 24th of October, where he was cordially received amidst the acclamations of the people. English, Swedes, and Dutch, all bid him welcome, with mingled transports of joy.

On the 4th of December, William Penn convened the first

† Founder of the sect called quakers, about the middle of the 17th century.

assembly at Chester;† at which time, the three lower counties were annexed to the province, by a special act of union. The Dutch and Swedes were all naturalized, and the laws which had been agreed upon in England, all passed in due form.

Wm. Penn concluded a treaty of peace with the Indians, this year, which continued more than seventy years, and rendered the quakers, the idols of their affections.

In less than one year after the proprietary came into the province, more than thirty ships arrived from England, with passengers, to settle the colony; these were generally quakers, whose first concern was, like the puritans of New-England, to plant churches, and make provision for the free enjoyment of their religion.

In about two years after this, more than fifty sail of shipping arrived, from different parts of England, Holland, and Germany, with settlers for the new colony. A company of Palatines, at this time, came out from Germany, and settled Gemantown, near Philadelphia. These were quakers, who were driven from the Palatinate, by the religious persecutions, that laid waste their country, in the reign of Louis XIV. king of France.

At this time, the city of Philadelphia, which Wm. Penn had laid out for his capital, (1682) grew and increased rapidly, and the log huts had become numerous.

In 1683, Wm. Penn convened the second assembly‡ in his new capital, and presided in the council. The province was by this assembly, divided into the counties of Bucks, Philadelphia, and Chester; these added to the three lower counties on the Delaware, viz. New-Castle, Kent, and Sussex, made up six counties, for which the proprietary appointed sheriffs.

This year a controversy arose between lord Baltimore and Wm. Penn, concerning the boundary between Maryland and Pennsylvania; but the prudent management of Wm. Penn, soon layed the strife, and restored tranquility to the settlers. Wm. Penn, however, resolve to return to England, and settle the question fully with lord Baltimore.

In 1684, William Penn appointed Thomas Lloyd, president of the council; and on the 12th of June, set sail for England.

† This assembly consisted of three members of the council, and nine members of the house.

‡ This assembly was composed of eighteen members of the council, and thirty-six of the assembly, or lower house.



He arrived in England in season to witness the death of king Charles II. and the accession of James II. late duke of York. To effect the immediate purposes of his voyage, he took up his residence at Kensington, that he might have a more free and easy access to the king, 1685.

The agent of lord Baltimore appeared in England, and managed the cause of his lordship so adroitly, before the king in council, that he obtained an order for the three lower counties, formerly claimed by the Dutch, to be annexed to Maryland. Although this order was to take immediate effect, yet it was delayed until the reign of queen Ann, about the year 1702.

In 1685, great disorders arose in the government of Pennsylvania, during the absence of the proprietary, and severe persecutions awaited William Penn, while in England. His enemies accused him of a jesuitical ambition. At the same time, he sent from England, Wm Blackwell, to act as deputy-governor, in the place of Thomas Lloyd, removed from the presidency by resignation ; but this increased the evils. Blackwell withdrew from the chair, and returned to England.

In 1689, the public school of the Friends, was founded in Philadelphia. In 1697, it was incorporated by charter ; and in 1701, this charter was confirmed by patent from the proprietary, and he fixed the number of the corporation to that of fifteen ; under the title of the overseers of the public school, founded in Philadelphia, at the request, cost and charges, of the people called quakers. In 1711, Wm. Penn renewed the charter of this school, whereby he confirmed all the other charters, and directed, that fifteen overseers should be chosen by the corporation, to inspect the affairs of the school.

In 1688, when William and Mary had ascended the throne, upon the flight of James II. those suspicions that had fallen upon Wm. Penn, and given the name of papist, jesuit, &c. were remembered, and caused him to be arrested arraigned before a tribunal of justice, and formally tried ; but as no proof lay against him, he was acquitted at the Easter term.

In 1690, he was arraigned again, upon a new indictment ; tried and acquitted, at Trinity term. The same year, he was again attacked by a proclamation, as an enemy to the kingdom, and an adherent to the enemies of the crown ; arraigned, tried, and acquitted, at Michaelmas term.

William Penn now began seriously to wish to return to his province in America ; but the time had not yet arrived. He was arrested upon the oath of a vile, profligate fellow, whilst returning from the funeral of the celebrated George Fox ; and he withdrew from public notice, and passed two or three years in retirement, 1691.

In this state of things, the disorders in the province of Pennsylvania, became so serious, that the king appointed colonel Fletcher, governor of New-York, to take the reins of government ; and in April, 1693, he entered upon the administration.

In 1694, the friends of William Penn, found access to the ear of his majesty, and obtained the following declaration from the king : " William Penn is one of my old friends, as well as your's ; and he may follow his business without further molestation, and you are authorised to make this known to him."

At the eventful moment when this communication was made to William Penn, died Gulielma Maria, his wife, November 30th ; which added greatly to the weight of his afflictions.

In August, 1694, Wm. Penn was restored to the government of his province, by letters patent from their majesties, William and Mary ; and he appointed William Markham lieutenant-governor, and the affairs of the province became regular.

In 1699, William Penn returned again to Pennsylvania, where he arrived in December. By this late arrival, he providentially avoided the yellow fever, which for the first time, had raged in Philadelphia, and proved very malignant and mortal.

One of the first objects that engrossed the attention of the proprietary, was to heal the differences, that had distracted the colony in his absence ; to effect this, he convened an assembly at New-Castle, in October, 1700.

This assembly received from the proprietary, a new charter of privileges, that healed all their differences, and restored peace, order, and tranquility to the province.

In 1701, Wm. Penn held a grand treaty at Philadelphia, with about forty sachems, and others of the great tribes, lying upon the waters of the Susquehannah, Potowmac, &c. which established a general and lasting peace.

Thus we see, how much the interest of a people, depends upon individual character.

These things being accomplished, William Penn once more organized his government in his province, by appointing Andrew Hamilton, late governor of New-Jersey, as his deputy governor, and James Logan, as his secretary, and returned to England, to promote the interest of the colonies generally.

In 1702, king William died, and was succeeded by queen Ann.† The same year, governor Hamilton died, and was succeeded by lieutenant governor Skipper.

In 1703, the three lower counties on the Delaware, withdrew from the province, and the latter called a separate assembly at Philadelphia, in October.

The same year, the proprietary appointed John Evans as deputy governor, and repaired to Pennsylvania, where he arrived in February, 1704.

In April, he convened an assembly at Philadelphia, for the purpose of again uniting the three lower counties to the province; this he effected so far as to gain the consent of the counties, but the province refused to be re-united. In autumn of the same year, governor Evans convened an assembly at New Castle, which became clamorous; caballed against him, and actually accused the governor to the proprietary, for mal-administration.

Queen Ann's war with the French and Spaniards, was now raging in Europe, on the ocean, and throughout the frontiers of New-England; desolating their fields and settlements, and filling their borders with death; yet in Pennsylvania, all was tranquil, and the Susquehannah Indians were rejoicing with a company of Quakers, who had come out to preach to them in the character of friends of Wm. Penn, 1705.

In 1709, governor Gookin arrived at Philadelphia, to succeed governor Evans, removed. The governor made an effort to raise men and money in the province, to co-operate with New-England and New-York, in the conquest of Canada; but failed.‡ These Quakers were not disposed either to fight or pay. This opened a controversy between the assembly and governor, which raged so seriously, that the proprietary was obliged to interpose by letter to the assembly, in 1710.

† Eldest daughter of James II.

‡ The expedition contemplated in queen Ann's war, which failed, by the English fleet having been called to Portugal.

The effects of this letter were such, as caused the dissolution of this assembly, and the election of a new one ; and harmony was restored.

In 1712, William Penn made a formal sale of the province of Pennsylvania, to her majesty queen Ann, for the double purpose, of relieving himself from the embarrassments of his affairs, as well as from the vexatious cares, which their unhallowed contentions had produced ; but before the conveyance was duly executed, he was seized with an apoplexy, which rendered him incompetent to the act.

The factions of the province were shortly renewed, and continued, down to the year 1717 when governor Gookin returned to England, and was succeeded by governor Keith. Under this administration, order and peace were again restored.

At this eventful moment, when all was quiet, died William Penn, the friend of man, and the benevolent founder of the province of Pennsylvania, 1718. The particulars of his will, and disposal of his estate, may be seen in Proud's History of Pennsylvania, vol. II. page 114.

About this time, William Penn, the heir at law, died at Liege, and his eldest son, Springett, claimed the government.

The controverted claims among the heirs of Wm. Penn, were decided in a court of chancery, in England, in favor of John, Thomas, and Richard Penn, minor heirs of the elder Wm. Penn ; and the widow Hannah Penn, as executrix, had the government vested in her, and other trustees, in trust for the minors.

In 1723, the governor instituted a court of chancery in the province, by and with the consent of the assembly.

This year governor Keith made a general peace with the Virginia, Pennsylvania, and confederate Indians, and the assembly, to gratify a request of the Indians, passed an act, to prevent the traders from selling rum to them.

In 1722, the assembly, to relieve the burdens of the people, issued bills of credit, to the amount of £15,000. At the close of the year, they issued £30,000 more, which in 1726, had depreciated 50 per cent.

In 1729, they issued £30,000 more, and in 1739, (ten years) such had become the depreciation, and pressure for money, that they issued £11,000 more, making a sum total of £86,000, which in fair market, was worth £50,000. Only £6,110, 5s. of all this sum, had then been redeemed.

In 1726, governor Keith was succeeded by governor Gordon, and in 1731, such had been the prosperity of the province, that it contained a more numerous white population, than the three colonies of Virginia, Maryland, and Carolina.

The commerce of Pennsylvania had become so respectable, that their historian, (Robert Proud) observes, "their exports consisted of wheat, flour, biscuit, beef and pork, butter and cheese, bacon, hams, cider, apples, soap, myrtle wax, candles, &c. which yielded them a revenue of £60,000 annually." All this, the colony had attained to, in about 50 years.

In 1732, Thomas Penn, a descendant of William Penn the elder, arrived in Pennsylvania in August, when the assembly were in session, and entered upon the duties of the administration.

In 1736, governor Gordon died, and was succeeded by governor Thomas, who did not arrive in the province until August, 1738.

In 1741, Thomas Penn took an affectionate leave of the assembly, and returned to England; and in 1746, he came into possession of three-fourths of the province.

In 1742, a number of gentlemen, in the city of Philadelphia, associated with doctor Franklin, and subscribed forty shillings each, for the purpose of a library, with ten shillings annually, which laid the foundation of one of the first, and most respectable libraries in the country.

In 1750, more than 5000 British, Irish, and Germans emigrated to Pennsylvania. At this time, Philadelphia contained 2100 dwelling-houses, and eleven places of public worship.

In 1747, the affairs of the province were generally quiet, when governor Thomas resigned, and was succeeded by governor Hamilton, in 1748.

In 1754, governor Hamilton resigned, and was succeeded by governor Morris, and he was succeeded by William Denny, in 1756; and in 1758, James Hamilton again took the chair, and continued to the year 1763. John Penn, son of Richard Penn, then took the chair, and continued until 1771.

The American Philosophical Society, was instituted in 1769, and incorporated in 1780.

At the commencement of the revolution, 1775, the heirs of Wm. Penn quit-claimed all their proprietary rights to the colony, for thirty thousand pounds.

In 1790, Pennsylvania established her present constitution.

In 1793, more than 3000 souls were swept off, by the yellow fever ; and in 1797, the same disease swept away more than 12,000.

In 1800, Congress removed from Philadelphia, to the city of Washington.

---

## CHAPTER XIV.

### RISE AND PROGRESS OF MARYLAND, FROM ITS ORIGIN DOWN TO THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION.

The first settlement that commenced in this district, that now bears the name of Maryland, was made by William Claiborne.

In the year 1631, king Charles I. granted to Claiborne, a license to traffic, in all such parts of America, as were not patented to others ; and he planted a small colony upon Kent island, near the centre of the territory.

About the same time, king Charles I. caused a patent of this district of country, to be made out to sir George Calvert, (lord Baltimore) who had been secretary to his father, king James I. and who having become a papist, now sought a retreat in the wilds of America, where he might enjoy his religion undisturbed.

Sir George was one of the original partners of the Virginia company, and continued so, until its dissolution, which led him to seek a retreat in this part of America.

When sir George arrived in Virginia, he found the people all churchmen, whose intolerance was as bitter, as that he had left in England ; he therefore removed into the district of Maryland ; but before his patent passed the seals, sir George died, and the king issued the patent to his son Cœcil, lord Baltimore, June 20th, 1632.

The patent issued to Cœcil, lord Baltimore, is thus defined, viz. “ All that part of Pennsylvania, lying between the ocean on the east, and the bay of Chesapeake on the west ; and divided from the other part, by a line drawn from the cape, called Watkinson’s Point, situated in the aforesaid bay, near the river Wighco, on the west, to the main ocean, on the east ; and between that bound on the south, to that part of Delaware bay on the north, which lies under the fortieth degree

of north latitude, &c. and all that tract of land, from the aforesaid Delaware bay, in a right line, by the degree aforesaid, to the true meridian of the first fountain of the river Potomac, and from thence, tending towards the south, to the further bank of the aforesaid river, and following the west and south side of it, to a certain place called the Cinquack, situated near the mouth of said river, where it falls into the Chesapeake bay ; and from thence, in a straight line, to the aforesaid cape, called Watkinson's Point," &c.

This grant, as well as that of Virginia, Pennsylvania, and Connecticut, was so carelessly defined, as to involve the parties in long, and obstinate disputes, which cost them much time and expense to settle. Lord Baltimore, (some say king Charles) gave to the province the name of Maryland, in honor of the queen, (Henrietta Maria).

In 1633, lord Baltimore appointed his brother, Leonard Calvert, as governor of the province ; and in 1634, he commenced a settlement upon the north side of the Potomac, and near its mouth, with about 200 settlers, mostly Roman Catholics.

Lord Baltimore laid the foundations of his province, in the security of property, and liberty in religion ; granting in absolute fee, fifty acres of land, to every actual settler, and establishing christianity, agreeable to the old common law, without allowing pre-eminence to any sect.

These measures of his choice, soon converted a dreary wilderness, into a prosperous colony. More than £40,000 were expended by his lordship, in the two first years, in transporting settlers, and their necessary stores, &c. The people, to remunerate this expense, granted to his lordship, a subsidy of two-fifteenths of tobacco, upon every poll.

Such was the pacific disposition of the Indians, that the first settlers lived, for some time, among them, under the domestic regimen of a family. The Indian women taught the emigrants how to make bread of their corn ; their men taught the English how to hunt and fish, and when they assisted in the chase, sold them the game they took for themselves, for a trifle ; all which, furnished them an easy support, until they could clear the ground, and cultivate for themselves.

Such was the fertility of the soil, the mildness of the climate, and the free toleration of the government, that emigrants flocked to the province from Europe, and settlements began to multiply.

In 1635, the freemen all met in general assembly, but no other record remains of their doings, than an act passed, "that all offenders, in all murders and felonies, shall suffer the same pains and forfeitures, as for the same crimes in England."

In 1638, the governor called a new assembly, and presented for their acceptance, a body of laws, sent over by lord Baltimore; but the assembly rejected these, and prepared a collection of regulations, better adapted to their circumstances.

At this time Claiborne, who had settled on Kent island, refused obedience to the laws of Maryland, and set up his claims, and appealed to the crown. This was rejected by the lords commissioners, who established the claims and jurisdiction of lord Baltimore.

In 1629, a third assembly was convened by the governor, and an act was passed, "for establishing the house of assembly." This act declared, that all who should be elected pursuant to writs issued, should be called burgesses. That the gentlemen, summoned by special writ of the proprietary, together with the governor and secretary, should be called the house of assembly. All acts to be of the same force, as if the whole body of freemen had been present.

By an act of this assembly, the *people* are distinguished from the *slaves*, which serves to show, that slavery commenced almost with their origin.

In 1640, an effort was made by Virginia, to extend her dominion over the province of Maryland, and subvert her charter; but their efforts failed, and thus, what commenced in injustice, ended in disgrace.

The people of Maryland were peculiarly happy under the government of lord Baltimore. They both understood, and pursued their own best interest; and while they cherished a just regard for the prerogatives of the proprietary, they never lost sight of their own rights as freemen.

The intrigues of Claiborne, together with the imprudence of the settlers, involved the province in an Indian war, in 1642, which raged for several years; but the savages were humbled, and peace was restored.

Immediately upon the restoration of peace, Claiborne united with Richard Ingolds, and aided by the turbulent spirit of the times, raised a rebellion in this province. Calvert, the governor, fled into Virginia, and Claiborne seized on the



government, 1645. In August following, the rebellion was quelled, and tranquility restored.

In 1649, an act of free religious toleration was passed by the assembly, which was confirmed in 1676, among the perpetual laws of the province.

A new religious drama was now opened upon the great theatre of the American colonies. Virginia passed several laws against the puritans. In Massachusetts, the puritans were persecuting the episcopalians, baptists, quakers, &c. but the catholics in Maryland, to their eternal honor, were tolerating and protecting all.

In the memorable year, 1650, that constitution was finally established, which continued, with very little interruption, down to the year 1776, when the present constitution was adopted. In forming this constitution, those who were called by special writs, formed the upper house, and those chosen by hundreds, the lower house ; and all bills that passed both houses, with the governor's signature, became the laws of the province.

From this epoch, the democratic part of the assembly, (consisting of fourteen delegates) must date the origin of its particular immunities, or exclusive privileges.

The province at this time, was divided into three counties viz. St. Mary's, the isle of Kent, and Ann-Arundale. These counties were sub-divided into hundreds.

In 1651, the ruling power in England, (the commonwealth parliament) appointed commissioners, "for the reduction and governing the provinces within the Chesapeake bay," which trust they exercised with great attention and dexterity ; although the proprietor of Maryland had submitted to the parliament, and obtained leave to govern, in the name of the "keepers of the liberties of England."

In 1654, Oliver Cromwell seized on the government of Maryland, which excited a strife between the puritans and catholics, that issued in a civil war ; a decisive battle was fought, the catholics were vanquished, the governor was taken, and by a court-martial, sentenced to die ; but the puritans interposed, and his sentence was changed to a long confinement.

This year, Claiborne again attempted to assume the reins of government, under the authority of "the lord high protector of England ;" and with his commissioners, called an assembly ; but the burgesses of St. Mary's county, declined

his government, as being incompatible with their oaths to Lord Baltimore, and refused to attend. This assembly acknowledged the government of Cromwell, and passed an act, declaring all papists, outlaws in the province. The contrast between this, and the act of assembly in 1649, reflects great honor on the catholics of that day, for their liberality in matters of religion.

In March, 1658, the commissioners resigned their trust to Josiah Fendal esq. as governor, on the part of the proprietary.

In 1659, he called an assembly, which abolished the senate or upper house, and rendered the lower house absolute in the government; and the governor was appointed by the ruling party.

Upon the restoration of king Charles II. in 1660, a change was again effected in the government. The proprietary appointed Philip Calvert, governor of Maryland, and in December, he entered upon the administration.

These political changes produced no sensible effects upon the prosperity of the province. Her wealth and population, like that of Pennsylvania, had so rapidly progressed, that she could number more than 12,000 inhabitants, including slaves.

In 1662, the proprietary appointed his eldest son, Charles Calvert, to the government, who followed the maxims of his father, and ruled in wisdom. This year the peace of the province was disturbed by the Janadoah Indians; but the war was short, and successfully terminated.

In 1676, Cæcilius Calvert, the father of Maryland, died in the 44th year of his government. At this time, the province was divided into ten counties, containing more than 16,000 souls. Maryland then contained neither parishes, nor churches, and no provision had been made by law, for the support of the gospel. There were only three episcopal clergymen in Maryland.

Charles Calvert, the then governor, became the proprietary, and under this authority, he convened an assembly, which gave to Maryland a new code of wise and salutary laws.

In 1689, a revolution was completely effected in Maryland, by the protestants, under the mask of a popish plot, in connection with the Indians, to massacre all the protestants, and assume the reins of government. The revolutionists placed one John Coode in the chair of the province, and king William

sanctioned the measure. by orders to those who had assumed the power, to exercise it in his name, until further orders. From this, the government of the province remained under the control of the crown, about twenty-seven years.

In 1692, Maryland was divided into thirty-six parishes, and the bishop of London appointed Thomas Bray, D. D. as his commissary, to superintend the protestant cause in this province. Thus the protestant religion was established by law.

In 1694, the town of Severn was changed to that of Annapolis, and made a port of entry. In 1697, it became the seat of government, and thus continues to this time.

In the year 1716, the government was restored by king George I. to Charles, lord Baltimore, the proprietor, and it continued in his family, down to the year 1776, when the freemen of the province assumed the government, confiscated the property, although the then proprietary was a minor, and framed and adopted the present constitution.

In 1790, Maryland granted to the United States, that part of the District of Columbia, that lies east of the Potomac.

The remainder of the history of Maryland, will be carried forward with the United States, collectively.

---

## CHAPTER XV.

RISE AND PROGRESS OF GEORGIA, FROM ITS ORIGIN, IN 1732,  
DOWN TO THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION.

A period of more than one century elapsed, from the settlement of Virginia, New-York and New-England, before any attempts were made to settle Georgia. In June, 1732, king George II.† granted a charter to a company in England, to settle that part of Georgia, that lies between the rivers Savannah and Alatomaha; and the colony bears his name.

The proprietors of this grant had it in view. to settle their lands, by transporting such indigent people in England, as had become burdensome, and were disposed to become adventurers to the new world.

In the month of July, of the same year, the proprietors met, and appointed lord Percival for their president; ordered a

† King George II. ascended the throne, January, 1727.

common seal, &c. The powers vested in the company by this charter, extended to the term of twenty years ; and then the government was to revert to the crown.

In August following, a large sum of money was raised by subscription, among the higher orders in England, under the management of sir Wm. Heathcote, to provide for the necessities of the settlers, and support the views of the company. Parliament also co-operated by a grant of £10,000, to carry forward the plan.

In November following, between one and two hundred laborers, volunteered in the enterprise, and embarked from England, in December, under the superintendence of James Oglethorpe. In January, 1733, they all arrived in Carolina, where they were kindly received, and hospitably provided for.

The Carolinians supplied this colony with such live stock and tools, as were necessary to commence their settlement, together with such military escort, scout boats, &c. as were necessary to conduct them safe into Georgia.

Thus provided for, this little colony, with their illustrious chief, arrived safe in Georgia ; explored the banks of the Savannah for a permanent residence ; and on the 9th of February, erected the first house on that elevation, where the town of Savannah now stands.

They next erected a small fort ; embodied and organized the settlers into a regular militia, for the defence, and protection of the colony, and commenced their labors. They next entered into friendly negotiations with the neighboring Indians, particularly the Creeks, who were the most numerous, and concluded treaties of safety.

This colony was considered as a frontier settlement, between the Indians on the one side, and the Spaniards on the other ; they were therefore all armed, and equipped, at the expense of the company ; and the settlers were accordingly bound to do military duty, and hold themselves in readiness, for the public defence. The government was so far feudal, that the trustees granted their lands upon a male entailment, and upon a failure in the male line, the lands were to revert back to the trustees ; reserving the right and power of providing for the female heirs, upon such estates in reversion, as the several improvements, as well as their necessities would justify. Reserving to the widows the dwelling-house, with one half of the lands, during life

All lands suffered to lie waste for eighteen years, together with all lands forfeited by high treason, felonies, &c. were to revert back to the trustees. All trade with the Indians, to be subject to the regulations of the trustees, and all negroes and rum, were prohibited to the colony.

Such a plan, for settling a colony in Georgia, soon proved as abortive, as the constitution of Mr. Locke, for Carolina ; the settlers fled the province, in quest of lands, free from entail, and which were easy to be obtained.

In 1734, the trustees collected together, from the gleanings of cities, about 600 adventurers, whom they transported into Georgia ; but these proved a nuisance to the colony, by their idle and dissolute habits. The colony continued to languish, although parliament had augmented their grants, to the amount of £36,000, to carry forward the benevolent design.

The trustees opened a new plan for conducting their settlements. They laid off eleven townships, upon the Alatanaha, Savannah, Santee, Pedee, &c. consisting of 20,000 acres each, surveyed into fifty acre lots. They next offered one fifty acre lot to every actual settler.

When the trustees published these terms in Scotland, 130 Highlanders volunteered at once, and were transported into Georgia, where they built the town of Inverness, upon the Alatanaha. At the same time, a company from Germany, consisting of about one hundred and seventy, embarked for Georgia, and settled a German colony.

In 1736, general Oglethorpe, who had returned to England, to promote the good of the province, sailed for Georgia, with 300 planters, and settled Frederica, which augmented the number of settlers to 1400. All which, gave high hopes to the trustees ; but their hopes were premature ; the idleness and dissipation of the first settlers, added to their wars with the Indians, blasted their hopes, and kept the colony in a state of wretchedness.

At the commencement of the Spanish war, general Oglethorpe was appointed commander-in-chief of all his majesty's forces, in Georgia and South Carolina, 1738. The first object of the general, was to secure the friendship of the Creeks, to defeat the intrigues of the Spaniards. This being accomplished, he next concerted measures with governor Bull, of South Carolina, for the conquest of East Florida.

General Oglethorpe, at the head of 400 men, from Virginia, Carolina, and Georgia, with a body of friendly Indians, enter-

ed Florida, and took fort Diego, within twenty miles of St Augustine. Soon after, he was joined by the other colonial troops and Indians, to the number of about 2000, and marched to St. Augustine, without opposition, and invested the castle. The general pushed the siege for several days, with vigor ; but the garrison was reinforced, his troops became sickly, and began to desert ; the hurricane season was at hand, and the general abandoned the enterprise, and returned to Georgia.

In 1742, the Spaniards attempted to return the compliment to the general. A Spanish force of 2000 men, under the command of Don Antonio Ridondo, from the Havanna, touched at St. Augustine, and took in a reinforcement of 1000 men, and from thence sailed to Georgia ; entered the Alata-maha, and proceeded up the river, and erected a battery of twenty eighteen pounders. General Oglethorpe retired at their approach, and retreated to Frederica, with only 700 men.

The Spanish commander detached several parties, in pursuit of general Oglethorpe, but these were defeated, with very considerable loss, and the enterprise failed.

At this time, general Oglethorpe learned, that the dissensions in the Spanish army, obliged them to keep two encampments, and he attempted to surprise one of them in the night ; but his plan was discovered by a deserter, and he was obliged again to retreat to Frederica.

The general hit upon an expedient to revenge on the deserter, for his treachery. He addressed to him a letter, by a Spanish captive, as though he was a spy in the Spanish camp, and directed him to inform the Spanish general, that if he marched directly to Frederica, he might surprise the English, in their defenceless situation ; but if he delayed three days, the English would then be reinforced, by six British ships of war, and 2000 men.

This stratagem succeeded ; the letter was delivered to the Spanish general, and the deserter was put in irons. The general, undetermined how to act, delayed his movements until the third day, when a reinforcement, which had sailed from South Carolina, for the relief of general Oglethorpe, appeared in view. The Spanish general took the alarm ; demolished his fort, spiked his heavy cannon, abandoned his provisions and military stores, embarked his troops, and returned to Florida.

Georgia was thus relieved ; and general Oglethorpe was hailed as the deliverer of his country ; but the Spanish general, on his return to Havanna, was thrown into prison, for his dastardly conduct.

At this time, the supplies of money voted by parliament, for the settlement of Georgia, amounted to £112,000 ; but with all this patronage, the restrictions, forfeitures, and hardships endured by the settlers, embarrassed the colony, and the settlers languished.

Tired of these fruitless efforts, the trustees abandoned the enterprise ; resigned up their trust to the crown, and Georgia became a royal government, in 1652 ; just twenty years after the first settlements in the country.

King George established a regular colonial government in Georgia, after the plan of the other royal governments, and appointed John Reynolds for their first governor, under the crown. At this time, the whole exports of the province, did not exceed £10,000 sterling, per annum.

In 1755, the first general court was established in Georgia ; but the progress of agricultural improvements had been so slow, that their exports, at the close of the old French war, did not exceed £27,000 per annum.

Soon after the peace of 1763, a spirit of enterprise began to prevail, under the administration of governor Wright ; their low lands and swamps began to be cleared, and cultivated ; and the colony enjoyed such prosperity, that in 1773, their annual exports amounted to about 120,000 pounds sterling.

In 1763, king George III. annexed to Georgia, all the lands lying between the river Altamaha and St. Mary.

In 1785, Georgia adopted her first free constitution, and the legislature incorporated the university of Georgia. In 1798, Georgia amended, and adopted the present constitution.

The remainder of the history of Georgia, will be carried forward collectively, with the United States.



#### GENERAL REMARKS ON PART II.

In the sketch here given, of the rise and progress of the colonies south of the Hudson river, we are led to notice a variety of character, and discordant interests ; and each indepen-

dently pursuing its own. To accomplish this, they had governments to form, the forest to subdue, the Indians to keep quiet, and their lands to obtain, either by purchase, or conquest, which often involved them in long and bloody savage wars. These common objects engrossed their whole attention, and served as a bond of union, to support them in their efforts to clear and settle the country.

*Manners and Customs.*—These were not only different, in the several colonies, but in each they were peculiar to themselves. In New-York, they were rigidly characteristic of the Hollanders, from whence they severally emigrated, and possessed all the features, peculiar to the sober, neat, frugal, industrious, and plodding low Dutch. In Virginia, they felt and indulged the pride and ostentation of highborn Englishmen, and while they scorned the rigid manners and customs of the puritans of the north, indulged in all the luxury, effeminacy, and dissipation of their countrymen, under the reign of king Charles II. In Carolina the excesses, and licentiousness of the first emigrants, were almost peculiar to themselves, but from the times of the settlements of the several protestant colonies, from France, Germany, Scotland and Ireland, the manners and customs of the Carolinas were greatly changed, and assumed a more fixed and permanent character.—Maryland commenced her settlement under more favourable auspices; although they were Roman catholics, they received from their leader, lord Baltimore, a liberal and fixed character, that rendered their manners and customs permanent and respectable. Pennsylvania, Delaware and New Jersey, were generally quakers, and their settlements commenced under a system of manners and customs, peculiar to that people.—Neat, frugal, temperate, honest and industrious, they paid the natives liberally for their land, and treated them fairly and honorably; lived among them as brethren, and were the most exempt from Indian wars of any of the American colonies.

*Religion.*—In this, these colonies differed as much as in their manners and customs, which may serve to show, in some measure, the reciprocal influence they have upon each other. In New-York, the Dutch reformed religion generally prevailed, for this was the religion of their country. In Virginia, the religion of the Episcopal church of England, generally prevailed, for this was the prevailing religion of their country.—In Carolina, whatever religion they may be supposed to have had in their early period, was of a mixed character, until the



protestant colonies commenced their settlements ; after that time, their religious character became more fixed, and respectable. In Maryland, the Roman catholic religion was the standard of the first settlers, and for the free enjoyment of this, lord Baltimore led his colony into the wilds of America, and commenced the settlement of Maryland. The colony continued to enjoy their religion, until the protestant reign of William and Mary commenced in England ; from that time, religious dissensions arose, and distracted the colony, until they subverted the established religion of the government ; and the dissenters introduced, and fixed the protestant religion by law, which had become the prevailing religion, at the close of this period, and still continues. The religion of the three other colonies, was that of the denomination called quakers, or friends, and the great William Penn, who settled the colony of Pennsylvania, was considered as the leader, and father of this people in America, and he was revered by them, next to their original founder, George Fox. The practical principles of this religion, peace on earth and good will to men, secured to these colonies, the rich enjoyments of civil and religious institutions, and a general peace and harmony with the Indians.

*Trade and Commerce.*—Trade and commerce commenced in these colonies, with their origin, and have formed the leading features of their character. Furs and peltry, were the first articles of traffic, which were procured from the Indians, and generally for such trifles as rendered the trade very profitable, when they were exported to England. Tobacco, in the southern colonies, was also an article of considerable export, particularly in Virginia and Maryland. As the settlements extended, beef, pork, lard, wheat, flour, and some live stock, were added to their exports, in large quantities. About the beginning of the 18th century, rice and tar, in Carolina, were added to the above articles. These taken collectively, formed the basis of the exports from the middle and southern colonies, for which they received in exchange W. India and European goods ; but the latter, were received principally from G. Britain, because, by her commercial acts, she engrossed, as far as possible, the foreign trade of her American colonies. Ship building did not commence and flourish early, in these colonies, as it had done in New England, which gave to Great Britain the principal part of their carrying trade.

*Arts and Manufactures.*—These were not known in the middle and southern colonies, any farther than was necessary

to construct their dwellings, erect bridges, mills, &c. and to manufacture coarse domestic cloths, for common use, and even these, were very limited in their extent. They had no fisheries, as in New-England, to encourage the art of ship-building, or serve as a nursery for seamen, to manage their foreign trade; which rendered the British navigation act, of 1651, more effectual in these colonies, than at the north. The art of printing was early introduced into New England; but at the close of this period, it is believed, not to have been introduced south of Pennsylvania. During the administration of governor Berkeley in Virginia, he "thanked God, that there was not a printing press in all the southern colonies."

*Population.*—The whole white colonial population, at the close of this period, has been estimated at 900,000; of which amount, the middle and southern colonies contained more than one half.

*Education.*—That system of education, which commenced with the settlement of New England, in their primary schools, grammar schools, and colleges, was not known in either of the middle or southern colonies, at the close of this period. The rich planters, and merchants, sent their sons abroad for their education, generally; but the middling, and lower classes of the people, remained in ignorance at home. As early as 1619 to 21, funds were raised in England and Virginia, to endow a public seminary at Henrico, and another at Charles city; but they both failed; and in 1690, these funds were applied to the support of William and Mary college, which was established and patronised, by the then reigning family in England. This was the only public seminary that had been established, at the close of this period, from the Hudson to Georgia.

*War.*—Wars with the Indians were common to all these colonies; but they did not any of them suffer from the ravages of the French, and the Canada Indians, in connection with the wars of New England, except New York. Her northern frontier was equally exposed to those savage depredations, that had been so distressing to New England, through this period, and which were closed by the conquest of Canada. In this conquest, New York and New England made a common cause. Virginia and the Carolinas suffered severely from Indian wars, until the capture of fort Duquesne, and the humiliation of the more southern Indians; but Pennsylvania, Maryland, Delaware and Jersey, were more favored, and suffered less from Indian ravages, than any of the other colonies.

# UNITED STATES.

---

## PART III.

---

### CHAPTER I.

#### CAUSES THAT LED TO THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION.

By the peace of 1763, Great Britain had triumphed over her enemies in the east and in the west, and become mistress of the seas, and arbiter of the world.—The colonies had triumphed over the French in Canada, and the savages of the wilderness, and laid the foundation of a lasting Indian peace ; but new troubles awaited them, more serious in their effects and consequences, than any they had yet endured, and from a quarter wholly un contemplated.

Great-Britain, jealous of the rising strength of the colonies, resolved to make an effort to check and control it. At this time, her navigation act, so called, of 1651, was in full force in America ; by which she engrossed all the trade of the colonies, and from which she derived such a revenue, as ought to have shown her where her true interest lay, and made her contented.

This degree of wisdom she did not possess ; but her avarice, combined with her jealousy, and lust of domination, led her to check this free trade, by a system of duties on commerce, under the authority of the following act, of 1764 : “ Whereas it is just and necessary, that a revenue be raised in America, to defray the expenses of defending, securing, and protecting the same, &c. We, the commons, &c. do give and grant unto your majesty, towards raising the sum of—— to be levied upon the following articles, therein specified, viz. upon all foreign clayed sugars, indigo, coffee, and all foreign produce, upon all wines except French, upon all wrought silks, and all calicoes, molasses and sirups, being the produce of a colony not under the dominion of Great Britain,” &c. All which duties, were to be paid into his majesty’s exchequer.†

† From the following acts of parliament, it may be seen how passive America had been, under the restrictions of her trade, and from which

This act enforced the collection of these duties in the courts of admiralty, and ordered all duties to be paid in specie ; both of which aimed a mortal blow at the liberty and prosperity of America.

Well might the colonies take the alarm, at such a bold stretch of power, and well might they sound the alarm through the country. The sagacious politicians of America saw a cloud arising, under this act, that threatened to destroy their just rights and dearest interests forever.

It had been a maxim interwoven in the fundamental principles of the colonial governments, "that taxation and representation, were, and ought to be, inseparable." Impressed with the importance of this truth, the colonies demanded, by way of petition to the crown, that the taxes might be removed, and the colonies left free to tax themselves, or be admitted to an equal representation in the government.

Deaf to the remonstrances of the colonies, the taxes were continued by the ministry, and rigidly enforced by the naval commanders, stationed upon the American coast. This led the colonies to appoint committees of correspondence, to call up the attention of the people, and promote a general union of sentiment and action.

Instead of listening to the prayers and remonstrances of the colonies, and removing the taxes, the ministry added the duty on stamps, termed the stamp act, which passed in March, 1765.†

G. Britain argued that she would continue to be passive. In 1732, an act was passed, prohibiting the exportation of hats from America, and restricting the number of apprentices, taken by hatters. In 1750, an act prohibited the erection of any mill, for slitting or rolling iron, or any plating forge, to work with a tilt hammer, or any furnace, for making steel, in the colonies. Also, all wools or woollen goods, the produce of America, were prohibited to be exported from one province to another, in any manner whatever.

† This act ordained, that all instruments of writing, such as notes, bonds, deeds, &c. should be executed on stamped paper, throughout the colonies, or be null and void by law, all which stamped paper, should pay a duty to the crown. While this system of measures was under discussion in parliament, Charles Townsend thus expressed himself in debate :

"These Americans, our own children, planted by our care, nourished by our indulgence, protected by own arms, until they are grown to a good degree of strength and opulence ; will they now turn their backs upon us, and grudge to contribute their mite to relieve us from the heavy load which overwhelms us?"

Col. Barre caught the words, and, with a vehemence becoming a true soldier, rose and said :

When this had passed, doctor Franklin, then in London, wrote Mr. Charles Thompson,† at Philadelphia, and thus expressed himself: “The sun of liberty is set, you must light up the candles of industry and economy.” To which Mr. Thompson replied, “I fear other lights may become necessary.”

To guard against colonial opposition to this system of taxation, as well as to keep the peace in America, it was contemplated by the ministry, that the revenue on stamps would support an armed force. Lord Grenville introduced another bill, authorising military officers in America, to quarter their troops upon the people, in private houses. This bill, corrupt as it was, passed in part, and ordered the legislatures of the several colonies, to provide by law, for the support of the troops.

Thus the system of despotism was unfolded at one view, and the colonies saw nothing before them, but resistance or slavery; even the slavery of Ireland, at the point of the bayonet.

“*Planted by your care!* No! your oppression planted them in America; they fled from your tyranny, into a then uncultivated land, where they were exposed to almost all the hardships, to which human nature is liable, and among others, to the savage cruelty of the enemy of the country, a people, the most subtle, and I take upon me to say, the most truly terrible, of any people that ever inhabited any part of God’s earth; and yet, actuated by principles of true English liberty, they met all these hardships with pleasure, compared with those they suffered in their own country, from the hands of those that should have been their friends.

“*They nourished by your indulgence!* They grew by your neglect, as soon as you began to care about them, that care was exercised, in sending persons to rule over them, in one department and another, who were, perhaps, the deputies of the deputies of some members of this house, sent to spy out their liberties, to misrepresent their actions, and to prey upon them: men, whose behavior, on many occasions, has caused the blood of those sons of liberty to recoil within them: men, promoted to the highest seats of justice, some of whom, to my knowledge, were glad, by going to foreign countries, to escape the vengeance of the laws in their own.

“*They protected by your arms!* They have nobly taken up arms in your defence, have exerted their valor, amidst their constant and laborious industry, for the defence of a country, whose frontiers, while drenched in blood, its interior parts have yielded for your enlargement, the little savings of their frugality, and the fruits of their toils. And believe me, remember, I this day told you so, that the same spirit which actuated that people at first, will continue with them still.”

† Afterwards secretary to congress.

The patriots of Virginia, George Johnston and Patrick Henry, kindled the spark of liberty, which burst forth in a mighty blaze, and illuminated the country with their spirited resolves, in May.† These were reciprocated through the colonies, and led to the convention of a general congress at New-York, in October. This, like the grand assembly at Albany, in 1754, gave union, strength, and spirit to the colonies.—The sons of those pilgrims, who had subdued the forest, the savage and the French, lost not a moment in their choice, but rallied round the standard of liberty, and stood forth, the champions of their country's rights.

Tumults commenced in Boston, and spread through the country. Acts of non-importation were passed, that lessened the imports from Britain, this year, £880,811.

At this time, the free white population of these colonies, was estimated at 926,000 ; extending on the sea coast, from Georgia to Maine ; yet their manly resistance, supported by the influence of the great Wm. Pitt, compelled the British ministry to repeal the stamp act ; and in March, 1766, his majesty went to the house of peers, and gave his royal sanction to the act of repeal.

Great was the joy in London ; the city was illuminated ; the ships displayed their colors, and all was a scene of re-

† In these resolutions, Virginia led the way. On the meeting of the house of burgesses, Patrick Henry presented, among others, the following, which were substantially adopted.

*Resolved*, That his majesty's liege people of this his ancient colony, have enjoyed the rights of being thus governed by their own assembly, in the article of taxes, and internal police, and that the same have never been forfeited, or yielded up, but have been constantly recognized by the king and people of Britain.

*Resolved*, therefore, That the general assembly of this colony, together with his majesty, or his substitutes, have, in their representative capacity, the only exclusive right and power, to lay taxes and imposts, upon the inhabitants of this colony ; and that every attempt to vest such power in any other person, or persons, whatsoever, than the general assembly aforesaid, is illegal, unconstitutional and unjust, and hath a manifest tendency to destroy British, as well as American liberty.

*Resolved*, That his majesty's liege people, the inhabitants of this colony, are not bound to yield obedience to any law, or ordinance whatever, designed to impose any taxation whatever, upon them, other than the laws or ordinances of the general assembly aforesaid.

*Resolved*, That any person who shall, by speaking or writing, assert or maintain, that any person or persons, other than the general assembly of this colony, have any right or power to impose, or lay a tax on the people here, shall be deemed an enemy of this his majesty's colony.

joicing. The joyful tidings flew like lightning to the shores of America, and the colonies were filled with transports of joy. The bold declaration of the great commoner, Pitt, "*You have no right to tax America ; I am glad she has resisted,*" became the topic of the day, and he the idol of the people.

The clause in this act of repeal, styled the *declaratory act*, was, if possible, more hostile to the peace and interest of the colonies, than the stamp act itself. This pernicious clause, "*Parliament has, and of right ought to have, power to bind the colonies in all cases what ever,*" finally severed the nation, and established the independence of the colonies.

America felt the elevated ground on which she stood, from the high acquisition she had gained, the saving clause in the act of repeal notwithstanding, and ascribed the victory to the impression she had made on commerce ; hence she concluded, that she might always wield that weapon with success, should she ever have another occasion.

Great Britain at the same time, felt her honor, as well as her interest wounded, and lost not a moment in seeking redress.

In 1767, Charles Townsend, chancellor of the exchequer, called up the attention of parliament to the declaratory act, and pledged his honor, that the same might be enforced. To accomplish this, he introduced a bill into parliament, for granting certain duties to his majesty, on glass, paper, painter's colors and tea, imported into America ; which was passed into a law.

This bill opened the wound of the stamp act afresh, and roused the same excitement in America, that the bill of ship money had done in England, the last century, and raised the same opposition. This bill contained a sweeping clause, which empowered the king to establish a civil list in the colonies, upon which he might levy taxes at pleasure, to an indefinite amount. An act was also passed, for establishing a board of commissioners at Boston, to superintend the customs, and manage the revenue. An act also provided, that British troops should be supported, at the expense of the colonies in America.

On the 27th of May, a bill passed in parliament, "*for restraining the assembly of New-York from passing any act, until they had complied with the act of parliament, for furnishing his majesty's troops with the necessaries required by the act.*" This act was signed by the king, the 2d of July following.

This act unfolded the whole system of arbitrary power, which the ministers had assumed, and called forth from the house of burgesses in Virginia, the following remark : “ If parliament can compel the colonies to furnish a single article to the troops sent over, they may by the same rule, oblige them to furnish clothes, arms, and every other necessary, even to the pay of the officers and soldiers ; a doctrine replete with every mischief, and utterly subversive of every thing dear and valuable.”

This act of parliament took effect in New-York, and the powers of the assembly were suspended, one whole year, which brought them to terms. They complied with the act, and their functions were restored ; but when they attempted to co-operate with the other colonies, by their resolves, to support the grand system of opposition ; the governor dissolved them.

Alarmed at such daring innovations ; impressed with a just sense of their situation, and alive to their best rights and dearest interests, the colonies again roused to the contest, and opened their whole battery of resolves, petitions, addresses and remonstrances, with which they had withstood the stamp act ; together with their general associations of non-importation.

This commanding attitude of the colonies, alarmed lord Hillsborough, secretary of state for American affairs, and he wrote to all the crown governors in the colonies, to exert their influence, to suppress these combinations. This opened the war between the governors and the people ; and the scenes of the stamp act, were extensively renewed.

At the June session of Massachusetts assembly, in 1768, governor Bernard, by order of the British minister, demanded that they should rescind a particular act of a former assembly ; to which Mr. Otis replied, “ When lord Hillsborough knows that we will not repeal our acts, he should apply to parliament to rescind theirs. *Let Britain rescind her measures, or she is lost forever.*”

The public mind was now ripe for an explosion, and an incident occurred that lit up the fire.

On the 10th of June, the officers of the customs seized a sloop, belonging to John Hancock esq. while in the act of discharging a cargo of wine. Resistance was made, but without effect. The people rose in a tumultuous manner, to the number of about 2000 ; beat and wounded the officers of the customs ; demolished their houses, and renewed the scenes of



the stamp act, so fully, that the commissioners of the customs fled to the castle, under the protection of the governor, until the storm was over.

Lord Hillsborough had anticipated these scenes in Boston, and written, on the 8th of June, to general Gage, and admiral Hood, at Halifax, to send a military force from that station to Boston, to protect the commissioners of the revenue. On the 11th of August, general Gage communicated this order to the governor of Massachusetts, and informed him, that he had sent over one regiment, with a small naval force, to protect the harbor of Boston. On the first of October, the fleet entered the port of Boston, and proceeded to land the troops, under cover of their guns, without opposition; and they were quartered in Faneuil Hall and the Town House, until other accommodations could be provided.

In February, 1769, the house of lords passed sundry bills, highly indicative of the resentment they felt, towards the proceedings of Massachusetts, with which the house of commons concurred, and both houses united in an address to his majesty, applauding the firmness of his measures, and assuring him of their support.

They also besought his majesty "to direct the governor of Massachusetts to procure the fullest information, touching all treasons, and misprisons of treason, committed within the colony, since the 30th of December, 1767, and to transmit the same, together with the names of the persons, who were the most active in such offences, to one of the secretaries of state, in order that his majesty might issue a special commission, for inquiring of, hearing and determining the same offences, within the realm of Great Britain; pursuant to the statute of the 35th of Henry VIII."

The indignation which this address excited in America, can never again be either felt or expressed. The following resolution of the house of burgesses, in Virginia, may serve to shew the sense, as well as the firmness of the colonies at large, viz.

"Resolved, That this house has the exclusive right to tax their constituents; as well as their just right, to petition their sovereign, for the redress of grievances, and also to procure the concurrence of the other colonies, in praying for the interposition of his majesty, in favor of the violated rights of America. And that all trials for treasons, or misprisons, or any other crimes whatsoever, committed in the colony, ought to be tried before the courts of his majesty, in that colony;

and that the seizing of any person, residing in that colony, suspected of any crime whatsoever, committed therein, and sending such persons to places beyond sea, to be tried, was highly derogatory to the rights of British subjects." The next day, lord Bottetourt the governor, dissolved the assembly.

The same resolutions were passed in Carolina, and the same effects followed, from governor Tryon.

In 1768, the non-importation association had become general throughout the colonies, under the motto of "United we conquer ; divided we die."

In Massachusetts, the fire raged with increased violence. Here were the foreign troops, and here was the focus of the revolution.

The Massachusetts house of assembly, by the firmness of their resolves, extorted the following acknowledgement from the governor :

"Gentlemen, I have no authority over his majesty's ships in this port, or his troops in this town," which led them to pass the following resolve : "that we can proceed no farther with business, while surrounded with an armed force."† The governor adjourned the general court, to hold their sittings at Cambridge.

The governor next requested the house, to make provision for the expenses of the troops ; which they, by their resolves, absolutely refused.

The whole colonies had now become sensibly alive to the oppressions they felt ; their resolves reached Britain, which caused an attempt in the house of commons, to repeal the obnoxious duties, supported by the clamor of the citizens of London ; but without effect. Lord North appeared at the head of the opposition, and thus expressed the sense of parliament : "However prudence, or policy, may hereafter induce us to repeal the late paper and glass act, *I hope we shall never think of it, until we have brought America to our feet.*"

Lord Hillsborough, at the close of this session of parliament, attempted to sooth the irritability of the colonies, and soften down their feelings, as well as their measures, by the following circular, which he addressed to the governors of all the colonies—May 13, 1769.

"It is the intention of his majesty's ministers, to move in the next parliament, that the duties on glass, paper, and col-

† A park of artillery was planted in front of the state house, with muzzles pointed directly towards the seat of justice and the laws.

ers, be removed, as having been laid, contrary to the true principles of commerce ;” with assurances at the same time, “ that a design to propose to parliament any further taxes on America, for the purpose of raising a revenue, has at no time been entertained.”

This was plausible, but it took no effect. The duty of three pence per pound, remaining on tea, shewed to the colonies, that enough of taxes was retained, to establish the principle in the declaratory act, “ that Great Britain claims the right of binding the colonies in all things whatsoever.” This to them, amounted to the same, as if the whole taxes had been retained ; because the principle was the same, and this was the real point in question.

Governor Bernard was recalled by his majesty, in June, and in August, he embarked for England, leaving lieutenant-governor Hutchinson in the chair of Massachusetts.

---

## CHAPTER II.

### CAUSES THAT LED TO THE REVOLUTION, CONTINUED.

Unfortunate collisions between the troops and citizens of Boston, had been frequent, and the public peace had often been disturbed ; these collisions had engendered strife, and bitterness between the parties, and violence often ensued.

On the 2d of March, 1770, an affray took place between a number of soldiers and rope-makers, which became serious, and led to the collection of a mob at evening. At 9 o'clock, the populace were assembled at the ringing of the bells, and commenced an attack upon the main guard, accompanied with the cry of, “ kill the soldiers, kill the soldiers.”

The officer of the guard, resented this outrage, and ordered the men to fire on the populace, which was obeyed in part ; three were instantly killed ; five were dangerously, and several slightly wounded—March 5, 1770.

The shock was inexpressibly great ; the town was instantly alarmed ; they beat to arms, with the general cry of “ turn out with your guns.” The citizens immediately assembled to the number of several thousands, both with and without arms. At the same time, the lieutenant-governor called on the officer of the guard, (captain Preston) and demanded the reason why

he fired upon the people without orders? To which he replied, "we were insulted." The lieutenant-governor instantly passed on to meet the council, and on his way, attempted to appease the populace.

On the morning of the 6th, the lieutenant-governor assembled his council, and by permission, lieutenant colonels Dalrymple and Carr, appeared in the council. The people, at the same time, assembled in town-meeting, in a vast concourse, and in great rage, where they passed the following resolve, and sent it by a special committee to the governor:—"It is the unanimous voice of this meeting, that nothing can prevent blood and carnage, and restore the peace of the town, but the immediate removal of the troops." The lieutenant colonel commandant returned for answer, "that he readily consented, that the offending (29th) regiment, should be removed." At the receipt of this report, (3 o'clock, P. M.) the town meeting had increased to about three thousand.—They returned another resolve, "the whole of the troops must be removed." To which the venerable Samuel Adams, who bore the message to the governor, added, "If you can remove the 29th, you can remove the 14th, and it is at your peril, if you do not."

The lieutenant-governor appealed to the council for advice, and whilst the question thus balanced, Mr. secretary Oliver, frankly told the governor, "you must either comply with the demands of the people, or prepare to leave the province."

Captain Preston and his guard were taken into custody the next day, and committed to prison for trial.

On the 8th of March, one of the wounded men died, and the funeral of the slain, was attended by an unusual concourse of the citizens of Boston, and the neighboring towns; under the solemnity of the largest and most interesting procession, that was ever witnessed in Boston. The mournful peal of all the bells in Boston, Charlestown and Roxbury, tolled their solemn knell; which gave an inexpressible gloom to the scene.

The troops were all removed down to the castle, and general tranquility was so far restored, as to admit the trial of captain Preston to commence, on the 24th, in due form. The crime for which he stood indicted, was murder.

The counsel for the prisoner, were John Adams and Josiah Quincy esq's. These distinguished sons of liberty, warm

as had been their emotions and expressions, in the cause of their injured country, became cool and disinterested, in the court of justice, and displayed the magnanimity of their characters, in the defence of their client. On the 30th, a virtuous, independent jury, regardless of the emotions of their own breasts, or the rage of popular opinion, returned a verdict of not guilty.

The trial of the eight soldiers of the guard, who actually fired on the people, commenced the next day, upon the same indictment. They were defended by the same counsel; and after a trial of five days, were in the same manner acquitted.

It was remarked of Mr. Adams, that his arguments to shew under what a variety of circumstances, murder was actually reduced to man-slaughter, were so luminous, that they induced the popular leaders to change their ground, and turn their attention to the militia, as the best defence of liberty.

On the 26th of September, the governor informed the house, that the troops were to be withdrawn from the castle, and their place was to be supplied with such other regular troops, as his majesty should be pleased to appoint to that station, and be subject to the command of general Gage.

Struck with alarm, at this intelligence, the assembly saw before them the awful crisis. They passed a resolve, "appointing Wednesday, the 3d of October next, to be observed by both houses, as a day of prayer, to seek the Lord for his direction and blessing." This was sent up to the council, and approved unanimously. The assembly were at this time in session at Cambridge, by order of the governor.

In January, 1771, a recent grant of £2000, by the assembly of New-York, for the support of British troops, raised violent commotions in that city. Anonymous publications were circulated, to inflame the passions of the people; calling upon them to assemble in the fields. About 1400 obeyed the summons, and repaired to the fields, where they expressed by a resolve, their disapprobation of the acts of the legislature, granting money for the support of British troops; appointed a committee to communicate their doings to the assembly, and quietly dispersed.

In the years 1771 and 2, general arrangements were made throughout the colonies, by corresponding committees, specially appointed, to ascertain the strength of the sons of liberty, in every town. The public mind was at the same time, excited by a succession of the most spirited publications, on the side of liberty, and the rights of the country.

At this time, the citizens of Providence burnt and destroyed the Gaspee schooner, a noted vexatious revenue cutter in that river, which served to give impulse to the public feeling.

Town meetings continued to multiply, and their resolves were transmitted to the general committee in Boston. A general summary of the whole may be seen in the following :

Resolved, " That it is the first and 'highest social duty of this people, to consider of, and seek ways and means for a speedy redress of these mighty grievances and intolerable wrongs ; and that for the obtaining of this end, this people are warranted by the laws of God and nature, in the use of every rightful act, and energy of policy, stratagem, or force."

In 1773, a traitorous and perfidious correspondence of governor Hutchinson, judge Oliver, and five others, with the British ministry, was detected and sent to America, by doctor Franklin, (then in London) where it circulated through the country, in the public prints, and gave high impulse to the public mind. The assembly of Massachusetts immediately forwarded a petition to his majesty, praying for a speedy removal of the governor, &c.

When the news of the destruction of the Gaspee schooner arrived in England, the ministry obtained an act of parliament under the following title, viz. " An act for the better securing his majesty's dock-yards, magazines, ships, ammunition, stores, &c." by which the penalty of death was denounced against all who should destroy, or aid and assist in destroying any of the articles named in this act ; and also subjected the offenders to a trial in any shire or county in England.

Armed with these powers, parliament next proceeded to pass another act, authorising the East India company to export their teas, free from duty, in any part of the world.† This would give tea to the American colonies, with the duty to government of three pence per pound, cheaper than the then current price.

The company were aware of the evils that might ensue, and offered to government a duty of six pence, on all teas exported, if they would withdraw the colonial duty of three pence ; but this was rejected, and the East India company shipped to each of the cities of Philadelphia, New York and Boston, 600 chests, and a general distribution in like proportion to the other colonies.

† The East India company had on hand at that time, about seventeen million pounds of tea.

These measures were rightly appreciated in America, and combinations were immediately formed by the merchants, throughout the colonies, to resist the measures, and oppose both the landing and sales of the tea; denouncing as tories and traitors, all who either aided or assisted in thus violating the liberties of their country.

The consignees of the tea, generally, resigned their trusts, to avoid the rage of the populace; and the tea was either sent back or stored, by all the cities to which it was shipped, except Boston. The consignees at Boston had refused to resign. A town meeting was called; the tea ships were seized and secured by a strong guard; the citizens of the neighboring towns repaired to Boston, to witness the scene that was passing in town meeting, then held under that liberty tree, which had been so conspicuous in the riots of the stamp act.

Alarmed for their safety, the consignees then requested permission of the governor to resign, but he refused. The die was now cast; the town meetings were adjourned from day to day, until the impatience of the populace could no longer be restrained. The captain of one of the tea ships applied to the governor for a pass for his vessel, that he might return to England, which the governor refused.

The sound of the war-whoop burst from the front gallery of the "Old South," (where this meeting was held) and the meeting was dissolved; but the Mohawks (citizens in disguise) rushed out and ran down to the wharf; entered the tea ships and threw into the dock more than 300 chests of tea; dispersed and retired quietly to their homes.

This act of destroying the tea, was a full declaration of what was afterwards expressed, "that they had taken a decided stand, and were resolved to resist all acts of oppression, in blood up to their knees."

Notwithstanding the warmth of feeling so openly expressed by all public bodies, at this eventful day, and notwithstanding the firm and energetic measures which had been, and continued to be pursued, in resisting the aggressions of Britain; *the great body of the people were anxious for a reconciliation with the mother country, and hoped that the repeal of the duty on tea would restore the same harmony, as the repeal of the stamp act had done before.* But the leading few saw that this was now impossible; and at the head of these, stood Samuel Adams, who not only felt, but often declared in the circle of

his friends, "the country shall be independent, and we will not be content with any thing short of it."

Early in March following, his majesty announced to parliament, the proceedings of the town of Boston, which so highly incensed that body, that they passed the famous "Boston Port Bill," laying a commercial interdiction upon that town — 1774.

From this eventful moment, the movements of the parties, both in England and America, progressed in regular succession, to meet the awful crisis before them.

---

### CHAPTER III.

#### CAUSES THAT LED TO THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION CONTINUED BATTLE OF LEXINGTON.

On the 5th of September, 1774, a delegation of all the colonies, except North Carolina, assembled at Philadelphia, agreeable to their appointment, and chose Peyton Randolph, esq. of Virginia, for their president, and Charles Thompson, esq. of Pennsylvania, for their secretary. This congress, by their first resolve, placed all the colonies upon an equality, by declaring "that in determining all questions, each colony shall have one vote."

The delegation from North Carolina, soon after appeared and took their seats, which rendered the amount of the whole number fifty-two, besides the president. Thus organized, congress passed numerous resolves, in vindication of the cause of their suffering country, and in support of the measures that had been pursued in her defence, particularly for the support of the town of Boston, &c.

Congress next entered into a general bond of union, which consisted of fourteen articles, for themselves and their constituents, "to be and remain in force, until the obnoxious acts, or parts of acts, relating to these colonies, shall be repealed;" signed by all the members, October, 1774.

Congress next resolved, that an address be prepared, and sent to the inhabitants of Great Britain.

They next resolved, that a petition be presented to his majesty.

Congress next resolved, that letters be addressed to the in-



habitants of Canada, Nova Scotia, St. Johns, and Georgia, inviting them to mutual aid, in the common cause of British America.†

These were all dignified and masterly productions ; did honor to the illustrious statesmen of the day, and were of great utility, in carrying forward and supporting the common cause of the colonies, both in Europe and America.

Congress at the same time, published a manifesto, unfolding to the world, the causes of the contest, and the resolutions of the colonies. They next called up their attention to their armed vessels, and the defence of their sea-ports. They then proceeded to establish a general post-office, and appointed Benjamin Franklin, post-master general. They also established a hospital for 20,000 men. These general outlines being settled, all parties prepared for action.

Congress further resolved, “ that another congress be called on the 10th of May next, unless the obnoxious acts should be repealed ;” and on the 26th of October, they dissolved their sittings.

The wisdom, firmness, dignity, and patriotic spirit of this congress, will shed a lustre on the American character, to the latest generation.

Pending this session of congress, general Gage issued writs, and called an assembly or general court, of Massachusetts, at Salem. Ninety members met, and the general countermanded his writs ; but the members convened, resolved themselves into a provincial congress, chose John Hancock esq. president, and adjourned to Concord.

This congress assumed the direction and government of the affairs of the province, and continued their sittings, by adjournment, from time to time, and place to place, as circumstances required.

Such was the power of habit, arising from a long and steady obedience to the laws, in a well regulated state of society, that Massachusetts was, in all respects, as free from every degree of licentiousness, when all courts of law were suspended, and one great bustle of military preparation, usurped the place of the laws, as she ever had been, in times of the most profound peace.

The firmness of the town of Boston, under all her suffer-

† Messrs. Lee, Cushing and Dickinson, were the committee who prepared these addresses.

ings, shed a lustre upon herself, and a glory upon her country, which gained her the universal applause of that day, and which will be transmitted down to the latest posterity.

The king met his new parliament, on the 30th of November, with a high-toned speech, in which he announced the rebellious state of the colonies, particularly Massachusetts, and called on parliament to maintain and defend the measures he had adopted, to bring the colonies to obedience. Parliament met this speech by an overwhelming majority, in favor of the king. Lord North disclosed the views of the ministry, in the following declaration to Mr. Quincy :

“ We must try what we can do to support the authority we have claimed over America ; if we are defective in power, we must sit down contented, and make the best terms we can ; no body can blame us, after we have done our utmost ; but until we have tried what we can do, we can never be satisfied in receding,” &c.

But America had friends, as well as enemies, in England ; friends, who knew her strength, as well as worth ; friends, who wished to cultivate peace, both for the good of America, and the best interest of Britain. At the head of these friends, stood the great, the illustrious Wm. Pitt, earl of Chatham.

Mr. Quincy, who attended in the house of lords, on the 20th of December, when the minister opened his budget upon the affairs of America, thus describes the great champion of her cause.

“ Lord Chatham rose, like Marcellus, “ *Viros superimet omnes*,” he seemed to feel himself superior to those around him. His language, voice, and gesture, were more pathetic, than I ever saw or heard before, at the bar, or in the senate. He seemed like an old Roman senator, rising with the dignity of age, yet speaking with the fire of youth,” &c. He then proceeded :

“ My lords, these papers, now laid for the first time before your lordships, have been five or six weeks in the pockets of the minister, and notwithstanding the fate of this kingdom, hangs upon the event of this great controversy, we are but this mement called to a consideration of this important subject. My lords, I do not want to look into one of these papers ; I know their contents well enough already ; I know there is not a member in this house, but is acquainted with their contents also. There ought, therefore, to be no delay

in entering upon this matter ; we ought to proceed immediately," &c.

" I move my lords, that an humble address be presented to his majesty, most humbly to advise and beseech his majesty, that it may graciously please his majesty to direct, that orders be immediately despatched to general Gage, for removing the troops from the town of Boston, as soon as may be.

" The way, my lords, must be immediately opened for a reconciliation. It will soon be too late. I know not who advises the present measures ; I know not who advises a perseverance and enforcement of them ; but this I will say, that whoever advises them, ought to answer for it at his peril. I know that no one will avow, that he advises to these measures ; every one shrinks from the charge. But somebody has advised his majesty to these measures ; and if his majesty continues to hear such evil counsel, his majesty is undone. His majesty may indeed continue to wear the crown, but the American jewel out of it, it will not be worth the wearing.

" What more shall I say, my lords ? I will not say the kingdom is betrayed ; but this I will say, the nation is ruined. What foundation have we for our claims over America ? What is our right to persist in such cruel and vindictive measures, against that loyal, that respectable people ? They say you have no right to tax them without their consent, and they say rightly. Representation and taxation must go together ; they are inseparable. Yet there is hardly a man in our streets, be he ever so poor, but thinks he must be legislator for America. Our American subjects, is a common phrase in the mouth of the lowest order of our citizens ; but property, my lords, is the sole and entire dominion of the owner. None can meddle with it ; it is a unity ; a mathematical point ; it is an atom, untangible by any but the proprietor. Touch it, and the owner loses his whole property. The touch contaminates the whole mass ; the whole property vanishes," &c.

" In the last parliament, all was anger, all was rage. Administration did not consider what was practicable, but what was revenge. *Sine clade victoria*, was the language of the ministry, the last session ; but every body knew ; an idiot might know, that such would not be the issue. For the ruin of the nation, was a matter of no concern, if ministers might be revenged. Americans were abused, misrepresented and traduced, in the most outrageous manner, in order to give a

color, and urge on to the most precipitate, unjust, cruel, and vindictive measures, that ever disgraced a nation.

“Gnossius hæc Rhadamanthus, habet durissima regna.

“Castigatque, auditque dolos.

“My lords, the very infernal spirits, they *chastise*, castigate; *sed auditque*. My lords, the very spirits of the infernal regions, *hear before they punish*. But how have these respectable people behaved, under all their grievances? With unexampled patience, with unparalleled wisdom.

“They chose delegates by their suffrages; no *bribery*, no *corruption*, no *influence* here, my lords. Their representatives met, with the sentiments and temper, and speak the sentiments of the whole continent. For genuine sagacity, for singular moderation, for solid wisdom, manly spirit, sublime sentiments, and simplicity of language; for every thing honorable and respectable, the congress at Philadelphia, shone unrivalled.

“This wise people speak out. They do not hold the language of slaves; they tell you what they mean. They do not ask you to repeal your laws, as a *favor*; they claim it as a *right*; they *demand* it. They tell you they will not submit to them; and I tell you the acts must be repealed; they will be repealed; you cannot enforce them.

“Repeal, therefore, my lords, I say. But repeal will not satisfy this enlightened, this spirited people. What! repeal a bit of paper! repeal a piece of parchment! that alone, my lords, will not do. You must go through; you must declare you have no right to tax, then they may trust you; then they may have confidence in you.

“My lords, there are three million of whigs. Three million of whigs, my lords, with arms in their hands, are a formidable body. ’Twas the whigs, my lords, that set his majesty’s royal ancestors upon the throne of England. I hope, my lords, there are yet double the number of whigs in England, there are in America. I hope the whigs of both countries, will join, and make a common cause. Ireland is with America, to a man; the whigs of that country will, and those of this ought, to make the cause of America their own.

“The cause of ship money, was the cause of the whigs of England. *You shall not take my money without my consent*, is the doctrine and language of whigs. It is the doctrine, in support of which, I do not know how many names I *could*, I *may* call, in this house, among the living. I cannot say how

many I could join with me, and maintain those doctrines with their blood ; but among the dead, I could raise an host innumerable.

“ My lords, consistent with the preceding doctrines, and with what I ever have, and shall continue to maintain, I say, I shall oppose America, whenever I see her aiming at throwing off the *navigation act*, and other regulatory acts of trade, made, *bona fide*, for that purpose, and framed, and calculated for a reciprocation of interest, and the general extended welfare, and security of the whole empire. It is suggested, that such is their design ; I see no evidence of it. But to come to a certain knowledge of their designs upon this head, it would be proper, first to do them justice. Treat them as subjects, before you treat them as aliens, rebels and traitors.

“ My lords, deeply impressed with the importance of taking some healing measures, at this most alarming, distracted state of your affairs, though bowed down with a cruel disease,† I have crawled to this house, to give you my best experience and counsel ; and my advice is, to beseech his majesty, &c. this is the best I can think of. It will convince America, that you mean to try her cause in the spirit, and by the laws of freedom and fair inquiry, and not by codes of blood. How can she now trust you, with the bayonet at her breast ? She has all the reason in the world to believe, you mean either her death, or her bondage,” &c.

I regret that the limits of this work, will not permit me to insert the whole of this most masterly production. What I have inserted, will shew most clearly, that the hearts of ministers, were steeled against conviction ; that their passions had carminated their understandings, and that they were blinded by the grossest delusion.

The petition of the continental congress, had been presented to the king, and was now referred to the house of lords. This threw the house into a high fever. They denied the legality of that body, (congress) treated their petition with contempt, and rejected it without discussion, by a majority of 281 to 68.

On the 27th of February, Mr. Quincy sailed for America ; but he fell sick on his passage, and died, a short time before the ship reached her port of destination. Thus balanced, the parties moved forward, with a steady step, to the awful crisis before them ; and the destinies of America, were suspended

† The gout.

upon a thread, which the meanest ruffian was liable every moment to break, and drench the land in blood.

On the 18th of April, notice was given to Messrs. Samuel Adams and John Hancock, at Lexington, that general Gage was about to make a movement ; and a number of provincial officers dined together at Cambridge, in order to watch the motions of the enemy, and give the alarm accordingly. About midnight, a detachment, consisting of about eighteen hundred grenadiers and infantry, (the flower of the British army) under the command of lieutenant-colonel Smith, and major Pitcairn, embarked at the foot of the common, crossed over, and landed at Phipp's farm, and commenced their march for Concord, in quest of the American stores.

On the 19th, the detachment arrived at Lexington, and caused an alarm in that town, and vicinity.† The captain of the Lexington company of militia, assembled his men upon the green, (about 130) at 2 o'clock in the morning. No further intelligence of the enemy being received, the company was dismissed, after roll call, to assemble upon parade at the beat of drum. About four in the morning, the approach of the enemy gave the alarm ; the drums beat to arms, and those that were near, assembled again upon parade, (about 70) amidst a concourse of spectators, who were drawn together by the alarm. When the company was forming, major Pitcairn rode up at the head of his division, and with an imperious command, exclaimed, "*Disperse you rebels, throw down your arms and disperse.*" Regardless of the order, the company continued to form. Major Pitcairn advanced to the charge, fired his pistol, flourished his sword, and ordered his men to fire. The order was obeyed, accompanied with a huzza ; and the militia instantly dispersed. The fire was repeated, and the militia returned a scattering fire, as they fled, and took shelter under cover of the adjacent stone walls ; from whence they continued to fire. The enemy killed three upon the green, at their first fire, and five others behind the stone walls.

The detachment continued its march to Concord, to seize the American stores, which were the principal object of its destination. The conflict at Lexington, had given the alarm at Concord, and the militia assembled and stood in their defence ; but upon the approach of a strong regular force, they retired

† This alarm was given by ringing the bells, by signal guns, volleys, &c.

behind the river, and waited for aid from the neighboring towns.

Colonel Smith advanced with his whole force, and began the destruction of the military stores at Concord. Two 24 pounders were disabled, and their carriages destroyed, besides the wheels of several others, of a smaller size. Five hundred pounds of shot were thrown into the river and wells, &c. and about sixty barrels of flour broken in pieces, and half destroyed.

At this time the militia were reinforced from the adjacent towns, and advanced upon the enemy, under the command of major Butterick; a conflict began at the bridge; the enemy fired, and killed captain Davis, and one of his privates; the provincials returned the fire, and the enemy retreated, with the loss of several killed and wounded.† This detachment soon joined the main body, and colonel Smith attempted to lead back his troops to Boston. But the whole vicinity was in arms, and pressed upon his rear; whilst the provincial sharp-shooters, galled his flanks from the adjacent stone walls, hedges, and other coverts, which greatly endangered, and alarmed the officers, who were more immediately the objects of their vengeance. Major Pitcairn, who burnt the first powder at Lexington, dismounted, and led his division on foot: but his horse was taken by the provincials, together with his pistols in their holsters.

To check the ravages of the enemy, on their retreat, the rev. Mr. Payson, of Chelsea, headed a small detachment of militia, and killed, wounded, and captured a small detachment of the British, and recovered the plunder they were carrying off to Boston.

About sunset, the fugitives secured their retreat over Charlestown neck, covered by a party of about nine hundred regulars, under the command of lord Percy; and the next morning, they escaped safe into Boston. Colonel Smith, who received a wound in the expedition, had the honor to report to general Gage, that in obedience to his orders, he had marched to Concord, and destroyed such stores as were to be found; engaged the Yankees in several skirmishes, in which they had suffered severely; but being overpowered by numbers, he had been able to make good his retreat to Boston.

† One of the wounded enemy was killed with a hatchet, by a straggling pursuer, which gave rise to very extravagant reports from the British, after they returned to Boston.

with the loss of only 65 killed, 130 wounded, and 158 taken prisoners, total 403.

As soon as regular returns could be made by the provincials, their loss was found to be 50 killed, and 34 wounded, and four missing, total 88 ; which, deducted from 403, left a balance of success in their favor, of 315, besides the exulting triumph of pursuing the enemy about twenty miles, and driving them into close quarters.

Thus the conflict began ; blood was spilt, and the scene was opened.

The news of this conflict flashed like lightning through the country, and kindled a spirit of revenge, in those hardy sons of liberty, who rushed to the war, to take vengeance on the insulting foe. The heroes of the old war, put themselves at the head of their injured brethren, and enrolled themselves in the ranks of their country, to wipe out the stain, by the blood of the British.

General Ward, an old experienced officer, took the command (agreeable to his appointment) of the troops at Cambridge, as they collected from the neighboring country, and colonies, and general Gage soon found himself closely invested in Boston, by an army of 20,000 men.

When the tidings of the conflict at Lexington, reached the colonies at the south, they roused to the contest, with the same ardent, patriotic zeal, as the colonies at the north, and one universal impulse, in the cause of liberty, inspired the whole American family.

The whole white population of the colonies, at this time, amounted to about 3,000,000.

---

## CHAPTER IV.

AMERICAN REVOLUTION, CONTINUED, FROM THE BATTLE OF  
LEXINGTON, TO THE FALL OF MONTGOMERY BEFORE  
QUEBEC.

Thus armed against herself, Great Britain put forth all her efforts to prosecute the war, and bring her colonies "*at her feet.*"

Arrayed in one firm bond of union, under the guidance of her general congress, America committed her cause to God,



and entered the lists with Britain, then mistress of the seas, and arbiter of the world.

The provincial congress of Massachusetts addressed the following circular letter to the several colonies, bearing date, April 28th, 1775 :

“ We conjure you by all that is dear, by all that is sacred, that you give all possible assistance in forming an army, in defence of the country. Our all is at stake. Death and destruction are the certain consequences of delay. Every moment is infinitely precious ; an hour lost, may deluge your country in blood, and entail perpetual slavery, upon the few of your posterity that survive the carnage. We beg and entreat, as you will answer it to your country, to your consciences, and above all, as you will answer it to your God, that you will hasten, by all possible means, the enlistment of men, to form an army ; and send them forward to head-quarters, at Cambridge, with that expedition, which the vast importance, and instant urgency of the affairs demand.”

This circular gave an impulse to that ardent zeal, with which the battle of Lexington had inspired the valiant sons of liberty. They rallied to the contest ; obeyed the calls of their country ; flew to the relief of their brethren at Cambridge, and enrolled themselves as the soldiers of liberty.

Arduous were the duties of the heroes of the old war, on whom devolved the first, and most important services, of forming camps, embodying the troops, raw and undisciplined, yet full of zeal, for the rights and liberties of their country. In this interesting and trying scene, it is recorded of some officers, that they appeared at the head of their respective guards, day and night, by the week together, without repose, or even changing their clothes, to save the army from surprise, by a formidable, disciplined enemy.

At this eventful moment, colonel Ethan Allen was detached, by general Ward, and empowered to raise 400 men, upon the New Hampshire grants, (now Vermont) to surprise the forts of the enemy, upon lake Champlain. Colonel Allen repaired to Vermont, and commenced the service of enlisting the men.

At the same time, the patriots of Connecticut, under the direction of Messrs. Dean, Wooster, Parsons and others, concerted the same plans. Several officers of the militia proceeded to Bennington, where they met colonel Allen, and arranged the enterprise. The colonel proceeded to complete his complement of men, while the others procured such arms

stores, &c. as the expedition required. They fixed upon Castleton, as a place of rendezvous. Colonel Allen repaired to Castleton with 230 men, and joined the party, which then amounted to 172, and proceeded to post sentries upon all the roads, leading to fort Ticonderoga, to intercept all intelligence.

At this critical moment, colonel Benedict Arnold arrived from camp, attended only by his servant, and offered to take the command; but this was rejected, and he consented to act in concert with colonel Allen. Thus arrayed, these patriots moved forward to the object before them.

On the 10th of May, colonel Allen crossed over the lake, with a detachment of eighty three men, and surprised fort Ticonderoga, in the grey of the morning. The colonel summoned the fortress, "in the name of the great Jehovah, and the continental congress."<sup>†</sup> Captain Delaplace obeyed the summons, and delivered up the fort. The garrison, consisting of one lieutenant, one gunner, two sergeants, and forty-four rank and file, besides women and children, were taken prisoners of war, and sent down into Connecticut, for security.<sup>‡</sup>

Colonel Seth Warner crossed the lake, with the remainder of the party, surprised and took the fortress of Crown-Point. This fort contained more than 100 pieces of cannon.

Colonel Arnold embarked upon the lake in a small schooner, and captured an armed vessel, at the north end of the lake, and returned with his prize to Ticonderoga. Thus the command of lake Champlain was secured, and with it, a free communication with Canada.

During these operations in the north, general Gage contemplated an attack upon general Thomas, at Roxbury. The general's whole force consisted of only 700 militia, who were almost destitute of arms and ammunition. General Thomas learned the movements of general Gage, and practised upon him an old military stratagem, by displaying his forces. He marched his troops round a hill, in view of the enemy, through

<sup>†</sup> Congress convened at Philadelphia about 10 o'clock the same day.

<sup>‡</sup> The arms and military stores taken in this fort, were as follows, viz. 120 iron cannon, 6,424 pounds of ball, 50 swivels, two 10 inch mortars, one howitzer, one cohorn, 100 stand of arms, ten tons of musket balls, three cart loads of flints, thirty new gun carriages, a large quantity of shells, ten casks of powder, two brass cannon, thirty barrels of flour, eighteen barrels of pork, &c.; also a warehouse full of materials for boat building.

the day, and thus deceived general Gage, and prevented his attack. General Thomas was soon reinforced, and Roxbury preserved.

During these operations, the British foraging parties were often surprised and defeated, among the small islands of the bay, which inspired the Americans with courage and confidence, and taught them to face the British with firmness and success.

On the 25th, the three British generals, Howe, Clinton, and Burgoyne, arrived in Boston. These were expected "to bring the colonies at the feet of the ministry," the first campaign.

On the 27th, general Putnam, and doctor Warren, at the head of a party of provincials, defeated a strong British foraging party, upon the islands of the bay, and destroyed the armed vessel stationed for their defence. The same successes were renewed on the 30th, and the stock generally removed from those islands, which greatly distressed the enemy in Boston. All intercourse with the town was now closed.

The American army now began to suffer severely, by the small pox, which had been communicated from Boston. The scarcity of money also, became serious. At this time, the whole American force did not exceed 8000, officers and soldiers; and this was rather an assemblage of men, than an army. Such was the state of discipline, and such their privations, that nothing but their zeal for the rights of the country, kept them together.

On the 12th of June, general Gage issued his proclamation, offering pardon, &c. in the king's name, to all who should quietly submit to the royal authority, excepting Samuel Adams and John Hancock; denouncing, at the same time, as rebels and traitors, all such as should refuse this offered mercy, or aid and assist, in any way, or correspond with, such as should refuse to accept. It also declared the province under martial law, until the civil law could be restored.

This proclamation was considered as a public manifesto, and a prelude to some serious operations. The Americans watched the enemy closely.

On the 16th, colonel Prescott was detached, with 1000 men, to fortify Bunker's hill, in Charlestown; but by mistake in the night, he fortified Breed's hill, which lay contiguous to the former, and nearer to Boston. Struck with surprise at the firmness of this movement, general Gage saw at once, that

his own safety in Boston, depended very much, upon the strength of this position. He resolved to dislodge the Americans, as soon as possible. Accordingly, about noon of the 17th, he detached four battalions of infantry ; ten companies of grenadiers, and a suitable train of artillery, under the command of major-general Howe, and brigadier-general Pigot, to dislodge the provincials.

This force crossed over to Charlestown, where they were reinforced, and became 3000 strong. This whole force formed on the beach, and marched regularly to the combat ; a terrible cannonade commenced.

Colonel Prescott, supported by colonel Stark, of New-Hampshire, and captain Norton, of Connecticut, received the first shock of the enemy with firmness. Generals Warren, Pomeroy and Putnam, soon joined the detachment, and gave spirit and energy to the party. Charlestown, by order of general Gage, was now wrapt in flames, as the murderous Britons advanced to the charge.

The provincials, like the illustrious heroes of the plains of Abraham, reserved their fire, until the enemy had advanced within twelve rods ; they then opened a well directed fire of musketry, which was serious in its effects, and checked their pace. The explosion of musketry now became terrible ; the enemy gave way, and fled in disorder. Stung with mortification, they rallied to the charge ; again they were cut down, and thrown into disorder, by the destructive fire of the Yankees, and put to flight. At this eventful moment, general Clinton joined general Howe, and by the united exertions of British officers and British valor, the troops were once more led on to the charge, and the carnage again became terrible. At this critical moment, the powder of the provincials began to fail, and the soldiers rifled the cartridge boxes of the dead, to keep up their fire, even after the enemy had turned their flank, and brought their artillery to rake their trenches.

The British now redoubled their exertions, supported by a terrible cannonade from their ships and batteries ; the officers pressed on the troops with the bayonet, and the sword, in their rear ; the combat became close. The British entered the trenches, at the point of the bayonet ; the Yankees clubbed their muskets, and maintained their defence, until overpowered by numbers, they were constrained to retire. They retreated in good order, and regained their camp at Cambridge,

under a galling fire from the enemy's ships and batteries, which raked Charlestown neck, as they passed.

The brave general Warren fell gloriously on the field, in defence of his country, and his country's rights.

Not one action stands recorded, in honor of British valor, on the whole historic page, where her troops met with such matchless firmness, and desperate resistance, as was displayed by the Americans at Bunker's hill.

The loss in this action, as stated by general Gage, was 226 killed, 19 of whom were commissioned officers, 70 officers wounded; total, killed and wounded, 1054, rank and file.

The American loss amounted to 139 killed, 278 wounded, and 36 missing—total 453. The loss of general Warren, colonel Gardner, lieut. colonel Parker, and majors Moore and McClanay, was severely felt by America, and cast a gloom over the nation. This loss at Bunker hill, equalled the loss sustained by general Wolfe, upon the plains of Abraham, at the capture of Quebec; but in the loss of officers, it stands as 18 to 13 killed, and 70 to 66 wounded. From this, some true estimate can be formed, of that firmness and valor, the Americans displayed, in defence of Bunker hill.

Congress had assembled at Philadelphia, agreeable to appointment, on the 10th of May, and commenced their sittings.† The honorable Peyton Randolph, was again chosen president, and Charles Thompson esq. secretary.

On the 2d of June, they interdicted all traffic or intercourse with the enemy, by a special resolve.

On the 7th, congress assumed the style of the Twelve United Colonies, by a special resolve, which appointed a public fast on the 20th of July following.

On the 15th, congress appointed George Washington, esq. commander-in-chief of all the forces raised, or to be raised, in defence of the American colonies.

General Washington, then a member, accepted the trust with great modesty, declaring at the same time, "that he did not consider himself equal to the command he was honored with."

When the commission was made out and delivered to gen. Washington, congress pledged their lives, their fortunes, and their sacred honors, to support him in his arduous duties, in defence of his country.

Congress next proceeded to appoint the officers of the con-

† The morning of the capture of fort Ticonderoga.

tinental army, and their commissions were made out, and delivered to the general-in chief, for distribution.

During these proceedings, general Washington retired to his seat, at Mount Vernon ; set his house in order ; made preparations for the service, and on the 2d of July, commenced his journey, accompanied by general Lee, and several other gentlemen ; and actually arrived at Cambridge, in just fifteen days from the date of his commission. One universal expression burst from all parts of United America : "*Under God, Washington must be the savior of his country.*"

When the general had entered upon the duties of his appointment, and examined the returns of the army, he found himself at the head of about 14,000 men, without order, discipline, or military stores, (or rather with a very scanty supply) and destitute of most of the conveniences essential to a camp.

When the continental officers arrived, the general proceeded to deliver their commissions, and they entered with zeal and ardor, into a joint co-operation with his excellency, to diffuse a spirit of cleanliness, order, activity and discipline, throughout the army. New energies, and new efforts became universal.

The main body of the British army was posted at this time, very strongly, on Bunker's hill, commanded by his excellency general Howe. The other division of the British army, was strongly posted near Roxbury. Those two positions, together with the fleet and armed vessels, covered the town of Boston, and the corps-de-reserve, which commanded that station.

His excellency general Washington, took up his headquarters at Cambridge, with the main body of the American army. His right was secured by general Ward, strongly posted at Roxbury. His left was intrusted to the command of general Lee, who was strongly intrenched upon prospect hill. General Putnam and others, filled the intermediate points of attack, with about 3000 men.

Thus posted, the American army, firm to the righteous cause of their country, nobly surmounted all their embarrassments, and held their enemy in a state of siege.

Such was the ardent spirit of patriotism, in this country, that a battallion of rifle corps, ordered by congress, on the 14th and 22d of June, to be raised in Virginia and Pennsylvania, were raised, accoutred, and marched to the army,

where they were embodied, on the 7th of August following ; and all, without one cent of advance from the public treasury.

The want of powder and bayonets, greatly exposed the American army to an attack from the enemy, and it became the most urgent duty of the general-in-chief, to deceive the British general, until he could supply these deficiencies. These embarrassments were augmented by the want of clothes, camp utensils, tools for service, and engineers ; together with a disaffection among the officers, which arose from the congressional appointments. Many of the troops were to be discharged in November, and the longest service, did not exceed the last of December. Yet all these embarrassments were sustained, by that zeal and spirit, that flowed from a righteous cause.

The force of the enemy in Boston, was at this time, augmented by a reinforcement from England, to about 8000 men. General Washington called a council of war, to settle the plans of operation for the season ; and a general system of blockade was agreed upon, for the want of powder and bayonets, to carry the town of Boston by storm.

On the 1st of August, it was well ascertained, that the enemy had lost, in various ways, about 2500 of his original force, since the 19th of April, and from this it was concluded, that before the spring recruits could arrive, the British army would become more vulnerable.

In July, Georgia joined the confederacy, and America then took the title of " the Thirteen United States."

About this time, general Gage sent orders to New York, to invite all foreign seamen into his service, as volunteers. In the month of October, the town of Falmouth was burnt, in obedience to orders issued in the name of his majesty, to the commanders of his majesty's ships of war, to treat the Americans as rebels, and lay waste and destroy the seaports of all such as had taken part in the rebellion.

The flames of Falmouth, like the flames of Charlestown, flashed through the country, and roused the colonies afresh, to union and revenge. Congress fitted out several frigates, and caused two battalions of marines to be raised for the service ; and framed articles of war, for the government of the navy. General Washington also, employed several cruisers, to intercept the store ships of the enemy, for the immediate service of the army ; all which, produced a spirit of adven-

ture upon the seas ; and the American coast soon swarmed with privateers, which cruised with great success.

A rich store-ship was taken at this time, by captain Manley, of the privateer Lee, laden with supplies, for the army in Boston. These captures, not only gave support and energy to the American army, in carrying on the siege of Boston, but greatly distressed the enemy, by cutting off his supplies.

South Carolina, by a summons from her general committee, convened her provincial congress, upon the first tidings, that blood had been shed at Lexington, and chose Henry Laurens esq. president, July 1. On the 2d, they passed, by a unanimous resolve, the following covenant :

“ Thoroughly convinced, that under our present distressed circumstances, we shall be justified before God and man, in resisting force by force : We do unite ourselves, under every tie of religion and honor, to associate, as a band of brothers, in defence of our injured country, against every foe : hereby solemnly engaging, that whenever our continental or provincial councils, shall decree it necessary, we will go forth, and be ready to sacrifice our lives and fortunes, to secure her defence and safety. This covenant to continue in force, until a reconciliation shall take place, between Great Britain and America, upon constitutional principles ; an event which we most heartily desire. And we will hold those persons criminal to the liberty of these colonies, who shall refuse to subscribe to this association.”

This resolve was cordially supported by the people. On the 5th, this congress proceeded to raise two regiments of infantry, and one regiment of rangers, for the defence of the colony ; and the language of the day, was “ *We will freely give up one half, or even the whole of our property, to secure our liberties.*”

This congress next assumed the reins of government over the colony ; entered with spirit into a general organization of their affairs, and adjourned.

The same zeal for the support of the common cause, prevailed in all the colonies at the south ; their crown governors were all removed, and the people assumed the government. Each colony organized a provincial congress, committee of safety, &c. for the management of their affairs.

While these events were transpiring, the colonies generally, put forth all their efforts, to collect military stores, for the supply of the army at Boston, and turned their attention to



their cruisers on the water. They sent and purchased powder in foreign ports, wherever it was practicable ; and even obtained it from Bermuda, and some of the British forts, on the coast of Africa.† They also commenced the manufacture of powder in many of the colonies.

At the same time, information arrived at head-quarters, that the addresses of congress had been favorably received in Canada ; and that the people would not act against the colonies. General Washington detached a body of troops, under the command of colonel Arnold, (about 1000) aided by colonels Greene and Enos, and majors Meigs and Bigelow, upon an expedition into Canada.

On the 19th of September, colonel Arnold embarked his troops at Newburyport, for the river Kennebec, where he arrived the 20th, and on the 22d. began to ascend that river, upon an expedition against Quebec. On the 9th of November, he accomplished his march, through a pathless, uninhabited wilderness ; overcome every possible difficulty, hardship and fatigue, and arrived at point Levi, opposite to the city of Quebec.

At the same time, general Montgomery penetrated into Canada, by the way of lake Champlain, accompanied by general Schuyler ; and on the 8th of October, laid siege to the fortress of St. John's. Sir Guy Carleton, governor of Canada, appeared at the head of about 800 men, for the relief of St. John's ; but col. Warner, at the head of his Green mountain boys, defeated sir Guy, and on the 13th, majors Brown and Livingston passed by fort St. John's, with a party, and surprised the small fort of Chamblee, where they found six tons of powder, &c. with which they pushed the siege of St. John's ; and on the 2d of November, the fort surrendered. The garrison became prisoners of war.

During the siege of St. John's, colonel Allen attempted to surprise the city of Montreal, but failed ; was taken prisoner on the 25th of October ; loaded with irons, and sent to England.

On the 12th of November, general Montgomery entered Montreal in triumph, and on the 17th, eleven sail of vessels, with general Prescott and several other officers, and about 120 privates, with a large supply of flour, beef, butter, &c. be-

†Seven thousand pounds were received by general Washington from the latter, by the way of Providence, about the first of Sept.

sides cannon, small arms, and military stores, were taken ; all which became useful to the army, in prosecuting the conquest of Canada. Governor Carleton escaped in a canoe, with muffled paddles, in the night, and retired to Quebec.

General Montgomery, with such troops as he could retain for the service, penetrated into Canada, and joined colonel Arnold, before Quebec, on the first of December ; and on the 5th, they commenced a system of operations, to carry the city by storm.

This Gibraltar of America was then garrisoned by about 1500 men, under the command of sir Guy Carleton, who had arrived from Montreal, on the 19th of November ; yet the brave general Montgomery sat down before this strong hold, in the severity of winter, and opened his trenches in the snow, (the ground being impenetrably fixed by the frost) and hardened these trenches with water, which froze into ice, and thus commenced the siege.

General Montgomery next called a council of war, to consult upon the future operations of the siege ; the council met the views of the general, and were almost unanimous in the resolution, to attempt to carry the city by storm. Arrangements were accordingly made ; the next day the general preparations commenced ; and on the morning of the 31st, the signal was given for the attack, by a discharge of rockets, precisely at 5 o'clock. A violent snow storm covered the troops, as they advanced with firmness to the combat ; but the garrison had taken the alarm from the discharge of rockets, and stood on their defence.

General Montgomery, at the head of the first division, attempted to enter the lower town by the margin of the river ; carried the first battery and dispersed the guard ; but in passing a defile, at the head of his brave troops, the discharge of one solitary gun from the abandoned battery, killed general Montgomery, with captains Cheesman and McPherson, and several others. The troops, appalled at the loss of their general, retired from the defile, and abandoned the enterprise.

Not so with colonel Arnold ; he, at the head of the second division, entered the lower town, on the opposite side, accompanied by captain Lamb, at the head of his artillery company, with one field piece mounted on a sled. The main body of the division brought up the rear. At the head of this brave column, colonel Arnold was wounded in the leg, by a musket

ball, while forcing the first barrier, which fractured the bone, and obliged him to be removed to the rear. The command now devolved upon colonel Morgan, who led on the column, stormed the first barrier, and advanced to the attack of the second, with high hopes of success, and in momentary expectation of learning the success of general Montgomery.

At this eventful moment, colonel Morgan was joined by majors Meigs and Bigelow, which augmented his force to the number of about 200. At the head of this force, colonel Morgan led on the charge, to storm the second barrier; the whole column, amidst a shower of musketry, ascended their ladders and mounted the barrier; when lo! to their astonishment, a forest of bayonets, bristled in array against them, and filled all the street. To advance was death, to retreat was dangerous; they therefore entered the adjacent houses, and stood in their defence, until overpowered by numbers, they yielded to necessity, and surrendered themselves prisoners of war. Thus this desperate enterprise failed, with the loss of their general, and about 400 men, killed, wounded and taken, and Quebec was relieved.

The death of general Montgomery was a serious loss to the American cause, and severely felt, as well as deeply lamented, throughout the nation. Congress felt the shock and resolved, that a monument be erected to his memory, commemorative of his excellent worth.

We will now leave colonel Arnold to continue the blockade of Quebec, and pursue the siege of Boston.



## CHAPTER V.

REVOLUTION CONTINUED, FROM THE FALL OF MONTGOMERY,  
TO THE EVACUATION OF BOSTON.

In the month of October, general Howe succeeded general Gage, in the command at Boston, and the British army lay in an inactive state of blockade, through the winter.

Congress, being desirous of supporting the views of general Washington, resolved as follows, viz. "That if general Washington and his council of war, shall be of opinion, that a successful attack may be made upon the troops in Boston, he should make it, in any manner he might think expedient, nor

withstanding the town and property in it might thereby be destroyed."

The general, in his reply to this resolve, thus expressed himself: "It is not in the pages of history to furnish a case like ours. To maintain a post within musket shot of the enemy for six months together, without ammunition, and at the same time to disband one army and recruit another, within that distance of twenty old British regiments, is more than probably was ever attempted; but if we succeed in the latter, as we have done in the former, I shall think it one of the most fortunate events of my whole life."

Such was the deficiency of arms in the service, at this time. That the general wrote to congress about the first of February, "more than 2000 men in this army are without arms of any sort, and my whole force does not exceed 8850 men."

The general, at the same time pressed it upon Congress, to raise a regular army, for a given time, as a prop the country might more fully rely upon. Congress saw the necessity of the measure, and by the first of March, the army before Boston, was about 14,000 strong: which, when reinforced by 5000 militia, amounted to 20,000.—With this army, the general commenced serious operations. He ordered general Thomas, with a detachment from Roxbury, to take possession of Dorchester heights, whilst he covered the movement by bombardment upon the town of Boston. On the night of the 4th of March, general Thomas took possession of the heights, and throw up a breast-work sufficient to cover his party from the fire of the enemy, in the morning.

General Howe saw at once, the necessity of dislodging the provincials from this commanding position, or of evacuating Boston. He resolved on the former, and detached lord Percy, with 3,000 men for this service. His lordship actually embarked to execute his orders; but the movement was defeated by tempestuous weather.

General Washington had made his arrangements to commence an attack upon Boston, as soon as the detachment should become engaged at Dorchester; and thus the storm most probably saved the British army in Boston.

Pressed upon all sides, general Howe despatched a special flag to general Washington, to communicate his intentions to evacuate Boston, and threatened to destroy the town if his movements were molested. On the night of the 16th, the British army were all embarked, and sailed on the 17th, for

Nantasket roads ; and in a few days, the whole fleet sailed for Halifax.

General Washington marched, and took possession of Boston ; and universal joy spread through the colonies. Congress passed a resolution, expressing the thanks of that body, and of the colonies, to general Washington, and ordered a gold medal to be struck, with a proper device, commemorative of the event, and presented to the general.

During these operations in the north, lord Dunmore raised a force, and attempted to effect a counter-revolution in Virginia ; but the patriots pressed his lordship so close, that he was compelled to abandon the cause, and take refuge on board his fleet.

To revenge this indignity, his lordship ordered the fleet to destroy the town of Norfolk, and the order was obeyed on the night of the first of January, 1776. His lordship continued his depredations upon the coast, until he disgusted his own party, and then withdrew with his negro booty, (say 1000) to Florida and Bermuda, where the slaves were sold, for the benefit of the concern.

Governor Martin made a similar attempt in North Carolina ; but his movements were all defeated ; the insurrection was suppressed, and the patriots established.

On the 17th of February, commodore Hopkins had put to sea, with the American navy, from cape Henlopen, and in fifteen days, surprised and dismantled a fort, upon the island of New Providence, and brought off forty pieces of iron ordnance, fifteen brass mortars &c. together with the governor, and lieutenant-governor, and one counsellor of the island. On the fourth of March, the fleet fell in with, and captured, a British schooner, and on the fifth, they took a bomb-brig, laden with arms and military stores, and on the 6th, a part of the fleet engaged the Glasgow sloop-of-war of twenty guns ; night parted the combatants, and in the morning, the Glasgow escaped into Newport.

During these movements in America, the news of the battles of Lexington and Burker's hill, had reached England, together with the appointment of general Washington, as commander-in-chief of the American armies ; all which, made very serious impressions upon the people, and the government : but the king and the ministry were obstinately bent on war.

Parliament convened on the 26th of October, and the king, by his speech, supported the war system. Altho' the speech

met with a strong opposition in both houses, yet the king and the ministry prevailed, and the war was continued.

On the 29th of December, the ships *Acteon* and *Thunderbomb*, sailed from Portsmouth for Cork, with sir Peter Parker and earl Cornwallis, to convoy the transports with 4000 troops to America.

Colonel Ethan Allen returned to America, on board this fleet.

Colonel Allen had been confined in Pendennis castle, in Cornwall, and treated with great severity; but when he arrived in Ireland, a subscription was opened for his relief, and that of his companions, which was the first succor they had received.

On the 13th, lord North moved "that his majesty's treaties with the landgrave of Hesse Cassel, and the duke of Brunswick, and other German princes, for 17,000 men, to be employed in America, be referred to the committee of supply." This motion, after a warm debate, was carried by 242 to 83.

In the course of these debates, it was shewn, that this body of troops would cost the nation one million sterling, annually; and that the army in garrison at Boston, had already cost the nation more than £100 sterling per man, in less than a year; and that even under this enormous expense, their privations had been great, and their supplies wretched in the extreme.

In April and May following, two divisions of these German troops, sailed for America. The whole estimate of forces to be employed against America, this year, (1776) amounted to 60,000.

The destination of the Cork fleet to the southern states, was early known in America, by an intercepted letter addressed to lord Dunmore, of Virginia; and on the 3d of May, the fleet had all arrived in cape Fear river, where they were joined by general Clinton from the army of the north.

On the 5th of May, 1776, general Clinton published his proclamation of pardon, &c. to all such as should lay down their arms; but finding little encouragement, the general, with his fleet, sailed for Charleston, S. C. where they arrived about the first of June, and came to anchor off Sullivan's island.

General Clinton commenced the siege of Charleston, by issuing his proclamation of pardon, &c. as he had done in North

Carolina, and with the same effect. It had now become too late for proclamations of pardon in America.

The secretary's letter had reached South-Carolina, and governor Rutledge had made all possible preparation to receive the enemy. The militia of the vicinity, promptly obeyed the summons of the governor, and rallied round the standard of their country. General Lee appeared, at this critical moment, at the head of several regular regiments from the north, and took the command, in defence of Charleston.

On the 26th of June, the enemy crossed the bar, with several ships and frigates, and commenced their operations ; but they were so severely galled by the American fort and batteries, that they were constrained to withdraw, with the loss of one fifty-gun ship, wholly destroyed, and the others so disabled, as to be unfit for further service. Such was the severity of this contest, that more than 7000 loose balls were picked up on Sullivan's island, after the action.

Such was the intrepidity of colonel Moultrie and his brave garrison, at the fort, that when their flag staff was shot away in the action, sergeant Jasper, of the grenadiers, leaped upon the beach, seized the flag, fastened it to a sponge-staff, and erected it again, in the heat of the action ; for which act of bravery, governor Rutledge presented him with a sword, the next day.

Such was the character of the heroes, who defended Charleston, and such was the signal defeat of the English, that they abandoned the enterprise, retired to New York, and left the patriots to the full enjoyment of their rights and liberties.

When the news of this glorious defeat reached Congress, it kindled into a flame that spark of liberty, which prudence and caution had long smothered, in that honorable body ; and it burst forth in the declaration of independence. The colonies were now well prepared for such an event, and the declaration of independence was hailed by America, as the salvation of the nation. This spirit in Congress was supported by instructions communicated from all the colonies ; and the following resolution was moved by Richard Henry Lee, and seconded by John Adams :

“ Resolved, That these United Colonies are, and of right ought to be, free and independent states ; and that all political connection between them and Great Britain, is, and ought to be, totally dissolved ”—Passed unanimously.

During these movements, a Declaration of Independence

had been prepared by a special committee,† and the same was now adopted unanimously, and signed by all the members according to the order of the states. (See appendix, letter A.)

This was one of the most memorable state papers, that the whole historic page can boast; and the worthies whose names stand recorded in support of this dignified measure, as the authors of this glorious epoch, are enrolled in the temple of immortal fame, and their names can never die.

This was the epoch of permanent liberty, and the death-blow to British power, and British influence in America.

The sons of those venerable sires, have watched with care the sacred fire; resolved to transmit it in its purity, to their posterity, that generations yet unborn, may fan the sacred flame, and bid it burn to time's remotest bounds.

## CHAPTER VI.

### REVOLUTION CONTINUED—CAPTURE OF NEW YORK.

General Howe arrived at Sandy Hook, with his fleet and armament, from Halifax, on the 28th of June; and Lord Howe arrived with a fleet and armament from England, and joined his brother, on the 12th of July.

Lord Howe brought a commission from the British government, which clothed him and his brother with full powers to treat with the United States, collectively or separately, or with individuals, to grant pardons, &c. His lordship, upon his first arrival at the hook, despatched a flag to Amboy, with a circular letter, announcing his commission, &c.

General Washington, who had arrived with his army from Boston, for the defence of New-York, ordered this circular to be transmitted to Congress.

General Howe addressed a letter to George Washington, Esq. for the purpose of opening a correspondence upon the subject of his commission; but the general returned the letter unopened, as being improperly addressed; and congress applauded the act by a special resolve.

† The gentlemen who composed this ever memorable committee were Messrs. Jefferson, J. Adams, Franklin, Sherman, and R. R. Livingston, but the honor of the draft has ever been ascribed to Mr. Jefferson.



General Howe despatched colonel Patterson, adjutant-general of the British army, with another letter addressed to George Washington, &c. This was also rejected, and the colonel opened the subject to the general in a conversation, in which he disclosed the powers of the commissioners to treat, grant pardons, &c. to which general Washington replied, "that they who had committed no fault, wanted no pardon." Colonel Patterson expressed his "regret that the negotiation should have failed," and withdrew.

Gen. Washington meditated an attack upon general Howe. upon Staten Island, before the whole force should have arrived from England; but was prevented by tempestuous weather, and in the mean time, the whole force arrived, excepting the last division of the Germans; amounting in the whole to about 24,000 men.

This was one of the best appointed armaments, the British government had ever fitted out, and from which they had the highest expectations.

General Washington had under his command, at this time, about 17,000 men; three or four thousand of whom were sick, and the remainder were stationed in New York, upon Long Island, Governor's Island, and at Paulus Hook. Some of these posts were ten or fifteen miles distant from each other, and separated by waters navigable by the fleet of the enemy; and the whole exposed to an attack by a superior force.

Thus posted, under such circumstances, and in the presence of such a foe, the American commander-in-chief, attempted to cover New York. At this time, the American army was augmented by drafts of militia, to about 27,000; one fourth of whom were sick, with diseases common to raw troops, who were exposed to the open air, without tents, &c.

The whole force of the enemy had now arrived, and general Washington made his arrangements to support his point of defence of New York, upon Long Island. There general Sullivan was stationed, in the command of general Greene, who had retired through extreme indisposition.

Early in the morning of the 22d of August, the British shewed a disposition to land on Long Island, and consequently general Sullivan was strongly reinforced; but the enemy made good his landing, under cover of his ships, at Utrecht, and Gravesend, at the narrows, (so called.) Colonel Hand, of the Pennsylvania line, retired to the high grounds, to cover the pass leading to Flatbush village.

Lieutenant-general Clinton, who commanded this expedition, detached lord Cornwallis to seize the pass to Flatbush, unoccupied, but not to hazard an engagement. His lordship advanced; but finding the pass in possession of the Americans, he halted in the village.

These movements being announced to general Washington, he issued the following orders:

“The enemy have now landed upon Long Island, the hour fast approaching on which the honor and success of this army, and the safety of our bleeding country depend. Remember, officers and soldiers, that you are freemen, fighting for the blessings of liberty; that slavery will be your portion, and that of your posterity, if you do not quit yourselves like men. Remember, how your courage has been despised, and reduced, by your cruel invaders, though they have found, by dear experience at Boston, Charlestown, and other places, that a few brave men can do, in their own land, and in the best of causes, against hirelings and mercenaries. Be cool, be determined. Do not fire at a distance, but wait for orders from your officers.”

These orders closed with renewed injunctions, to shoot down every man who might desert his post, to seek shelter by flight. And with assurances, “that if they acquitted themselves well, like men, they had good reason to expect to save their country, by a glorious victory, and acquire to themselves immortal honor.”

The camp at Brooklyn, was now placed under the command of major-general Putnam, and reinforced with six regiments, with orders, to be in readiness for a momentary attack, and to keep open a communication with his best troops, through the woods, with the advance guard on the heights of Flatbush.

On the 23d, general de Heister landed, at the head of two brigades of Hessians, and on the 25th, took post at Flatbush. And lord Cornwallis drew off his division to Flatland.

On the 26th, general Washington crossed over to Brooklyn, and passed the day, in making arrangements for the action.

The British army were now formed, with the Hessians in the centre. General Grant, with his division on the left, and general Clinton, lord Cornwallis, and earl Percy, with the flower of the British army, on the right. Thus posted, the distance between the two armies, did not exceed four miles, and their approach to each other, was accessible by three di-

rect roads, which led across the hills, that divided the armies, and which were covered with woods.

The direct road from Flatbush to Brooklyn, was possessed by the Americans, and defended by a strong redoubt, mounted with several pieces of cannon, and supported by a strong detachment of infantry. The other two roads were guarded by detachments of infantry, within view of the enemy.

These passes being thus guarded, general Clinton detached the van of the British army, on the night of the 27th, consisting of light infantry, grenadiers, and light horse, and a reserve under lord Cornwallis, with fourteen pieces of cannon, to seize on another pass, that led to Jamaica, about three miles east of the Bedford road.

This movement succeeded, and opened the way for this whole division to pass the heights, and in the morning they were encamped on the plain.

General Grant moved forward with his division on the left, and a sharp skirmish commenced on the heights. Lord Sterling was detached to support the American right ; but the whole column was obliged to retire before the enemy.

At daylight, general De Heister put in motion, the centre of the British army, to cross over the hills, directly to Brooklyn, and commenced his attack with a heavy cannonade. General Clinton had now gained the rear of a part of the American left, and detached colonel Donop, to charge the Americans, on the hills, and supported the attack with the whole centre column, under the command of general De Heister.

General Sullivan now discovered the enemy in his rear, and beat a retreat, if possible, to regain the camp at Brooklyn. The advance guard of the British, intercepted his retreat, and an action commenced ; but the Americans were overpowered by numbers, and fled into their camp at Brooklyn, with very considerable loss. At this time, the American left was broken and routed, near Bedford, and fled into the woods, where they were inclosed between the right and the centre of the British army, and suffered great loss ; yet a part of these fugitives gained the camp at Brooklyn.

At this time, lord Sterling, discovering that the enemy had turned and put to flight the left, and were pressing on in his rear, upon the camp at Brooklyn, instantly beat a retreat, and to cover this retreat, charged the corps of lord Cornwallis, with a detachment of 400 men only. Such was the spirit of this charge, that he held his lordship at bay, until the re-

reating division had regained the camp. Then general Grant advanced into his rear, and compelled this little band of heroes, to resign themselves up prisoners of war.

Flushed with their successes, the enemy threatened to carry the camp at Brooklyn, by storm ; but the prudence of the commander restrained the ardor of the troops, and he invested the camp in form, on the night of the 28th of August.

The American loss in this action, in killed, wounded, and taken, amounted to about three thousand, including general Sullivan and lord Sterling, taken, and brigadier-general Woodhull, killed.

General Washington passed the day in his camp at Brooklyn, on the 29th, and at night, by a most masterly movement. The army with their whole encampment (except some heavy cannon) crossed over into New-York ; and when the fog cleared off, at 9 in the morning, the rear guard was discovered by the enemy ; but they were out of the reach of his fire. This fog arose from a small marsh in the vicinity of Brooklyn, in one column, to a great height (supposed about 200 feet) and then diffused itself over the adjacent country, so as to envelope the armies, and thus covered the retreat of the Americans. The sun rose clear at New-York, and remained unobscured through the whole day.

Lord Howe made a movement with his fleet, to enter the river, and cut off their retreat ; but was prevented entirely by a contrary wind.

On the 2d of September, Governor's Island was evacuated by two regiments of the Americans, with all their arms, stores, &c. except a few heavy cannon, within a quarter of a mile of the enemy's shipping, with the loss of only one man's arm.

This was an eventful crisis in the revolution, and the commander-in-chief saw, that the fate of America was hazarded upon the issue of a battle, under the most perilous circumstances, and with a superior foe. Impressed with the magnitude of the object, he passed two days and nights without sleep or rest, being the most of the time on horseback, and with his watchful eye, superintending every movement ; watching every event.

Flushed with the successes of Long Island, lord Howe renewed his pacific proposals to congress ; but they were again rejected. Congress at the same time, delegated a special committee to confer with lord Howe, and learn his powers.

They executed their commission and reported, "That the powers of the commissioners amounted to nothing more than a court of inquiry," and consequently were of no force.

The defeat upon Long Island, wrought a complete change in the American army; the fire of Lexington and Bunker's hill, was then extinguished, and the militia deserted their colors, abandoned their general, and fled to their homes, in such numbers, as to threaten the dissolution of the army; one fourth of those that remained, were enrolled among the sick.

The enemy, elated with the successes of Long Island, moved with a division of the fleet, up the East river, and threatened to cut off the retreat of the American army, which led the general to abandon New-York, and take post under cover of the forts. But the enemy landed in force, from the fleet in the river, on the 15th of September; and general Washington retired.

On the 16th, a sharp skirmish commenced between detachments of the American and British armies, in which the Americans were decidedly successful; this inspired them with fresh courage and resolution.

On the 21st, more than 1100 houses were destroyed by fire, in the city of New-York; then equal to about one fourth of the city.

On the 24th of September, an American officer of distinction, thus expressed himself, in a letter to his friend: "We are now upon the eve of another dissolution of the army, and unless some speedy and effectual measures are adopted by congress, our cause will be lost."

Under these embarrassing circumstances, general Howe attempted to cut off the retreat of general Washington, by landing a strong force in his rear. At this critical moment, general Lee arrived in the American camp; and a reinforcement of five or six thousand Germans, arrived in New-York, to strengthen the enemy.

On the 17th of October, general Washington called a council of war, and it was resolved to abandon York Island, and retire to White Plains, leaving a garrison at fort Washington. This was effected by opposing a firm front to the enemy, whilst the sick, baggage, military stores, &c. were conveyed along the rear, and thus removed to a place of safety.

On the 22d, general Howe was reinforced by one or two divisions of Germans, and on the 25th, he commenced operations, and marched towards White Plains, to meet the Amer-

icans. On the 28th, a general skirmishing commenced between the advanced parties ; and on the 29th, general Howe moved in columns to support his parties, and bring on a general action ; but the Americans held him at bay, until he was again reinforced on the 31st, when general Washington retired to the high grounds, leaving a strong rear guard to cover White Plains. General Howe abandoned the enterprise, and drew off his army towards King's bridge, Nov. 8. On the 15th, he sent in a summons to colonel Magraw, the commander of fort Washington, and on the 16th he carried the fort by storm, and *put the garrison to the sword.*

General Washington beheld the awful scene, and wept with the feelings of a compassionate father. The shock was felt with the keenest sensibility, throughout the American army, and general Lee wept with indignation, at the news of the merciless butchery, and cursed the unrelenting foe.

On the 18th, lord Cornwallis moved to the attack of fort Lee ; but general Greene drew off the garrison, abandoned the fort, and joined general Washington. On the 22d, general Washington crossed North river, and retired to Newark, where he found himself almost abandoned by the army, and left to the mercy of a victorious, pursuing enemy, with only about 3500 men, to accompany him in his flight. On the 28th, general Washington retired to Brunswick, and lord Cornwallis entered Newark, with his victorious army. His lordship pursued to Brunswick, and general Washington retired to Princeton, December 1st. Lord Cornwallis halted one whole week at Brunswick, agreeable to orders ; and in the meantime, general Washington saw himself abandoned by the Jersey and Maryland brigades of militia, whose terms of service then expired.

On the 7th, his lordship pursued to Princeton, and general Washington retired to Trenton. The next day his lordship entered Trenton, just at the critical moment that general Washington, with his remnant of an army, had crossed the Delaware,† and secured the boats to prevent his passing‡—December 8th, 1776.

General Howe had joined lord Cornwallis at Newark, and now made a stand at Princeton, and issued the proclamation of

† General Washington could muster only 2200 men at this time.

‡ The same day, general Prescott, with a strong British force, took possession of Newport, (Rhode Island.)

the king's commissioners, proffering pardon and peace to all such as should submit in sixty days.

Such were the distresses of the army and the country, when they saw their liberties about to expire under the pressure of an overwhelming foe, that men of the first distinction, in great numbers, in that part of the country, embraced the overture, and made their submission.

To add to the distresses of this most trying scene, general Lee, who had harassed the rear of the British army, with about 3000 men, was now surprised in his quarters, and taken by the enemy, December 13. The troops of general Lee, now under the command of general Sullivan, joined general Washington.

During the delay of general Howe, at Trenton, general Washington, with the assistance of general Mifflin, collected a body of Pennsylvania militia, and resolved to make a stand, to recover, if possible, the spirits of the army and nation.

On the night of the 25th, general Washington, under cover of a violent snow storm, recrossed the Delaware, commenced an attack upon the British army, and gained a signal victory ; took about 1000 prisoners, including an entire regiment of Germans, with their whole encampment, and secured his position at Trenton.

The enemy soon recovered their shock by large reinforcements, and general Washington retired to Princeton, by a circuitous march ; triumphed over the enemy again, and pursued them to Brunswick. Lord Cornwallis collected all his forces at Brunswick, and made a stand. General Washington took up his position at Morristown, and watched the motions of the enemy.

During these operations in New-Jersey, the British army had thrown up the rein, and given full scope to the brutal passions. This roused the indignation of the people, and rekindled the fire of Lexington, which spread like lightning through the country. New-Jersey then exhibited a scene which was considered but the miniature of what the nation would exhibit, should Britain prevail. Husbands saw the fate of their wives ; parents of their daughters ; and the nation became most seriously alarmed for their safety, and more immediately alive to the interest of the common cause. New Jersey felt the wound she had received, and roused to the combat, to revenge her wrongs upon the brutal foe.

General Washington surprised lord Cornwallis at Elizabeth-

town, and he retired to Amboy, where he was closely invested through the winter. In June following, general Howe drew off this army to Staten Island, and the Jerseys were cleared.

In April, general Howe detached governor Tryon, with the command of a major-general of provincials, at the head of about 2000 men, to destroy the American stores at Danbury. The general executed this commission, and destroyed 1300 barrels of beef, 2000 bushels of wheat, 800 barrels of flour, 1700 tents, 100 hogshheads of rum, &c. with the loss of about 400 men, killed, wounded, and taken by the Americans.

---

## CHAPTER VII.

REVOLUTION CONTINUED—EVACUATION OF CANADA—FALL OF  
BURGOYNE—CAPTURE OF PHILADELPHIA.

Upon the fall of general Montgomery, before Quebec, the command devolved upon colonel Arnold ; but he was soon removed to Montreal, with the command of a brigade, and general Thomas was sent on to succeed him. General Thomas died soon after, and was succeeded by general Sullivan ; and the American army suffered every possible distress from the small pox, and other diseases, until they were reduced to the pitiful number of 400 ; then they raised the siege of Quebec, and retired towards Montreal, to escape total destruction from the enemy, who were reinforced by the arrival of a strong armament from England.

The British army in Canada, were now about 13,000 strong ; with this force, general Carleton, supported by generals Burgoyne, Frazer, Phillips and Reidesel, advanced in divisions, in pursuit of general Sullivan. General Frazer, at the head of the advance guard, had taken post at Troies Rivières, and general Sullivan detached general Thompson to surprise him in his camp, but failed ; and the troops retired with loss, leaving their general a prisoner in the hands of the enemy. General Carleton pursued with his whole force ; but the Americans secured their retreat, under the most perilous circumstances, and gained the river Sorel, where they were joined by general Arnold from Montreal. Generals



Sullivan and Arnold embarked their troops, with their cannon and baggage, and retired to the isle Au-Noix, and from thence to Crown Point, where they made a stand, June 15th, 1776.

On the 12th of July, general Sullivan retired from the command, and carried with him the affections and gratitude of the army. General Gates succeeded to the command of this army, now diminished more than 5000, exclusive of about 300 sick, who were removed to fort George. The distresses of this army, arising from the ravages of the small pox, surpassed all description.

Sir Guy Carleton exerted himself through the summer, in preparing his fleet to meet the Americans on the lake. Early in October, he embarked his troops, and commenced operations. The two fleets met near Valcour island; a sharp action commenced; both fleets distinguished themselves by their ardent zeal, and intrepid valor; but the Americans were overpowered, dispersed, taken or destroyed; and thus an opening was made for the enemy to approach fort Ticonderoga, October 11, 1776.

At this critical moment, sir Guy Carleton abandoned all further operations for the season, and retired into Canada.

General Gates discharged the militia, and the campaign closed.

The humanity of sir Guy Carleton, in clothing the naked American prisoners in Canada, and dismissing them with kindness, as well as with such supplies as were necessary to carry them comfortably to their friends, is deserving of perpetual remembrance, and ought to be recorded to his eternal honor.

In the spring of 1777, general Burgoyne succeeded sir Guy Carleton, in the command. He commenced his operations early in the season, at the head of about 10,000 men, consisting of British and German troops, commanded by generals Phillips, Frazer, Powel and Hamilton, with the German generals, baron Reidesel and Spicht.

This might be truly styled a well appointed British army, fully supplied with every requisite for a successful campaign, particularly a powerful train of brass field artillery; and the troops were healthy, and in high spirits. To this army were attached several tribes of Indians, who were to take the field, upon conditions of humanity; not to scalp the wounded, nor

their prisoners ; but to receive a bounty for every captive brought in by them, and delivered alive.

On the 21st of June, general Burgoyne arrived at Crown Point, and on the 29th, he commenced operations against fort Ticonderoga.

General Schuyler had succeeded general Gates, in the command of the northern army, and put this fortress in good order, to receive the enemy, and given the command to general St. Clair.

On the 2d of July, general Burgoyne approached fort Ticonderoga, with the right wing of the British army, and commenced operations, by taking possession of mount Defiance.† General St. Clair abandoned the fort to save the garrison, and retired to Hubbardston, and from thence to Castleton, about thirty miles distance from Ticonderoga, where he made a stand, to collect the army from mount Independence, &c.

General Frazer, supported by general Reidesel commenced a pursuit in the morning, with the light troops of the British and Germans, and overtook the American rear guard, under colonel Warner, at Castleton, and commenced an attack on the 7th, which became sharp and bloody. The British were routed at first, with loss ; but finding that colonel Warner was not supported by gen. St. Clair, they rallied to the combat, and with the bayonet, charged and dispersed the American rear, with the loss of about 300 men ; and colonel Warner retired with the remainder of his troops to fort Ann.

General Burgoyne, with the main body of the British army, sailed from Ticonderoga, in pursuit of the American fleet ; destroyed and dispersed the whole, and landed at Skeensborough.‡ He there detached lieutenant-colonel Hill, with a strong party, to dislodge the Americans from fort Ann. The garrison marched out on the morning of the 8th, and commenced an attack upon the detachment, which was sharply supported by both parties, for about two hours, with apparent success on the part of the Americans ; but a party of Indians appeared and joined colonel Hill, and the Americans withdrew

† This mount lies contiguous to fort Ticonderoga, and overlooks the fortress ; but it had never, until this time, been occupied, because it had ever been deemed inaccessible. General Burgoyne took possession of this eminence by hoisting up his cannon with tackles, upon the limbs of trees, until he considered his force sufficient to dislodge the garrison of fort Ticonderoga.

‡ Now Whitehall.

from the field; abandoned the fortress, and retired to fort Edward, July 12th. The whole force at this time, at fort Edward, did not exceed 5,000 men.†

† We have often had occasion to record the caprice, as well as savage acts of the Indians; but perhaps in no one instance have we witnessed so striking a display of savage treachery and barbarity, as in the following narrative.

*Murder of Miss Jane McCrea.*—The story of this unfortunate young lady is well known, nor should I mention it now, but for the fact, that the place of her murder was pointed out to us, near fort Edward.

We saw, and conversed with a person, who was acquainted with her, and with her family; they resided in the village of fort Edward.

It seems she was betrothed to a Mr. Jones, an American refugee, who was with Burgoyne's army, and being anxious to obtain possession of his expected bride, he despatched a party of Indians to escort her to the British army. Where were his affection and his gallantry, that he did not go himself, or at least, that he did not accompany his savage emissaries!

Sorely against the wishes and remonstrances of her friends, she committed herself to the care of these fiends;—strange infatuation in her lover, to solicit such a confidence—stranger presumption in her, to yield to his wishes; what treatment had she not a right to expect from such guardians!

The party set forward, and she on horse back; they had proceeded not more than a half a mile from fort Edward, when they arrived at a spring, and halted to drink. The impatient lover had, in the mean time, despatched a second party of Indians, on the same errand; they came, at the unfortunate moment, to the same spring, and a collision immediately ensued, as to the proposed reward.

Both parties were now attacked by the whites, and at the end of the conflict, the unhappy young woman was found tomahawked, scalped, and (as is said) tied fast to a pine tree just by the spring. Tradition reports, that the Indians divided the scalp, and that each party carried half of it to the agonized lover.

Thus beautiful spring, which still flows limpid and cool, from a bank near the road side, and this fatal tree we saw. The tree, which is a large and ancient pine, "fit for the mast of some tall admiral," is wounded, in many places, by the balls of the whites, fired at the Indians; they have been dug out as far as they could be reached, but others still remain in this ancient tree, which seems a striking emblem of wounded innocence, and the trunk, twisted off at a considerable elevation, by some violent wind, that has left only a few mutilated branches, is a happy, although painful memorial of the fate of Jane McCrea.

Her name is inscribed on the tree, with the date 1777, and no traveller passes the spot, without spending a plaintive moment in contemplating the untimely fate of youth and loveliness.

The murder of Miss McCrea. (a deed of such atrocity and cruelty as scarcely to admit of aggravation) occurring as it did, at the moment when general Burgoyne, whose army was then at fort Ann, was bringing with him to the invasion of the American states, hordes of

Both armies now commenced serious operations. General Schuyler obstructed the roads, and destroyed the bridges, to prevent the approach of general Burgoyne; and the general cleared out roads, and repaired the bridges, that he might advance to fort Edward.

General Burgoyne surmounted all these embarrassments, and arrived at fort Edward on the 30th; but general Shuyler had abandoned the fort on the 27th, and retired, with his whole force, to Saratoga; and on the first of August, he retired to Stillwater, twenty-five miles above Albany.

The country saw with regret, this shadow of an army, flying before a victorious foe, and laying open the whole northern frontier, by abandoning those fortresses, which had cost the colonies so much blood and treasure, in former wars. The spirits of the country were as greatly depressed, as when general Washington crossed the Delaware the last year, and the spirits of the enemy were high.

At this eventful moment, sir William Howe sailed from New York, with his armament, to commence operations in Pennsylvania.

Colonel Barton, on the 10th of July, with forty volunteers, savages, "those hell-hounds of war," whose known and established modes of warfare, were those of promiscuous massacre, electrified the whole continent, and indeed, the civilized world, producing an universal burst of horror and indignation. General Gage did not fail to profit by the circumstance, and in a severe, but too personal remonstrance, which he addressed to general Burgoyne, charged him with the guilt of the murder, and with that of many other, similar atrocities. His real guilt, or that of his government, was, in employing the savages at all in the war: in other respects he appears to have had no concern with the transaction; in his reply to general Gates, he thus vindicates himself: "In regard to Miss McCrea, her fall wanted not the tragic display you have labored to give it, to make it as sincerely lamented and abhorred by me, as it can be by the tenderest of her friends. The fact was no premeditated barbarity. On the contrary, two chiefs, who had brought her off, for the purpose of security, not of violence to her person, disputed which should be her guard, and in a fit of savage passion, in one of whose hands she was snatched, the unhappy woman became the victim. Upon the first intelligence of this event, I obliged the Indians to deliver the murderer into my hands, and though, to have punished him by our laws, or principles of justice, would have been perhaps unprecedented, he certainly should have suffered an ignominious death, had I not been convinced, by my circumstances and observation, beyond the possibility of a doubt, that a pardon, under the terms which I presented, and they accepted, would be more efficacious, than an execution, to prevent similar mischief."—Silliman's Tour.

passed over to Rhode-Island ; surprised general Prescott in his quarters, and brought him off, with one of his aids, which gave some spring to the public feelings.

On the 4th of August, congress appointed general Gates, to succeed general Schuyler, in the command of the army of the north.

On the 22d, general Sullivan, with colonel Ogden, crossed over to Staten Island, in order to dislodge the British, stationed there ; but by some mismanagement, the attempt failed, with the loss of two or three hundred men, killed, wounded, and missing.

On the 3d of August, colonel St. Ledger, (who had been detached from Canada by general Burgoyne, into the country of the Mohawks, to make a diversion in that quarter) commenced his operations against fort Stanwix. General Herkimer marched down, at the head of about 800 militia, to relieve the fort ; but he fell into an Indian ambush, on the 6th, and was killed, in one of the sharpest, and most desperate Indian battles we have noticed. The garrison of the fort, sallied out at this critical moment ; decided the bloody contest, drove off the Indians, and relieved the fort. Colonel St. Ledger summoned the fort on the 8th ; but colonel Gansevoort returned a spirited answer ; St. Ledger withdrew with precipitation, and returned to the lake.

During these movements, general Washington detached general Lincoln to the northward, to take command of such eastern militia, as might join the northern army. General Lincoln arrived at Manchester on the 2d of August, where he took the command of 600 militia, on the 6th. General Stark arrived with 800 more.

General Stark was a soldier of merit, and had deserved well of his country, by his distinguished services in the famous battle of Bunker's hill ; but he had felt himself wounded by the neglect of congress, after the battle, and retired from service. He engaged at this time, in the service of his country, upon the express condition, that he should not be constrained to serve under a continental officer ; he accordingly resisted the pressing solicitations of general Schuyler, to join him in checking the progress of general Burgoyne.

Congress interposed in this controversy ; and at this eventful moment, general Burgoyne detached colonel Baum, with 300 Germans, and 100 Indians, to seize on the American stores at Bennington, to enable him to pursue his march to

Albany. General Stark was apprised of this movement, and sent expresses to collect the neighboring militia, and marched to meet the enemy on the 14th, supported by colonels Warner, Williams, and Brush. The advance parties of the two armies met, and commenced a skirmishing, that continued through the day. On the 15th, all operations were suspended, by the excessive rains that fell ; but on the 16th, general Stark was joined by the Berkshire militia, under colonel Symonds, and he detached colonel Nichols, to take post in the rear of the enemy, on the left ; colonel Hendrick to take post in the rear of his right ; to be supported by colonels Hubbard, and Stickley, still further on the right. About 3 o'clock in the afternoon, general Stark commenced an attack upon the enemy, strongly intrenched, and supported by two field pieces. The attack became general, and was valiantly supported on both sides ; the Indians fled ; the Germans were overpowered ; forced from their entrenchments, and put to flight. The militia, flushed with the successes of the day, abandoned the pursuit, and gave themselves up to plunder. At this eventful moment, lieutenant-colonel Breymen joined colonel Baum with a reinforcement ; they rallied to the charge, and renewed the combat. Colonel Warner led on his regiment of continentals, at this critical moment, and supported the action, until the militia could recover their order, and advance to the charge. The action soon became general, and continued through the day. The Germans again gave way, and secured their retreat, under cover of the night, leaving their artillery, baggage, &c. with 200 slain, and 700 prisoners, among whom was colonel Baum. This was an important action, and proved ruinous to general Burgoyne.

The merits of general Stark were applauded by a special resolve of congress, and they honored him with the command of a brigadier-general in the continental army, October 4th.

General Gates arrived, at this eventful moment, and took the command of the northern army. This was the first success that had been obtained in the north ; and it gave fresh hopes, and fresh courage to the army, and inspired the country with new zeal, which was displayed in that alacrity, with which the militia turned out and joined the army.

General Lincoln, at this time, supported by colonels Brown, Woodbridge, and Johnson, threw himself into the rear of general Burgoyne ; and on the 18th, colonel Brown destroyed the British stores, at the landing at lake George, and

released the American prisoners. They commenced operations at the same time with success, against fort Ticonderoga and Skeensborough.

During these movements, general Burgoyne crossed the Hudson, and encamped with his whole army, upon the plains of Saratoga. He next moved forward upon the banks of the Hudson, and took post upon the heights of Stillwater, within three miles of general Gates.

On the 18th of September, general Gates detached about 3000 men to offer the enemy battle ; but he declined the combat. On the 19th, the scouting parties of the two armies commenced a skirmishing, that led to a general action, which continued through the day, and was supported with great zeal and intrepid bravery. Night closed the scene, and the two generals drew off their armies to protect their camps, and waited with impatience the returning day.

The loss of the British in this action, was estimated at 500, killed, wounded and taken ; the loss of the Americans, at about 300 ; being about one eighth of the whole number engaged.

The army of general Gates was at this time, about 7000 strong, exclusive of the troops under general Lincoln, who were then at Bennington, on their return from the lake.

The Indians mostly deserted the standard of general Burgoyne, after the action ; and four of the Six Nations, favored general Gates, and furnished him with 150 warriors, who joined him on the 20th. On the 29th, general Lincoln joined general Gates, with 2000 men.

From this time to the 7th of October, the two armies were within cannon shot of each other, and witnessed frequent skirmishings, both night and day, which harassed the armies with serious alarms.

General Burgoyne communicated to sir Henry Clinton, at New-York, his true situation, and requested his mutual co-operation. General Gates at the same time, disclosed to general Washington, the privations of the American army, in provisions, ammunition, &c.

General Clinton at this time, received a reinforcement of 2000 men from Europe, and began his operations upon the Hudson, to make a diversion in favor of general Burgoyne ; commenced an attack upon the Highlands,† and carried the fortress at the point of the bayonet, October 6th. This en-

† West-Point, sixty miles north of New-York.

abled him to clear the obstructions in the river, and open a free passage for his shipping ; all which was communicated to general Burgoyne, immediately ; but it was too late.

On the 7th of October, general Burgoyne detached a strong party to open a way for his retreat, and at the same time to cover a foraging party, sent out for the relief of the army. General Burgoyne made a movement in person, at the head of 1500 men, supported by general Frazer, which led to another action that commenced immediately, and was supported with great zeal by both parties, through the day. The Americans were successful at all points. General Arnold fought with desperation, and was wounded in the conflict. The British suffered severely, until night closed the scene. General Frazer and sir James Clark, aid to general Burgoyne, were mortally wounded, and the latter taken prisoner.†

General Burgoyne changed his position in the night, and occupied the high grounds, to secure his army from immediate destruction ; and the Americans were supplied with ammunition, in the spoils of the British camp.

On the 8th, the British army were under arms through the day, expecting a momentary attack ; and at sunset, the day was closed with the solemnity of a funeral procession, that paid the last honors to the remains of the brave general Frazer. The Americans, from their camp, witnessed the scene, and sympathy, in obedience to nature, dropt a tear. ●

On the 9th, general Burgoyne saw himself so closely invested in his camp, that he resolved to retreat to Saratoga, to save his army ; this he effected without loss, excepting his hospital of sick and wounded, which he was constrained to abandon to the mercy of the Americans. General Gates did honor to his character, by the display of benevolence and humanity, which he exhibited upon the occasion.

The movements of general Gates, shewed to general Burgoyne, the next day, that all the passes in his rear were strongly guarded, and that all further retreat was impracticable.

† In the heat of the action, colonel Morgan, (the future hero of the battle of the Cowpens) selected several of his sharp shooters, and pointing them to a British officer, who appeared most conspicuously active in his duty, at the head of his division, mounted upon an iron grey charger, thus addressed them : “ that gallant officer is general Frazer ; I admire and respect him, *but it is necessary that he should die* ; take your station in that wood, and do your duty.” It is unnecessary to add, that the general soon fell, mortally wounded.



Stung with chagrin and mortification, at the forlorn situation into which he had precipitated himself, general Burgoyne called a council of war, on the 13th. Such was the local situation of the two armies, that an eighteen pound shot crossed the table where the council were deliberating, and their result became unanimous, to make terms with general Gates. General Burgoyne sent out a flag, to open the treaty, and general Gates sent in his proposals, which were rejected, and general Burgoyne sent out his terms, in his turn, which were accepted, on the 15th.

During this negotiation, the news of the capture of the Highlands, as before noticed, reached general Burgoyne, which caused him to hesitate, and defer signing the treaty, in hopes of the expected succor from sir Henry Clinton. General Gates, alive to the sense of delay, at this critical moment, drew up his army in order of battle, on the morning of the 17th, and sent in a flag to general Burgoyne, demanding his decision in ten minutes. Burgoyne felt the awful responsibility, signed the treaty in time, and returned it to general Gates.

The whole British army marched out of their lines, deposited their arms, and became prisoners of war. General Gates marched in, under the tune of Yankee Doodle, and took quiet possession. General Gates ordered supplies to be issued to the British army, who were destitute, and the solemn scene was closed.

Such and so various are the scenes of life, and the fates of men ; such and so fickle is the fortune of war ; but firm and unshaken is the providence of God ; wisdom, and might, and strength are His.

Sir Henry Clinton detached sir James Wallace, and general Vaughn, with a flying squadron, carrying 3600 troops, to penetrate, if possible, to the camp of Burgoyne, or make a diversion in his favor ; but learning the situation of general Burgoyne, at Esopus, on the 13th, they set fire to the village, and consumed it. Had they proceeded to Albany, they might have destroyed the place, with the American stores, and Burgoyne might have been relieved. The enquiry has often been made, why this unnecessary delay ? But no other answer can possibly be given, than this ; *it was the special providence of God.*

The army of general Burgoyne was marched directly to Boston, where they were detained as prisoners of war.

General Gates marched, with all possible expedition, to support general Putnam, at Kingston, and guard the country against the ravages of the enemy, who took the alarm, and hastened back to New-York. Tranquility was restored in the north.

At the eventful moment, when general Burgoyne had triumphed over the Americans upon lake Champlain, and commenced his operations in the state of New-York, general Howe embarked about 16 000 troops on board his fleet at New-York, (consisting of 260 sail) and on the 23d of July, put to sea, upon a secret expedition, to make a diversion in the south, in favor of the hero of the north.

General Washington made a movement towards the Delaware, to be in readiness to cover Philadelphia; and at the same time, expressed his surprise, that general Howe should thus abandon general Burgoyne. General Howe manœuvred upon the coast, for several days; but when he entered the Chesapeake, general Washington penetrated his designs, and advanced to meet him. General Howe landed his troops, at the ferry of Elk, and the two armies met at Chad's Ford, on the Brandywine; an action was fought, September 11. The British were successful, and the Americans retired to the high grounds, to watch the enemy. General Howe made a movement, and entered Philadelphia, September 26.

Upon the landing of general Howe, congress retired to Lancaster.

Pending the first movements of general Howe, from New-York, the marquis La Fayette arrived in America, from France, and tendered his services to congress, as a volunteer in the American cause. Congress accepted the overture, and conferred upon him the commission of a major-general, in the army of the United States. The marquis joined the army, and served at his own expense; and became not only a member of the family, but the intimate companion of the commander-in-chief.

On the 11th of September, he made the first display of his talents as a soldier, at the battle of Chad's Ford, acquitted himself with honor, and was wounded in the leg.

The count Pulaski, a Polish nobleman, also distinguished himself in this action, and was honored with the commission of a major-general.

When general Howe had entered Philadelphia, he ordered

his fleet to move round into the Delaware, and thus secured his communication with the sea.

During the movements of the fleet, general Washington attempted to cut off the main body of the British army, which was encamped at Germantown.† This attack was well concerted, and promptly executed. The British were completely surprised, at break of day, October 4th ; at sunrise the action became warm, and the Americans were successful at all points, until they attempted to dislodge a battalion of the British, who in their flight, had thrown themselves into a stone house ; this occasioned a delay, broke the pursuit, and gave the enemy time to recover from their surprise, and rally to the charge ; the action soon became warm and bloody. A thick fog arose, which covered the combatants, and caused some confusion ; the enemy took advantage of this, and the Americans retired, and abandoned the victory they had so fairly gained.

The losses of the parties were about equal ; but it proved a lesson of caution to general Howe. He collected his army at Philadelphia, where he was closely invested by general Washington, through the winter ; which occasioned the remark of doctor Franklin ; “ *Philadelphia has taken Howe.*”

The privations of the American army were truly distressing ; without clothes, shoes, stockings, and even breeches and blankets ; more than 2000 were marched through the snow, imprinting the roads with their blood stained steps ; yet all this was endured with a firmness, worthy of those valiant sons of liberty.

---

## CHAPTER VIII.

REVOLUTION CONTINUED—PROCEEDINGS OF CONGRESS—MILITARY OPERATIONS, &c.

President Hancock, by permission, retired from the chair, to visit his friends, and enjoy that repose the state of his health required—May, 1777.

President Hancock took leave of congress, by a dignified address, to which congress replied, by the following resolve :

“ Resolved, That the thanks of congress be presented to

† Seven miles north of Philadelphia.

John Hancock esq. for the unremitted attention, and steady impartiality, which he has manifested, in the discharge of the various duties as president, since his election to the chair, on the 24th of May, 1775."

Congress elected the honorable Henry Laurens, of South Carolina, as his successor. They also appointed general Gates, president of the board of war.

Congress next appointed a special committee, to prepare articles of confederation, in due form; and on the 12th of July following, this committee made their report, which was ordered to be printed, for the information of the members.

These articles of confederation, as reported by this committee, were unanimously adopted by congress; approved by the states, and became the sheet anchor of the nation, by which she rode out the storm of an eight year's war. (See appendix, letter B.) This compact formed also, the basis of the federal constitution, and thus continues, the palladium of the nation, to perpetuate the blessings of liberty and independence, to the latest generation.

Congress resolved, "that the commissioners at the courts of France and Spain, be directed to exert their utmost endeavors, to obtain a loan of two millions sterling, on the faith of the United States." Congress next resolved, "that it be recommended to the legislatures of the several states, to appoint persons to seize such clothing, as may be necessary for the army, wherever it may be found, within their respective states; and when the value of the same has been duly estimated, that it be applied accordingly."

Lieutenant-colonel Barton, who took general Prescott prisoner, at Rhode-Island, as before noticed, was now recommended to congress, upon which they resolved, "that he be promoted to the rank of a colonel, in the service of the United States, in consideration of his merits, and that he be recommended to general Washington, to be employed in such services, as he may deem best adapted to his genius."

Congress next resolved, "that one month's extra pay, be given to each officer and soldier, under the immediate command of his excellency general Washington, in testimony of their approbation, of their patience, fidelity and zeal, in the service of their country."

Congress next proceeded to resolve, "that the embarkation of general Burgoyne and his army, agreeable to the convention of Saratoga, be delayed, until the same should be properly

ratified, by the court of Great Britain ;” in consequence of an unguarded expression of the general, in one of his letters, in which he declared “ the convention to have been broken on the part of the Americans.”

General Burgoyne met this resolve by explanations, together with a proposed renewal of the convention of Saratoga, and in such a manner, as should be approved by congress ; but without effect.

On the first of December, the ship *Alamand* arrived from France, with 48 pieces of brass artillery, (four pounders) with carriages complete ; 19 nine inch mortars—2500 nine inch bombs—2000 four pound balls—a quantity of intrenching tools—3000 fuses—1110 for dragoons—1800 pounds of powder, and 61,000 pounds of brimstone, from the house of Beaumarchais, in Paris.

On the 16th of December, Mr. Gerard,<sup>1</sup> (French minister), delivered the preliminaries of a treaty, to the American commissioners, for the two nations. On the 16th of February, 1778, the treaty was signed, and in 48 hours, it was known in London, and produced great excitement in the councils of Britain.

On the 21st of March, the American commissioners, Messrs. Franklin, Dean and Lee, were admitted to a public audience, at the court of Versailles, and were presented to the king, by M. De Vergennes, (French minister) in character of the ministers plenipotentiary, of the United States of America.

The French minister at London, announced the signing of this treaty to the British minister, and returned to France.

On the 13th of April, the Toulon fleet, consisting of twelve ships of the line, and four frigates, sailed for America, under the command of the count De Estaing ; bearing Mr. Gerard, as minister of France to the United States, accompanied by the American minister, Mr. Dean.

On the same day, general Burgoyne arrived in London, not as a conqueror, but in such disgrace, as to be refused admission into the presence of his majesty.

On the 5th of June, admiral Byron was despatched to America, with a formidable squadron, to take the command on that station.

At this time, the illustrious earl of Chatham was borne away in the arms of death, no longer to witness the tarnished honor of that country, which, under God, he had raised to the

summit of renown. On the 9th, his remains were honorably interred, at the public expense, in Westminster Abbey.

Well might old England say, in the bitterness of her soul, 'that sun is set : O rise some other such, or all is talk of old achievements, and despair of new.'

As soon as the court of Versailles had learnt the destination of admiral Byron, the count De Orvilliers put to sea, with a fleet of 32 ships of the line, and a cloud of frigates, to enforce the ordinance of the king, of the 28th of March, for making reprisals on the ships of Britain.

Great Britain pursued the same measures, and admiral Keppel put to sea, in quest of the French fleet. On the 23d of July, both fleets appeared to approach each other for action ; but a scene of manœuvring commenced, which displayed the skill of the commanders, in naval tactics for three days. On the 27th, a sharp action commenced, and continued about three hours ; both fleets suffered severely, and both claimed the victory. The fleets withdrew and returned into port, to repair their damages.

This opened the war between England and France.

On the 14th of May, lieutenant-colonel Ethan Allen was restored to his country, by an exchange, and congress honored him with a colonel's commission, in the service of the United States, as a testimony of their respect, for his zeal and firmness in the service of his country.†

At this time an expedition was planned against Rhode-Island, and general Sullivan was detached, by general Washington, to take the command ; but the vigilance of general Pigot defeated the enterprise, by detaching lieutenant-colonel Campbell, with about 500 men, to destroy the American galleys, destined for the service. Lient. colonel Campbell, executed his commission promptly, on the nights of the 24th and 25th, and destroyed all the flat-bottomed boats near the town of Warren ; together with the meeting-house, and seven dwelling-houses, and retired to Bristol, where they burnt 22 houses and the church ; committed the most licentious depredations ; carried off a state galley, and returned to Newport.—Shortly after, general Pigot detached another party, to burn and destroy the town of Tiverton ; but the Americans were in force, and the enterprise failed.

†Colonel Allen had been taken at Montreal in 1775, and carried to England, as has been noticed.

At this time a French frigate of 50 guns, with a schooner from Rochfort, laden with arms and dry goods, arrived in James river, Virginia, and were joyfully received by the nation.

General Howe had wintered snugly in Philadelphia, by keeping the neighboring country in a state of perpetual alarm, with his foraging parties, which often conducted with great cruelty; and many innocent, unresisting inhabitants, were butchered by them in cold blood, while begging for mercy.

General Washington fixed his head quarters at Valley Forge, 14 miles from Philadelphia, where his army experienced great privations and sufferings through the winter; but they held the British army in a state of siege, as at Boston, in 1775.

On the 7th of May, general Howe detached a battalion of infantry, to destroy the American stores and shipping, at Bordentown. This expedition was promptly executed; on the 8th, four stores were burnt, containing provisions, tobacco, military stores, and camp equipage. On the 9th, they destroyed one frigate of 32 guns, one of 28, nine large ships, three privateers of 16 guns each, three of 10 guns, twenty-three brigs, with several sloops, schooners, &c. and returned to Philadelphia.

At this eventful moment, sir Henry Clinton arrived at Philadelphia, to succeed general Howe, in the command of the British army in America. On the 18th, the British officers took leave of sir William Howe, by honoring him with a most magnificent entertainment, which continued 12 hours, accompanied with a most splendid exhibition of fire works, in the evening; and his excellency retired soon after, to England.

General Washington detached the marquis La Fayette, from his camp at Valley Forge, with a party of 2500 men, to approach the city of Philadelphia, and add to this scene of festivity and amusement. The marquis promptly obeyed; crossed the Schuylkill, and took post on Barren hill, twelve miles in advance of the American army. The British soon learnt the situation of the marquis, and on the night of the 19th, sir Henry Clinton, detached general Grant, with about 7000 men, with field pieces, to surprise and cut off the marquis. General Grant marched out upon the Frankfort road, and from thence crossed over, through old York and White-marsh roads, and entered the road to Barren hill, about two miles in the rear of the marquis. Sir Henry at the same time, sent out another party, to engage the marquis in front. But the

marquis, having learnt the movements of the enemy, filed off his detachment so adroitly, that he gained the Matron ford, (distant one mile) and crossed over the Schuylkill, before the enemy were prepared to push their attack, and thus saved his detachment from total ruin.

On the 4th of June, the earl of Carlisle, Mr. Eden, and governor Johnston, arrived in the Trident from England, as commissioners, to restore peace between Britain and America. On the 9th, sir Henry Clinton requested of general Washington a passport for their secretary, doctor Ferguson, to bear their despatches to Congress; which being refused, they were forwarded in the usual form. On the 13th, they were received; on the 16th they were examined, and on the 17th, the president was directed to return the following reply:

“I have received the letter from your excellencies, of the 5th instant, with the inclosures, and laid them before Congress. Nothing but the earnest desire, to spare the further effusion of human blood, could have induced Congress to read a paper, containing expressions so disrespectful to his most christian majesty, the good and great ally of these states, or to consider propositions, so derogatory to the honor of an independent nation.

“The acts of the British parliament, the commission from your sovereign, and your letter, suppose the people of these states, to be subjects of the crown of Great Britain, and are founded upon the idea of dependence, which is utterly inadmissible. I am further directed to inform your excellencies, that Congress are inclined to peace, notwithstanding the urgent claims from which this war originated, and the savage manner in which it has been conducted. They will therefore be ready, to enter upon the consideration of a treaty of peace and commerce, not inconsistent with the treaties already subsisting, when the king of Great Britain shall demonstrate, a sincere disposition for that purpose. The only solid proof of this disposition, will be, an explicit acknowledgement of the independence of these states, or the withdrawing his fleets and armies.

“I have the honor to be, your excellencies' most obedient, humble servant.”

The movements of France, as before noticed, gave alarm in England, and caused the minister to send out orders by Mr. Eden, for sir Henry Clinton to retire from Philadelphia to New York, with the British army, as soon as possible.



On the 18th of June, 1778, the whole British army evacuated Philadelphia, agreeable to previous arrangements, crossed the Delaware, and moved to Haddonfield.

General Washington, apprised of this movement, detached general Maxwell, with his brigade, to harass the rear of the enemy, and impede his march. At the same time, he consulted his officers, in written questions, upon the plan of operations to be adopted, in pursuing the enemy.

General Lee, who had been exchanged, and joined the army, was now present to give his advice in council. General Mifflin was not consulted, because he had been long absent, by permission, and thereby avoided the duties of the winter's campaign.

The answers to the questions proposed, were almost unanimous, "To harass the enemy at all points ; but avoid the hazard of a general action."

General Washington crossed the Delaware, the next day, with his army ; moved on in pursuit of the enemy, and at the same time, he detached colonel Morgan with 600 riflemen, to support general Maxwell.

The weather was extremely warm, and the armies moved slowly. On the 24th, general Washington reached Princeton, where he made the following statement, to the officers of his army :

"The army of the enemy, is between nine and ten thousand, rank and file. The American army is 10,684, rank and file, besides the advance brigade under general Maxwell, (about 1200) and about 1200 militia."

The general then proposed the following question : "Will it be advisable to hazard a general action ?" The answer was, "Not advisable." But a detachment of 1500, to be immediately sent, to act as occasion may require, on the enemy's left flank and rear, in conjunction with the other continental troops and militia, already hanging about them, and the main body to preserve a situation to act, as circumstances may require. Signed, Lee, Sterling, Greene, Fayette, Steuben, Poor, Patterson, Woodward, Scott, Portail and Knox. General Scott was detached accordingly.

General Gates had arrived at Fishkill, with the northern army, about the middle of May, and was now ready to co-operate with general Washington, if required. General Washington considered the pass through the Highlands, as an object of the first importance, and directed drafts from the neigh-

boring militia, to be marched to the support of general Gates, and guard that point. General Gates at the same time, moved forward his army to White Plains, to give an alarm in New York, and thus made a diversion on that side ; which was highly approved.

On the 21st, general Washington marched to Kingston, and there learning that sir Henry Clinton had marched towards Monmouth, he resolved to attack his rear, and force him to an action. Accordingly, his excellency detached brigadier-general Wayne, with 1000 chosen troops, to reinforce general Maxwell, and selected the marquis de La Fayette, to advance and take the command of the whole ; general Lee having declined the command.

On the night of the 25th, general Washington moved forward his army from Kingston, and arrived at Cranbury, early the next morning, where they were detained by storms, through the 26th ; of course the marquis was ordered to check his pursuit, and file off to the left, towards Englishtown, which he accomplished on the 27th. This movement of the American commander, led the British general to anticipate his views, and change his order of march by posting the grenadiers, light infantry, and chasseurs, as his rear guard. At the same time, he disposed of his baggage, so as to be covered by the advance column, under the command of general Kniphausen ; this, when collected, formed a procession of about twelve miles in extent. This movement led general Washington to augment his advance guard.

General Lee began to feel the mortification, which he had brought upon himself, by refusing the command of the advance guard, and now solicited the appointment ; to which general Washington objected, but detached him with two brigades, to join the marquis, which gave him the command of course ; general Washington moved forward at the same time, to support the whole. The right of the enemy was harassed by general Morgan's corps, and the left by general Dickinson's Jersey militia ; but the main army, under sir Henry Clinton, was strongly posted near Monmouth meeting-house, on the 27th.

General Washington saw the favorable moment that now offered, to bring sir Henry to immediate action, before he should have gained the heights of Middletown, (twelve miles in advance) and ordered general Lee to be in readiness to commence the attack, upon the shortest notice.

On the morning of the 28th, general Kniphausen, at break of day, moved forward the advance column of the British army, with the baggage, &c. and at eight o'clock, sir Henry followed with the main body; the flower of the army, being posted in the rear.

General Washington wrote to general Lee, at one in the morning, with general directions, for commencing the attack. General Washington put his whole army in motion, at the same time; having learnt from general Dickinson that the front of the enemy had commenced their march. He sent orders to general Lee, at the same time, to advance and commence the attack, "*unless there should be powerful reasons to the contrary*;" and assured him that the army were advancing without their packs, to support him, June 28th, 1778.

The limits of this work, will not permit me to give the particulars of this memorable action, in detail; suffice it to say, the doubtful movements of general Lee, deranged the plans of the commander-in-chief; caused the failure of the general action, and defeated the operations of the day. They caused also, a court-martial upon general Lee, which deprived him of his command.

The American troops lay on their arms through the night, impatient for the attack the next morning; but sir Henry took the alarm, withdrew his troops in the night, and thus made his escape, to the inexpressible disappointment of general Washington.

Sir Henry Clinton lost in the affair at Monmouth, about 500 men, killed, wounded and missing, together with lieutenant-colonel Moncton, a brave officer, whose death was greatly lamented.

General Washington lost about half that number, together with lieutenant-colonel Bonner, and major Dickinson, two brave officers, whose loss was severely felt by the American army.

The extreme heat of the weather was inexpressibly distressing to both armies, through the day, and rendered a pursuit, by forced marches, through a deep sandy country, impracticable; general Washington, therefore detached a strong party of light troops, to watch the motions of the enemy; and drew off his main army to the North river.

Sir Henry retired by forced marches, to Sandy-Hook, where he was met by lord Howe with his fleet, on the 5th of July, and embarked his army for New York.

On the 8th of July, count De Estaing entered the capes of the Delaware, with the Toulon fleet, after a passage of eighty-seven days; lord Howe had been gone only eleven days, and sir Henry Clinton had evacuated Philadelphia only one month before, and was now embarking his army at Sandy-Hook, for New-York. The French fleet was about double the force of the English, both in the number of ships and weight of metal.

Count De Estaing landed Mr. Gerard, French minister to the United States, who was most cordially received by congress, and on the 9th, set sail for Sandy Hook, where he arrived on the 11th, and blockaded the English squadron in the harbor.

The count made all possible efforts to attack the English fleet in the harbor; but found it impracticable to cross the bar with his heavy ships, and on the 22d, agreeable to advice from general Washington, he set sail for Newport, to co-operate in the destruction of the British fleet and army, at Rhode-Island.

Admiral Byron's squadron arrived at Sandy Hook, a few days after the departure of the French fleet, in a very broken, sickly, dismasted, distressed situation. The provision ship from Cork, arrived also, and entered the harbor of New-York, in safety, to the inexpressible joy of the British army, who were in great want of supplies.

Count De Estaing arrived off Point Judith, on the 29th of July, and such was the joy upon the occasion, that it diffused the fire and zeal of 1775 and 6, throughout New England. Volunteers by thousands, flocked to the standard of their country, to join general Sullivan, and co-operate with their illustrious allies, in the reduction of Rhode-Island.

General Washington had detached the marquis La Fayette and general Greene, with 2000 men, to join the general enterprise. The American force was now about 10,000 strong.

Sir Robert Pigot, who commanded at Newport, had been reinforced with five battalions, which rendered his force about 6000 strong. Thus balanced the parties commenced their operations.

The count De Estaing entered the harbor at Newport, on the 18th of August, without opposition; general Pigot having destroyed the English shipping,† on the 5th, to prevent their falling into the hands of the French.

† Four frigates, with several smaller vessels.

On the 9th, at eight in the morning, general Sullivan began to cross over with his army, from Tiverton; the enemy having abandoned their works at the north end of the island. At two in the morning, lord Howe appeared off Point Judith, with a fleet of twenty-five sail of the line, where he anchored for the night.

On the 10th, count De Estaing, eager to meet the British fleet, took advantage of the wind and put to sea. The two fleets manœuvred through the day, without coming to action. On the 11th, a violent gale sprang up, and continued through the 12th and 13th, which parted the fleets, dismasted the French admiral's ship, destroyed her rudder, and greatly damaged several others.

On the 14th, the gale abated, and close and severe actions commenced, between several single ships, of the two fleets. but nothing decisive. The count, having collected six of his ships, covered his disabled fleet, and stood in for Newport, and came to anchor.

General Greene and the marquis La Fayette, went on board the admiral's ship, and pressed him to enter the harbor of Newport, and complete the enterprize; but the fleet was so shattered by the storm, and the officers were generally so averse, that the count concluded to sail for Boston.

The troops under general Sullivan had gained the north end of the island, and marched down upon the enemy's lines, ready to co-operate with the French fleet, and commence the attack; but their sufferings in the storm were so severe, that the troops were in a deplorable state.

On the 14th, they lay exposed to an attack from the enemy, which must have proved ruinous, had he known their true situation.

On the 15th, the American army had recovered from their misfortunes, and were again prepared for action. In this situation, they continued anxiously waiting the movements of the French fleet, to join in the general attack; but to their grief and astonishment, they saw them weigh and stand off for Boston, on the 24th. The mortification of general Sullivan, was greater than the pride of an American soldier could sustain, and he expressed himself unguardedly, in his general orders upon the occasion.

On the 28th, count De Estaing wrote to congress from Boston, and explained his movements, to the satisfaction of that honorable body.

General Sullivan soon saw himself abandoned by most of the volunteers, which reduced his army to a standard below that of the enemy, and he hastened to secure his retreat.

On the 25th, general Sullivan sent off his heavy cannon, and on the 29th, he retired to the north end of the island. General Pigot pursued with his whole force, to intercept his retreat. The advance guard of the enemy was soon engaged with the rear guard of the Americans, and a severe action ensued, that continued through the day. The next day, general Sullivan learnt that lord Howe was again at sea, and that the French fleet was not expected to return to Newport, and he hastened to evacuate the island.

General Sullivan, with the advice and assistance of general Greene, and the marquis La Fayette, conducted his retreat in the presence of a superior foe, whose sentries were not more than 400 yards distant from the American sentries; and on the morning of the 1st of September, 1778, the retreat was accomplished, without the loss of a man, or any part of the artillery or baggage.

The same day, sir Henry Clinton arrived off Newport, on board of the fleet under lord Howe, with 4000 troops, to cut off the American retreat; but learning the departure of the French for Boston, and the retreat of the Americans, he set sail for Boston, in pursuit of the French. On the morning of the 3d, he discovered the French fleet in the harbor of Boston, strongly posted, and returned to New-York. On the 5th, lord Howe commenced an attack upon the American shipping in Bedford harbor, and destroyed about seventy sail, besides small craft, stores, dwelling houses, and vessels on the stocks, together with the magazine, to the amount of £20,000 sterling.

His lordship next commenced an attack upon Martha's Vineyard; destroyed all the vessels, and carried off the arms of the militia, the public money, 300 oxen, and 10,000 sheep, and returned to New-York.

The following extract of a letter from general Washington, shall close the chapter:

“It is not a little pleasing, nor less wonderful, to contemplate, that after two years manœuvring, and undergoing the strangest vicissitudes, that perhaps ever attended any one contest since the creation, both armies are brought back to the very point they set out from, and the offending party, in the beginning, is reduced to the spade and pick-axe for defence.

The hand of providence has been so conspicuous in all this, that he must be worse than an infidel, that lacks faith, and more than wicked, that has not gratitude enough to acknowledge his obligations."

---

## CHAPTER IX.

### GENERAL OPERATIONS OF THE REVOLUTION, CONTINUED.

During these proceedings, George Johnston esq. one of the British commissioners, attempted to bribe a Mr. Reed and others, members of congress, to effect a negotiation and reconciliation, between Britain and America; to which Mr. Reed replied, "*I am not worth buying, but such as I am, the king of England is not rich enough to do it.*"

Mr. Reed disclosed the facts to congress, and they by their resolve, ordered all letters addressed to members of congress, from British commissioners or agents, or any subjects of the king of Great Britain, of a public nature, to be laid before congress. They next proceeded to interdict all further intercourse with the said George Johnston esq. as incompatible with the honor of congress. This resolve brought out of New York, a warm and spirited reply, from the proscribed Johnston, with a total disavowal of the facts, on the part of sir Henry Clinton, lord Carlisle, and Mr. Eden. They, at the same time, tendered to congress, a ratification of the convention of Saratoga, that the troops of general Burgoyne might be embarked for England; but congress declined all ratification, unless by the British government, and the troops were withheld.

The commissioners next directed their appeal to the American people, and issued their publications accordingly. Congress favored this appeal, and it had full scope; the country had good sense enough, rightly to appreciate the procedure, and virtue enough to frown upon it with contempt, and it ended in disgrace and mortification to the commissioners.

Stung with chagrin and indignation, at the failure of their base and insidious measure, the commissioners next proceeded, to denounce the American government, in a valedictory manifesto, and threatened the American people with ven-

ance and destruction, if they persevered in their rebellion, and adhered to their alliance with France.

Congress met this manifesto, with a declaration, that denounced that savage mode of warfare, which the British had carried on in America; and particularly their barbarity towards the American prisoners, as well as the meanness of the commissioners, in attempting to seduce the members of congress and others, by bribery and corruption. They thus concluded :

“ If our enemies presume to execute their threats, or persist in their present career of barbarity, we will take such exemplary vengeance, as shall deter others from a like conduct. We appeal to that God, who is the searcher of hearts, for the rectitude of our intentions, and in his holy presence declare, that as we are not moved by any light or hasty suggestions of anger or revenge, so through every possible change of fortune, we will adhere to this our determination.” (See appendix, letter D.)

The marquis La Fayette felt the indignity offered to his nation, by some expressions in the manifesto of the commissioners, and challenged the earl of Carlisle to answer for these reflections, at single combat; but his challenge was not accepted.

On the 6th of August, the honorable Sieur Gerard, delivered his credentials in due form, and had his first audience of congress.

Doctor Franklin, (then at Paris, in character of American commissioner) was appointed at the same time, minister plenipotentiary to the court of Versailles, with instructions to negotiate for an expedition against Canada, in which France and America were to co operate, in conformity with the views of the marquis La Fayette. The doctor was also instructed to lay before the French court, a general view of the finances of the United States, for the purpose of opening the way for such loans, as the exigencies of their affairs might require.

The marquis La Fayette, at this time, requested leave to return to France; to which congress readily consented, and directed the president to express to him by letter, the thanks of congress, for that disinterested zeal, that led him to America, as well as those services he had rendered the U. States, by the exertions of his courage and abilities, on many signal occasions. They also directed doctor Franklin, to cause an elegant sword to be made, with proper devices, and presented



to the marquis, in the name of the United States. Congress at the same time, addressed a letter to the king of France, expressive of the high sense they entertained of the talents and services of the marquis. He took his leave of congress, by letter ; repaired to Boston, and embarked for France.

Pending these movements, the Indians, in concert with the Tories, began their ravages upon the Susquehannah ; entered the settlements, in a body of about 1600 ; defeated colonel Butler, at the head of about 400 men, and cut off his party, with a terrible slaughter. They took one small fort at Kingston, and then carried fort Wilkesbarre ; butchered the garrison, and burnt the women and children in the barracks.— They next proceeded to lay waste the settlements, with fire and sword, and destroyed the cattle, in the most wanton and barbarous manner ; but spared the persons and property of the Tories.

The following extract from Mr. Gordon's revolutionary war, may serve as a specimen of the distresses of Wyoming :

“ The following are a few of the more singular cruelties, practised in the attack upon Wyoming. Captain Braddoc, who had been taken prisoner, had his body stuck full of splinters and pine knots, and then a heap of pine knots piled round him ; the whole was then set on fire, and his two companions, captains Ramsom and Durgee, thrown into the flames, and held down with pitchforks. The Tories were the most distinguished for their cruelties ; in this, they resembled the British forces. One of those Wyoming Tories, whose mother had married a second husband, butchered with his own hands, both his father-in-law, his own sisters, and their infant children. Another, who during his absence, had sent home several threats against the life of his father, now, not only executed them in person, but was, with his own hands, the exterminator of his family, mother, brothers and sisters, and mingled their blood indiscriminately, with that of the husband and father.”

I forbear to pursue that part of the narrative, which recounts the distresses of those, who fled from the blaze of their dwellings, and took shelter in the woods, where they roamed at hazard, as chance or fear directed, until they either perished with famine or the murderous hatchet, or reached some friendly settlements, where they found christian hospitality. These are too black to be pursued, and are to be ranked among the many that occurred, to evince the total depravity of the human heart.

Such was the general alarm, which these savages occasioned, and such the spirit of Virginia, that an expedition was sent into the Indian country, under colonel Clark, against the French settlements upon the upper Mississippi, in the country of the Illinois. It had now become well understood, that the governor of these settlements, had been the instigator of these savages.

Colonel Clark traversed the desert with his party, about 1200 miles, and reached Kaskaskias, at the hour of midnight, in a desperate situation, and destitute of provisions; but being undiscovered, he resolved to strike the fatal blow. He entered the town immediately, and secured the whole, consisting of about 250 houses, with the fort, the governor, and all the inhabitants, without even an alarm, and sent the governor to Virginia, with all his written instructions from Quebec, Montreal, Detroit and Michilimackinac, for exciting the Indians to war, and offering a bounty on scalps. Colonel Clark administered the oath of allegiance to this village, and sent detachments to surprise the other villages; which was done, in regular succession, and the oath of allegiance administered, until the whole were subdued, to the allegiance of the United States.

This expedition tamed the spirits of those sons of the forest, and rendered them quiet, for the future.

A scene of the same stamp of that at Wyoming, but from a very different quarter, is now before us.

Lord Cornwallis detached general Gray, with his light infantry, to surprise, and cut off the American forces, on North river, in conjunction with a detachment from general Kniphausen's corps; but the expedition was defeated by some deserters, who gave timely notice to general Wayne, and he eluded the attack. General Gray however, conducted his movements with such despatch, as to surprise colonel Baylor's troop of horse, asleep and naked in their quarters (September 27); no quarter was the order of the day, and the whole were given up to indiscriminate butchery, and bayoneted in cold blood, while begging for mercy.†

Sir Henry Clinton detached captain Ferguson, with about 300 men, upon an expedition to Little Egg-harbor, under a strong convoy, to destroy the American shipping and privateers; but these being removed, captain Ferguson proceeded

† Gordon's revolution, page 106.

up to Chesnut neck, where he destroyed such vessels as were there, together with the whole village, and laid waste the adjacent country, and rejoined the squadron—October 5th.

On the 15th, the convoy with the troops, moved round to another landing place, not far distant, and landed 250 men, under the command of captain Ferguson, who advanced into the country, in the silence of night, and surprised count Pulaski's light infantry; killed the baron De Base, and lieutenant De la Broderic, with 50 privates. These were mostly butchered in cold blood, begging for mercy, under the orders of *no quarters*, as before: but count Pulaski closed this horrid scene, by a sudden charge of his cavalry, that put to flight the murderous foe, and thus saved the remnant of his infantry. Captain Ferguson made a hasty retreat, embarked his party, and returned to New York.

Admiral Graves arrived at New York, on the 16th of October, in a most shattered condition, by a violent storm, which detained him the remainder of the month, to repair the fleet. About the first of November, he put to sea, and appeared off the harbor of Boston, on a visit to the count De Estaing; but a violent storm here overtook him, scattered his fleet, destroyed the Somerset of 64 guns, on the shores of Cape Cod, and forced the rest into Rhode Island, for shelter.

Count De Estaing having now repaired and victualled his fleet, and returned the numerous civilities he had received, from the citizens of Boston, took leave of his friends, on the 3d, and set sail for the West Indies.

Lord Howe on the same day, detached commodore Hotham, with a part of the British fleet at New York, with transports, carrying 5000 men, to act against the count in the West-Indies.

On the 1st of October, colonel William Butler, at the head of a Pennsylvania regiment, covered by riflemen, commenced an expedition from Schoharie, and carried the war afresh into the Susquehannah country; destroyed the Indian villages and castles, with the other settlements, and after enduring incredible fatigues and perils, returned on the 16th, in safety.

Colonel John Butler put himself at the head of a strong party, and revenged this excursion, by entering the state of New York, and surprising colonel Alden, at Cherry Valley; an action commenced, which lasted three hours. Colonel Alden was killed; the greatest cruelties were committed; fifty or sixty men, women and children, besides soldiers, were killed

or carried into captivity ; and even the dead were made the monuments of the most savage barbarities. The party withdrew, and returned to their homes.

Sir Henry Clinton abandoned all further designs, of carrying on his operations in the north ; and turned his attention to the south. He concerted, with general Prescott, who commanded in East Florida, a plan of operations against Georgia. Pending the preparations for this enterprise, two parties, consisting of regulars and refugees, entered Georgia from Florida ; the one by water, and the other by land. The first advanced to Sunbury, and summoned the place ; but finding a spirited officer, colonel Mackintosh, who was strongly posted, they abandoned the attempt

The other moved on towards Savannah ; but being strongly opposed by general Screven, and colonel Elbert, they were constrained to abandon the enterprise and returned ; after laying waste the country with fire and sword, destroying and carrying off the negroes, cattle, &c. and committing the most shocking barbarities. General Screven fell, in the defence of his country.

Colonel Campbell embarked at Sandy Hook, (November 27th, 1778) with the 71st regiment of foot, two battalions, four of tories, and a detachment of royal artillery ; total, about 2500, under convoy of sir Hyde Parker's squadron, and arrived off the mouth of the Savannah, December 29th, and in six days, he landed his troops.

General Robert Howe was posted here, with about 800 regulars and militia ; but they were so worn down with the fatigues of a fruitless expedition into Florida, that they made but a feeble resistance. Although general Howe had chosen a judicious position, to cover the town of Savannah, yet he found himself out-generaled ; was surprised in his camp, and routed, with the loss of more than half of his army ; 48 pieces of cannon, 23 mortars, the fort, with all its contents ; the shipping in the river ; a large quantity of provisions, together with the capital of Georgia : even the defenceless inhabitants of Savannah, were bayoneted in the streets, by the murderous foe ; and the remnant of the American army fled into South Carolina.

General Prescott entered the south of Georgia, about the time general Campbell sailed from New York ; and after enduring incredible hardships and privations, arrived before Sunbury, and took it, about the time of the fall of Savannah. Gen-

eral Prescott next marched to Savannah, and took command of the royal army in Georgia; issued his proclamation, inviting the inhabitants "to lay down their arms, and submit to the royal authority, or with their arms support the royal cause."

Congress, at the request of the southern delegation, had appointed general Lincoln, to the command of the army of the south, on the 25th of September; but he did not arrive at Charleston, before the 4th of December. Generals Ashe and Rutherford joined general Lincoln, at Charleston, with about 2000 North Carolina militia, to act with the troops of South Carolina, and their regulars, in repelling the expected attack from the enemy.

On finding that Georgia was the object of destination, general Lincoln assembled about 950 men, and marched for Georgia, where he joined the remnant of the army of colonel Elbert, and on the 3d of January, 1779, established his headquarters at Purysburg.

General Lincoln here found himself at the head of only 1400 men, instead of a force of 7000 regulars, besides the militia of South Carolina and Georgia, which he had been promised; and even this small force, was destitute of cannon, arms, tents, camp utensils, powder and lead, except in very small quantities. The militia of South Carolina were in the habit of going and coming as they pleased, with impunity; being subject by the laws of the state, to no other punishment, than simply a fine. On the 24th of January, 1779, they had mostly returned to their homes, and their places were supplied by about 1100 North Carolina militia, under colonel Ashe, which augmented the army of general Lincoln, to the number of 2400 men.

At this time, general Prescott moved his whole army into South Carolina, and took possession of Port Royal island.—General Moultrie put himself at the head of the Charleston militia; commenced an attack upon the island; dislodged the enemy, and drove them back into Georgia, with great loss—February 3d.

Colonel Campbell took post at Augusta, with about 2000 regulars and Tories, where he fomented divisions and insurrections, in South Carolina, among the Tories, which greatly distressed that state.

Col. Pickins assembled a party from the district of Ninety-Six; pursued these banditti; overtook, engaged, killed, routed, and destroyed or dispersed their whole party; their leader, colonel Boyd, was slain, and the remnant threw them-

selves upon the mercy of the state. Seventy of the rebels were tried, convicted, and sentenced to death ; but mercy interposed, and only five of the principals were executed ; the remainder were pardoned.

General Lincoln ordered general Williamson to take a strong position opposite to Augusta, and watch the motions of the enemy ; and general Ashe was detached into the upper country, with 1500 to 2000 men, to support general Williamson, February 13.

Colonel Campbell, upon intelligence of this junction, made a hasty movement the same night, and retired down the river about 14 miles. This movement led general Lincoln to order general Ashe, to pursue with his detachment, and when he had gained a certain position, to leave his troops, and meet him at a certain time and place, to concert measures for their future operations. General Ashe obeyed, and the commanders met accordingly.

At this time, generals Brian and Elbert, took a strong position upon Brian creek, and the next day, general Ashe returned to his post. On the same day, the British general reconnoitred his camp very closely, and the next day, lieutenant-colonel Prevost gained the rear of the American camp, by a circuitous march of about 50 miles, and commenced a furious attack. General Elbert, with his handful of regulars, advanced to the charge, to check the enemy, until the militia could recover their surprise, and come into action ; but their surprise was roused into fear, and fear into flight ; the regulars under general Elbert, were cut to pieces, and general Ashe, with his militia, fled to their homes, *never to be recovered*. The Americans lost 150 killed, 162 captured ; the wounded were not numbered, and the remainder, about 400, joined general Lincoln.

This decisive victory, opened the whole state of Georgia to the victors, together with a free communication with the forces of South Carolina.

Alarmed for their safety, the state of Carolina chose John Rutledge esq. their governor, and delegated to him and his council, full powers, " to do every thing that appeared to him and them, necessary for the public good." They at once assembled a large body of militia, at Orangeburg, near the centre of the state, to act as occasion might require. The governor next ordered general Williamson to send parties into Georgia, and distress the enemy, by laying waste the country, and

driving off or destroying all the horses, cattle, provisions, carriages, &c. they could find.

General Lincoln took the liberty of remarking to the governor, with some severity, upon the order, as affecting alike, the innocent and the guilty, the aged and infirm, women and children, and filling the country with distress.

General Lincoln now being reinforced, at his camp at Black-swamp, determined, by the advice of a council of war, to advance into Georgia, with all his force, excepting a strong guard, to be left at Purysburg, under general Moultrie; and take some strong position, that he might circumscribe the limits of the enemy, and prevent his communication with the savages of the back country.

General Prescott suffered the American general to advance 150 miles into the country, and then availed himself of the favorable moment, and made a movement, to surprise general Moultrie, in his camp at Black swamp. The general eluded this attack, by having changed his position three hours before; and being joined by colonel Mackintosh, with his party from Purysburg, he took post at Fultinny bridge, to intercept the march of the British to Charleston.

On the first of May, general Lincoln, having learnt the movements of general Prescott, detached 300 continentals, with orders to make a rapid march, and support general Moultrie; at the same time, he moved his army into the heart of Georgia.

Amidst these movements, and the execution of the orders of governor Rutledge, the inhabitants were so distressed, as to throw themselves into the arms of the British, for succour and support. This led general Lincoln to change his operations, and move by forced marches, to support general Moultrie, and cover Charleston.

Governor Rutledge took the alarm, at the movements of general Prescott, and burnt all the houses in the suburbs, to guard against the approach of the enemy. He next called in the neighboring militia, and general Moultrie joined his troops in the defence of Charleston.

General Prescott pushed his pursuit, and on the 11th, crossed over the ferry and appeared before Charleston. On the same day, count Pulaski arrived with his legionary corps, and entered with spirit, into the defence of the city.

General Prescott pushed his operations, with such vigor, to carry the town before general Lincoln could arrive for its

defence, that the civil authority sent out the following proposition :

“ South Carolina will remain in a state of neutrality, till the close of the war, and then follow the fate of her neighbors, on condition the royal army will withdraw.” To which general Prescott replied : “ The garrison are in arms, and they shall surrender prisoners of war.”

General Lincoln appeared with his army, before general Prescott could make any serious impression. The enemy withdrew to Beaufort, and from thence back to Georgia, and Charleston was relieved.

General Prescott indulged his army, in the most abandoned system of plunder and devastation, and the sufferings of Carolina were such, as would have marked the ravages of an Indian invasion. More than 3000 slaves were carried off by the enemy, and sold generally, in the West-India markets.

Sir Henry Clinton made a diversion in favor of general Prescott, by sending 2000 men from New-York, into Virginia, at this time, under sir George Collier and general Matthews, who took possession of Portsmouth and the remains of Norfolk, about the 10th of May, 1779.

General Matthews sent forward a detachment the same day, to Suffolk, where they destroyed a magazine of provisions, with such vessels and naval stores as were found there, and laid the town in ashes, together with all the gentlemen's seats on the plantations, wherever they went. The fleet committed the same ravages upon the coast ; and within the space of one fortnight, about 130 vessels were captured or destroyed, together with 300 hogsheads of tobacco ; and the *brave* general embarked his troops, with his booty, and returned safe to New-York.

General Matthews joined sir Henry Clinton, in a successful expedition against Stony-Point, and Verplank,† and then sir Henry moved on towards the Highlands.‡

Previous to these movements, lieutenant-governor Hamilton, of Detroit, had concerted a plan for laying waste the back settlements of Virginia, by bringing into action the Cherokees, Chickasaws, and the Indian tribes about Detroit, Michilimackinac, &c.

This plan was deeply laid, and the whole interior of Kentucky, Tennessee, &c. doomed to destruction. To expe-

† Forty miles north of New York.

‡ Sixty miles north of New-York.



dite the plan, governor Hamilton took up his quarters at Vincennes, that he might act the more promptly and effectually, December 15th, 1778.

When the knowledge of this expedition reached Virginia, colonel Clark assembled 139 men, and took the desperate resolution of surprising governor Hamilton, at Vincennes, and by one bold stroke, putting an end to the plan. Colonel Clark, after enduring incredible hardships, traversed the desert sixteen days, and reached Vincennes on the 23d of February, 1779; carried the town by assault, and the next day general Hamilton surrendered the fort, with a garrison of seventy-nine men, as prisoners of war. Colonel Clark next detached sixty men, to intercept a convoy of provisions from Detroit, to carry on the war, which was all taken to the amount of £10,000, in goods, provisions, &c. together with a guard of forty men. Thus, by this bold stroke, the expedition was defeated; Hamilton with his coadjutors, were safely conveyed into Virginia, and committed to close prison, and in irons, there to remain for further orders.

Previous to these operations, sir Henry Clinton had concerted measures with the Tories and British, under his command, to assume a general system of predatory war in America, and submitted his plans to the British ministry, who expressed their approbation. This plan soon reached the American commission at Paris, and was communicated to governor Trumbull, of Connecticut, on the 6th of April, 1779.

Sir Henry Clinton detached general Tryon, (late governor of New York) with 2600 land forces, protected by a squadron under sir George Collier, and supported by general Garth, to begin their depredations in Connecticut. On the 4th of July, the armament moved into the sound, and the commanders issued their proclamation to the citizens of Connecticut, offering pardon and protection, to all such as would return to their allegiance; but threatening ruin and destruction, to all who should reject this overture. On the morning of the 6th, general Tryon landed his division at East-Haven; general Gath landed at the same time, at West-Haven, and proceeded directly to New-Haven, and gave up the town to promiscuous pillage. The militia collected so fast on the next day, that the enemy abandoned the town in haste; burnt several stores on long wharf, and embarked their troops.

General Tryon proceeded to plunder, and lay waste the town of East-Haven; destroyed the cattle, &c. and then es-

aped on board his fleet, and sailed for Fairfield. General Tryon sent a flag to colonel Whiting, and summoned the town to surrender, within one hour ; to which the colonel sent the following reply : " The flames have now preceded our reply to your flag, and we shall oppose to the utmost, that power, that is exerted against injured innocence." On the same night, the town was given up to pillage and conflagration, which extended to Green's farms ; and on the next day, the enemy made a hasty retreat on board their fleet, and left the town of Fairfield, smoking in ruins. This hero of pillage and conflagration, proceeded to Norwalk, and laid the village in ashes ; then returned to New-York, *covered with disgrace and infamy.*

General Washington at this time, concerted a plan of operations against Stony-Point, which checked all further depredations of general Tryon, and occasioned his hasty recall to New-York.

General Wayne commenced his movements against Stony Point, on the 15th, at noon ; and after having crossed the mountains, through dangerous and difficult defiles, he approached the fort, about eight of the same evening. Having reconnoitered the position of the enemy, the general, after forming his detachment into two divisions, put himself at the head of his brave troops, and at twenty minutes past twelve, precisely, on the night of the 16th, entered the fort with screwed bayonets, amidst a most tremendous fire of musket and grape, and carried the fortress without firing a gun. Lieutenant-colonel Fleury entered the fort with his division, upon the opposite side at the same time, and both parties met in the centre ; but the garrison was spared, and made prisoners of war, to the number of 543. General Wayne dismantled the fort, and brought off the cannon, stores, &c. agreeable to orders.

Congress passed a vote of thanks to general Washington, general Wayne, and the officers and soldiers under their command, for the masterly exploit, in the capture of Stony Point.

About this time, general Sullivan, at the head of 5000 men, marched against the Six Nations, by the way of the river Susquehanna, to chastise them for their ravages and depredations ; burnt and destroyed their villages, corn, &c. and reduced them to terms of submission.†

The following memorable naval combat deserves attention.

† Forty villages, and 16,000 bushels of corn were destroyed

About the last of July, the American captain, John Paul Jones, sailed from port L'Orient, in France, on a cruise, on board the French ship, *Le Bon Homme Richard*, of forty guns, and 375 men; accompanied by frigates *Alliance*, of thirty-six guns, *La Pallas*, thirty-two guns, and *La Vengeance*, an armed brig, of twelve guns, and a cutter. Commodore Jones cruised off the coast of Scotland, with his little squadron, until he fell in with the homeward bound Baltic fleet, under the convoy of the *Serapis*, captain Pierson, and *Countess of Scarborough*, captain Percy. When captain Pierson discovered commodore Jones, he made sail to cover the convoy, and gave signal at the same, for the *Countess of Scarborough* to join him, which was immediately done, September 23.

Commodore Jones immediately laid his ship alongside of the *Serapis*, and commenced an action, which soon became desperate; but the *Serapis* appeared to reap advantage from her superior management. To obviate this, commodore Jones laid his ship across the bow of the *Serapis*, and the ships grappled, yard arm and yard arm, and the muzzles of their guns were nearly in contact. In this position they lay, vomiting forth death, and strewing the decks with carnage and destruction, about two hours. Both ships were frequently on fire, but the *Serapis* not less than ten or twelve times. The *Alliance* attempted to co-operate in the action, and with some good effect, until the darkness of the evening rendered it impossible to distinguish correctly, when she killed eleven men, and wounded several others, on board the *Bon Homme Richard*. At this critical moment, the *Serapis* struck, and closed the sanguinary scene. The *Bon Homme Richard*, at the close of the action, was so much of a wreck, as to have seven feet of water in her hold, which rendered it necessary to remove the crew on board the *Serapis*, and the wounded on board the *Pallas*. On the 24th, her pumps were closely plied; but on the 25th she went down: fortunately no lives were lost.

The *Pallas* engaged and took the *Countess of Scarborough*, at the same time, and commodore Jones sailed with his prizes, for the coast of Holland, and anchored off the Texel.

This memorable action gave great credit to the naval prowess of America.

## CHAPTER X.

## GENERAL OPERATIONS OF THE REVOLUTION, CONTINUED.

I pass over the expedition of major Lee, against the fortress at Paulus' Hook ; also the appointment of the hon. John Jay, president of congress, as minister plenipotentiary to the court of Madrid, and that of the honorable Samuel Huntington, of Connecticut, as his successor in the presidency ; also the appointment of the hon. John Adams, as minister plenipotentiary to the court of St. James, to negotiate a peace, that I may continue the southern war.

General Lincoln did not attempt to pursue general Prescott, in his flight into Georgia ; but devoted his whole strength, to render Charleston secure against all future invasion from the enemy.

During these operations, he learnt the successes of the French fleet in the West-Indies, under the count De Estaing, and that after the conquest of Grenada, he had retired to cape Francois. Governor Rutledge, general Lincoln, and the French consul at Charleston, wrote the count, pressingly, to come to the coast of Georgia, and co-operate with the American army, in the reduction of Savannah.

The count accepted the invitation, as being agreeable to his instructions ; and on the first of September, he arrived off Charleston, with a fleet of twenty sail of the line, two of fifty guns, and eleven frigates. A British man-of-war, of eighty guns, and three frigates, were surprised and taken.

General Lincoln, upon the arrival of the count, marched with his whole force, for Savannah ; the fleet sailed to join him ; the French troops were landed in ten or twelve days, and count De Estaing summoned the town to surrender, to the arms of the king of France. General Lincoln remonstrated against this, as the Americans were acting in concert. The count persisted, and general Prescott demanded a cessation of hostilities for twenty-four hours, to deliberate, which was granted. During this time, seven or eight hundred troops arrived from Beaufort, and general Prescott determined to defend the town to the last extremity. The count saw his error, and consulted general Lincoln, and they united their efforts to carry the town by a regular siege. On the 23d of September, the allies broke ground, and commenced their operations. On the 4th of October, they opened their batteries, and began

to play upon the town with nine mortars, and fifty four pieces of cannon, which continued four or five days, without intermission, but without any apparent effect. On the morning of the 8th, the enemy sallied out and attempted to set fire to the abattis ; but the materials were green, the weather moist, and the attempt failed. General Prescott next requested, that the women and children might be removed ; but this was refused, and the allies resolved to carry the town by storm. The morning of the 9th was the time agreed upon, and the assault commenced. The attack was well concerted and bravely executed by the allies ; yet the fire of the enemy was so destructive, that the troops gave way, after having planted the French and American standards upon the British redoubts. At this eventful moment, the brave count Pulaski fell, mortally wounded, at the head of his legion, when charging the enemy in their rear, in the full career of victory. The allies supported this desperate conflict fifty-five minutes, under a deadly fire from the enemy's batteries, and then made good their retreat, with the loss of 637 French, and 234 continentals, killed and wounded.

General Prescott conducted this defence like an able general, and deserved well of his country.

Count De Estaing embarked his troops, cannon, baggage, &c. in ten days, and was immediately dispersed by a storm. Although seven ships had been ordered to the Chesapeake, yet one solitary ship only, gained that station ; the others stood off for the West-Indies.

Congress resolved, that a monument be erected to the memory of count Pulaski, who died in October, of the wounds received in the attack on Savannah, on the 9th. Thus fell Pulaski, who services did honor to his nation, and the American cause.

During these operations, a colonel John White, of the Georgia militia, with six men, including his servant, surprised a battallion of Delancey's corps of royal refugees, near the river Ogeechee, consisting of 100 men, besides forty regulars, and by a masterly stratagem, secured the whole, and conducted them safely through the country, twenty-five miles, to an American post.†

On the 25th of October, agreeable to orders, general Pigot evacuated Rhode-Island, in great good order, and repaired to

† Doctor Ramsey's history, vol. II. page 35—43.

New-York, to support sir Henry Clinton against an expected visit from the French fleet.

On the 26th of December, sir Henry, finding the coast clear, embarked 7500 troops, and sailed for South Carolina, under convoy of admiral Arbuthnot.

Sir Henry appeared off Charleston, about the last of January, 1780; but such was the condition of the fleet and troops, that he was not prepared to land until the 11th of February; he then effected a landing on the south side of John's island, distant about thirty miles from Charleston.†

To meet this expected invasion, congress had ordered on to Charleston, three of the continental frigates; and general Lincoln had despatched a trusty officer, to the Havanna, to solicit the assistance of the Spanish governor, in ships and troops, for the defence of Charleston; promising at the same time to furnish a force of 2000 men, to co-operate with the Spaniards, in the reduction of St. Augustine.

General Lincoln engaged in the defence of Charleston, with only 1400 regulars, and 1000 North Carolina militia; yet he hoped to preserve the town against the regular approach of sir Henry, with an army of 7 or 8,000 men.

Admiral Arbuthnot entered the harbor with such ships as could be floated over the bar, and the American frigates retired up to the town, landed their crews, guns, &c. and prepared for the defence.

On the 10th of April, sir Henry had so far completed his approaches, that he summoned the town; but the garrison, with their brave general at their head, were firm. General Woodford, from Virginia, with a detachment of 700 regulars, had marched 500 miles in twenty-eight days, and reached Charleston about this time; but the garrison were not augmented by this force, for about the same number of North Carolina militia, whose term of service had expired, marched for their homes.

Admiral Arbuthnot passed fort Moultrie, with a strong breeze, under a severe and galling cannonade, and anchored under the batteries of the town.

On the 12th, sir Henry opened his batteries upon the town; the fire was firmly received and returned by the besieged, and continued eight days. On the 18th, sir Henry received

† One ordnance ship was wrecked and lost on her passage, together with several transports; and others were taken by the American cruisers.

a reinforcement from New York, of 3000 men, and on the 20th, he had carried forward his approaches, to the distance of 300 yards from the American lines.

General Lincoln now called a council of war, to determine on the exigencies of the case, and the result was as follows :

“ A retreat would be attended with many distressing inconveniences, if not altogether impracticable, for the undermentioned causes.

1. The authority is averse to it, and would counteract the measure.

2. It must be performed in the face of a superior enemy, across a river three miles wide, &c.

3. The passes are occupied by the enemy, which must be forced.

4. All these obstacles being overcome, the Santee must be crossed without boats in the face of a pursuing enemy, &c. We therefore advise to make immediate terms with the enemy.”

These terms were immediately rejected by one party, and strongly advocated by the other ; and on the 23d Sir Henry pushed the siege. The garrison resisted by their sorties.

On the 26th, general Lincoln again summoned another council of war, and at the eventful moment, the flag of the enemy was seen to wave on the walls of fort Moultrie. Sullivan's island fell into the hands of the enemy, on the 6th of May.

Sir Henry Clinton pushed his approaches, and on the 8th, he opened a correspondence with general Lincoln ; renewed his summons, offered terms, &c. and threatened to renew hostilities at 8 o'clock. The eventful hour arrived ; an awful, solemn silence ensued ; neither party fired a gun ; all was anxious suspense for an hour, neither party moved a position. At 9, the besieged opened a fire upon the enemy, who in their turn, opened their batteries upon the town, which threatened to bury it in ruins. The town was repeatedly on fire, and many houses were burnt ; at the same time, Sir Henry advanced his last parallel to the distance of twenty yards, and prepared for a general assault, by sea and land.

The critical moment had now arrived : the people by their leaders, called on general Lincoln to renew the conference, and make terms with the enemy. The lieutenant governor

and council enforced the request. The militia threw down their arms, and all was submission.

General Lincoln renewed the conference with sir Henry, and accepted his terms. Sir Henry complied, and the next day the garrison, with all such as had borne arms, marched out and became prisoners of war, May 12th.

The French consul, and the subjects of France and Spain, were, with their houses and effects, to be protected; but they themselves were to be considered prisoners of war.

At this time, colonel Buford was advancing through the upper country, with a party of 300 Virginians, to the relief of Charleston. When colonel Tarlton learnt the position of this party, he advanced with about 700 cavalry and mounted infantry, by a forced march of 105 miles, in fifty-four hours, and surprised them at the Waxhaws, and summoned the colonel to surrender. A parley ensued; and during the conference, colonel Tarlton surrounded the party, and cut them to pieces, while begging for mercy. Thirty-seven only, were made prisoners, and the remainder were either killed or wounded in the butchery. Lord Cornwallis highly applauded the act, and recommended colonel Tarlton specially, to the favor of his sovereign. With this blow, the state of South Carolina was subdued, and a regular British government was organized.

General Gates, then in Virginia, was appointed to succeed general Lincoln, in the southern command.

Georgia and South Carolina were now wholly subdued, and the enemy saw his way clear to advance into North Carolina.

To counteract these movements of Tarlton, and keep up the spirits of the people, generals Marion and Sumpter, at the head of their flying parties, kept up a system of predatory warfare, that greatly harassed and annoyed the enemy. So sharp and desperate were there attacks, that in one instance general Sumpter reduced the prince of Wales' regiment, from the number of 273 to 9.

On the 6th of June, generals Kniphausen, Robertson, Tryon, and Sterling, crossed over from Staten Island into New-Jersey, at the head of 5000 regulars. On the 7th, they advanced to Connecticut farms, distant about five miles, in quest of the Rev. James Cadwell, whose patriotic zeal had rendered him peculiarly obnoxious; wantonly shot his wife in her own house; then burnt the house and meeting-house, with



about a dozen other dwelling houses. The royal army next attempted to advance to Springfield ; but were checked by colonel Dayton, supported by general Maxwell, and they fled in disorder.

General Washington considered this movement as a feint in sir Henry Clinton, to open the way for an attack upon West-Point ; he accordingly detached general Greene, at the head of a strong party, to watch the motions of the enemy. General Washington, learning from general Greene, that Springfield was their object of destination, sent forward a detachment to support general Greene.

The enemy advanced upon Springfield, at five in the morning of the 23d of June. General Greene disputed every pass valiantly ; but obstinate bravery was constrained to yield to superior numbers ; general Greene retired to the high grounds, and the enemy gained the town. Here the ravages of the Farms were renewed ; Britannia played the savage again, and Springfield smoked in ruins.

Fired with the spirit of revenge, at this wanton repetition of savage war, the militia rallied in force, and the royal army fled with precipitation, and returned to Staten Island.

The operations of general Greene, and his officers and troops, merited, and received the thanks of the commander-in-chief.

About this time, the marquis La Fayette returned from France, and arrived at head quarters. The marquis had negotiated for America, at the French court, and obtained supplies adapted to her wants, and now announced to general Washington and to congress, that an armament would soon follow him from France.

Congress immediately resolved, " that bills to the amount of £25,000, be drawn on doctor Franklin, minister to the court of France, and that bills to the same amount, be drawn on Mr. Jay, minister to the court of Spain, and the money applied to the immediate use of the armies."

Sir Henry Clinton had committed the southern war to the charge of lord Cornwallis, with 4000 troops, and returned with the remainder of the army to New-York.

Paper money had now become so alarming in its effects, arising from depreciation, that congress resolved to call in by taxes, the sum of 200 millions of dollars, and redeem it by a new emission of one dollar for twenty. This plan succeeded for the present time ; but thousands of the best patriots in the

nation, were ruined by the depreciation of that currency, they had sacrificed their estates to support at par, i. e. equal to gold and silver.†

At this time, Mr. John Adams left the court of London, (where he had been sent in 1776, to negotiate a treaty of peace) and was ordered by congress, to repair to Holland, to bring to a close, the plans of alliance and commerce, which had been two years in agitation.

On the 10th of July, the armament from France, promised by the marquis La Fayette, arrived at Newport, (Rhode-Island) consisting of two ships of eighty guns, one of seventy-four, four of sixty-four, two frigates of forty, a cutter of twenty, an hospital ship, pierced for sixty-four, one bomb ship, and thirty-two transports; under the command of the chevalier de Ternay. Also four old regiments of land forces, together with the legion of d'Alawzern, and a battalion of artillery; in the whole, about 6000, under the command of lieutenant general count de Rochambeau.

General Heath received the count at his landing, and put him and his troops in possession of the Island, where they were handsomely accommodated. The general assembly, then in session at Newport, by their special committee, presented the count with a complimentary address; to which the count replied, with assurances, that a much greater force would soon follow him, and that his whole powers would be devoted to the service of the United States.

"The French troops," added the count, "are under the strictest discipline, and acting under the orders of general Washington, will live with the Americans as brethren. I am highly sensible of the marks of respect shewn me by the assembly, and beg leave to assure them, that as brethren, not only my life, but the lives of the troops under my command, are devoted to their service."

The marquis La Fayette, also met the French officers, and

† The scale of depreciation stands thus:—Near the close of the year 1777, 3 for 1; in 1778, 5 or 6 for 1; in 1779, 20 to 30 for 1; in 1780, 50 to 100 for 1; and soon after 150 for 1, and finally 2 to 300 for 1.

Such was the depreciation, "that four months pay of a private soldier would not buy a bushel of wheat for his family, and the pay of a colonel would not purchase oats for his horse; yet such was the wisdom of the commander-in-chief, and his officers, and such the patriotism of his soldiers, as well as of the nation, that all this was borne with patience, fortitude, and resignation, as a necessary sacrifice to the cause of liberty."

witnessed the respectful attention, as well as the general hilarity of the occasion.

General Washington recommended to the officers of the American army, in general orders, to wear black and white cockades, as a compliment to their illustrious allies.

The arrival of this fleet gave a shock to admiral Arbuthnot, at New-York, whose fleet amounted to only four ships of the line ; but he was joined by admiral Graves, on the 20th, with six ships of the line, and felt himself secure.

With this reinforcement, sir Henry Clinton meditated an attack upon the French at Newport ; embarked immediately, 3000 troops, and moved with the whole fleet to Huntington bay, Long Island.

Massachusetts and Connecticut took the alarm, and detached a strong body of militia to support their illustrious allies.

General Washington made a diversion, and moved his whole force down to Kingsbridge ; determined to act offensively against New-York. This changed the views of sir Henry, and he returned hastily, to protect his strong hold, August 1.

Lord Cornwallis, having settled a system of government in South Carolina, prepared to penetrate into North Carolina.

General Gates, with his shadow of an army, moved across Deep river, on the 27th of July, to watch the motions of the enemy. On the 6th of August, he was joined by general Caswell, at the head of a fine body of North Carolina militia, who were in good spirits, but under bad discipline ; and he encamped at the Cross Roads, on his way to Camden. On the 13th, he moved forward his army to Clermont, where he was joined by brigadier-general Stevens, with about 700 Virginia militia. An express also arrived, informing him, that colonel Sumpter would join him at Camden, with a detachment of South Carolina militia, and that an escort of clothing, ammunition and stores, was on its way from Charleston to Camden, for the use of the garrison posted there.

General Gates immediately detached lieutenant-colonel Woodford, at the head of the Maryland line, consisting of 100 infantry, a company of artillery, with two brass field-pieces, and about 300 North Carolina militia, to join colonel Sumpter, reduce the forts, and intercept the convoy. General Gates prepared to support colonel Sumpter with his whole force ; total about 4000. .

Lord Cornwallis, unknown to general Gates, had entered Camden the day before, and meditated an attack upon general

Gates, in his camp at Clermont. Both generals put their armies in motion, early in the evening of the 15th, and their advance parties met in the woods, about 2 o'clock in the morning of the 16th ; a conflict ensued, the Americans gave way in some disorder ; but they soon recovered, and a skirmishing continued through the night. When morning appeared, both generals made their dispositions to contest the field. An action commenced ; the regular troops were firm, but the militia, being overpowered by the British bayonets, gave way, and dispersed as they fled. The victory was complete, and the general and his regulars were abandoned to their fate. Several parties of militia, who were advancing to join the army, turned their arms against the fugitives, and thus completed the overthrow. The pursuit continued for more than twenty miles, and the road was strewed with the fragments of this routed army, together with the wounded, the dead and the dying. A party of horse, supported by 200 infantry, at the distance of more than eighty miles from the scene of action, upon the first intelligence, abandoned their ground, and sought safety by flight.

The losses of his lordship, his want of supplies, and the sickly season, all constrained him to abandon the pursuit, and return to Camden.

In this bloody action, fell the brave baron de Kalb, who was second in command, at the head of the Maryland troops. The baron was a German, who had served with distinction in the wars of Europe, and sacrificed his life in America, in defence of those just principles of liberty, he delighted to cherish.

Congress resolved, "that a monument be erected to his memory at Annapolis."

Colonel Tarlton continued to ravage the country ; and general Gates at the same time, exerted all his efforts to collect an army at Hillsborough ; but he was not successful, and he removed to Charlotte.

Early in December, general Greene, (who had been detached to this service soon after the action of Springfield) arrived and took the command. The whole force at this time, did not exceed 2300 men, and these were without clothes, magazines or discipline ; subsisting on daily collections, in the heart of a disaffected country, and in the face of a victorious enemy.

Lord Cornwallis was reinforced with 1500 troops, and recommenced his operations.

Colonel Tarlton was detached at the head of his cavalry, to dislodge general Morgan from his position at Cowpens. He commenced his operations with his usual impetuosity; traversed the country for several days, lying waste every thing in his course, until he arrived at Morgan's position, and commenced an action with the same impetuosity; the Americans were dislodged with some disorder, but they rallied to the charge, and were victorious in their turn. Tarlton was defeated, his army routed, his artillery and baggage taken, and he, with the mounted fugitives, fled to lord Cornwallis, January 7, 1781.

This defeat roused his lordship; he commenced a pursuit, and the Americans retired. General Greene had the address to harass his lordship, and yet avoid a general action, until he arrived at Guilford, near the confines of Virginia, where he made a stand, and gave him battle. General Greene, with his little army, had hopes of success against his lordship's pursuing forces, though greatly superior. The movements were well concerted, and well executed, and the conflict was sharp and bloody; but the militia gave way, the regulars were overpowered, and general Greene drew off his troops in good order, and took a strong position.

The severity of the action occasioned his lordship to make a retrograde movement, to recover his losses.

At this time, sir Henry Clinton detached a fleet from New-York, with 1500 troops on board, to make a diversion in Virginia, and prepare to co-operate with lord Cornwallis. This fleet entered the Chesapeake bay, landed the troops, and commenced the most serious and alarming depredations. Several efforts were made to dislodge them, but to no effect.

At this critical moment, general Greene made a movement to return to South Carolina, and carry the war into what had now become the enemy's country. He boldly advanced towards Camden, and gave battle to lord Rawdon, then stationed in that vicinity, April, 1781. A desperate conflict ensued; victory for a long time held a doubtful balance; both parties withdrew from the combat, and left the field covered with their dead. Lord Rawdon retired to Camden, and took post as a permanent position.

General Greene advanced, and by a desperate assault, was on the point of carrying the strong fortress of Ninety-Six, the

reduction of which would have recovered all South Carolina, except Charleston.

At this critical moment, lord Rawdon retired in person to Charleston : put himself at the head of 1700 fresh troops, then arrived from Ireland, and by forced marches, advanced to the relief of Ninety-Six. The approach of his lordship, compelled general Greene to abandon the assault, when engaged hand to hand with the enemy, and when victory was ready to decide in his favor. The general drew off his army towards Camden, in good order, and his lordship pursued ; but general Greene eluded his lordship, by filing off towards Charleston, and taking a strong position upon the high hills of Santee. Lord Rawdon retired to Charleston.

The war, during these operations in the south, raged in Virginia, under the command of general Philips, through the month of April, and the ravages of the enemy exceeded all description. At Petersburg they destroyed all the shipping, and about 400 hogsheads of tobacco. At Osborn's Mills, they took two ships and ten smaller vessels, laden with cordage, flour, &c. Four ships and a number of smaller vessels were burnt or sunk, besides many others destroyed by the Americans, to prevent their falling into the hands of the enemy ; together with about 3000 hogsheads of tobacco, April 27. On the 30th, they penetrated to Manchester, and destroyed 1200 hogsheads more ; from thence they proceeded to Warwick, and laid waste the shipping, both in the river and on the stocks, also extensive rope-walks, tanneries, warehouses, and magazines of flour, mills, &c. in one general conflagration, and then embarked on board their shipping.

The baron Steuben was opposed to this party of marauders ; but he could not collect a force sufficient to check their career.

General Washington detached the marquis La Fayette, with a body of troops to join the baron ; but when he arrived at Baltimore, such was the state of his troops, his military chest, and the public credit, that he was constrained to borrow 2000 guineas, upon the strength of his own credit, April 17th, to enable him to proceed. Upon the strength of this, he advanced to Richmond, (200 miles) where he was joined by the baron Steuben, on the 29th, with the Virginia militia ; and they covered the city of Richmond.

The marquis La Fayette watched the movements of the enemy, with great zeal and activity ; but his force was not suffi-

cient to check all their operations ; and general Philips entered Petersburg on the 9th of May, where he died on the 13th.

General Greene, in his letter to the marquis La Fayette, dated May 1st, thus expressed himself :

“ You may depend upon it, that nothing can equal the sufferings of our little army, but their merits. Let not the love of fame get the better of your prudence, and plunge you into a misfortune, in too eager a pursuit after glory. This is the voice of a friend, not of a general.”

Pending these movements, lord Cornwallis had advanced from Guilford to Wilmington, and left general Greene to pursue his southern expedition. From Wilmington he advanced on the 25th, by forced marches, to join general Philips, and arrived at Petersburg, on the 30th. Philips was dead ; but his lordship found a force of 1800 regulars, which was attached to his command.

Thus reinforced, his lordship advanced towards Richmond, to dislodge the marquis La Fayette, who was now destined, with about 3000 men only, to enter the lists with the renowned hero of the south.

Flushed with his triumphs, his lordship in his letter to sir Henry Clinton, thus expressed himself : “ *The boy cannot escape me.*” The marquis eluded the movement of his lordship, and evacuated Richmond, on the 27th.

Lord Cornwallis made a movement to prevent the junction of general Wayne with the marquis ; but the general joined the marquis with 800 Pennsylvania militia, on the 7th of June.

Lord Cornwallis commenced a system of predatory war, destroyed more than 2000 hog-heads of tobacco, &c. in his march from Richmond to Williamsburg. On the 4th of July, he retired towards Portsmouth.

General Wayne, supposing the main British army to have crossed James river, commenced a sudden attack with his 800 militia, upon what he supposed to be their rear guard ; but to his surprise, he discovered his lordship at the head of the main army, ready to receive him. General Wayne saw but one alternative : he advanced to the charge at the head of his column, consisting of about 300 men, and the conflict was sharp ; he then availed himself of this first impression, and hastily withdrew, leaving his lordship in as much surprise as he found him. No pursuit followed, from a cautious fear, lest this feint (as was supposed) might draw him into an ambushade.

His lordship retired in the night, and effected his march to Portsmouth, and left the marquis to indulge in a few days repose.

---

## CHAPTER XI.

### REVOLUTION, CONTINUED.

Immediately after the departure of sir Henry Clinton from New-York, the hard winter of 1778—80, increased in its severities. The North and East rivers were frozen so hard as to have permitted an army, with its heavy cannon, to pass and re-pass; but the privations and distresses of the American army, under the immediate command of general Washington, were so severe as to prevent him from availing himself of this unexpected event.†

Immediately after the fall of Charleston, in May, sir Henry Clinton returned to New-York, to commence the operations of the season.

About the middle of September, 1780, general Washington retired from head quarters, (near New-York) with his suit, general Knox and the marquis La Fayette, to meet admiral Terney and count Rochambeau, at Hartford, (Connecticut) agreeable to appointment; and about the 21st. the parties met accordingly. The avowed object of this conference was to concert measures for the reduction of New-York.

In the midst of this conference, an express arrived from West Point, on the Hudson, announcing the traitorous designs of general Arnold. The council was immediately closed; the parties retired, and general Washington flew to the relief of

† This winter known to this day by the appellation of the *hard winter*, was so distressing to the army under the immediate command of general Washington, at Morristown, that he often thought it impossible to keep his encampment from breaking up, and his army from disbanding. The distresses of this army continued even to the month of May, when congress sent a special committee to inquire into their sufferings, and report to that body.

The amount of their report was “that the sufferings of the army were great, almost without a parallel, and that they were almost entirely destitute of all the necessaries, conveniences, and comforts of an army, particularly in the hospital department; and that nothing but patriotism, and good discipline could have supported them under their sufferings.”



West Point. On his arrival, he found the fortress dismantled, the cannon dismounted, and that Arnold had fled and taken refuge on board the British sloop of war *Vulture*, then laying in the river.

Whilst his excellency was employed in repairing the fortress, a prisoner was announced, who proved to be the unfortunate major Andre, who had volunteered his services to sir Henry Clinton, to negociate the treacherous design. His character was that of spy; his fate was death! Let us pass over this distressing scene. This righteous sacrifice greatly interested the feelings, and touched the sympathy of every American breast.†

† The whole transaction between Arnold and Andre, was found in Andre's boot, in the hand writing of Arnold. This contained a plan of the works at West Point, and the manner of delivery, &c. Andre was executed on the 2d of October, 1780.

Letter from major Andre to general Washington, previous to his trial. dated Salem, 24th September, 1770.

"SIR—What I have as yet said, concerning myself, was in the justifiable attempt to be extricated; I am too little accustomed to duplicity to have succeeded.

"I beg your excellency will be persuaded, that no alteration in the temper of my mind, or apprehension for my safety, induces me to take the step of addressing you, but that it is to secure myself from an imputation of having assumed a mean character, for treacherous purposes, or self interest—a conduct incompatible with the principles that actuated me, as well as with my condition in life.

"It is to vindicate my fame, that I speak, and not to solicit security.

"The person in your possession, is major John Andre, adjutant-general to the British army.

"The influence of one commander in the army of his adversary, is an advantage taken in war. I agreed to meet on ground, not within the posts of either army, a person who was to give me intelligence; I came up in the *Vulture*, man-of-war, for this effect, and was fetched by a boat from the shore, to the beach; being there, I was told that the approach of day would prevent my return, and that I must be concealed to the next night. I was in my regimentals, and had fairly risked my person.

"Against my stipulation, my intention, and without my knowledge beforehand, I was conducted within one of your posts. Your excellency may conceive my sensation on this occasion, and will imagine how much more I must have been affected by a refusal to re-conduct me back the next night, as I had been brought. Thus become a prisoner, I had to concert my escape. I quitted my uniform, and was passed another way in the night, without the American posts, to neutral ground, and informed, I was beyond all armed parties, and left to press for New York. I was taken at Tarrytown, by some volunteers.

"Thus, as I have had the honor to relate, was I betrayed into the vile condition of an enemy in disguise, within your posts.

The feelings of general Washington upon this eventful occasion, may be seen in the following extract from his private correspondence. of October 13th :

“In no instance since the commencement of the war, has the interposition of Divine Providence, appeared more remarkably conspicuous, than in the rescue of the fort and garrison at West Point. Andre has met his fate, and with that fortitude that was to have been expected from an accomplished man, and a gallant officer ; *but I am mistaken if Arnold is not undergoing at this time, the torments of a mental hell.*”†

“Having avowed myself a British officer, I have nothing to reveal, but what relates to myself, which is true, on the honor of an officer and a gentleman.

“The request I have to make of your excellency, and I am conscious I address myself well, is, that in any rigor which policy may dictate, a decency of conduct towards me, may evince, that though unfortunate, I am branded with nothing dishonorable, as no motive could be mine, but the service of my king, and as I was involuntarily an impostor.

“Another request is, that I may be permitted to write an open letter to sir Henry Clinton, and another to a friend for clothes and linen.

“I take the liberty to mention the condition of some gentlemen at Charleston, who, being either on parole or under protection, were engaged in a conspiracy against us. Though their situation is not similar, they are objects who may be set in exchange for me, or are persons whom the treatment I receive might affect.

“It is no less, sir, in a confidence in the generosity of your mind, than on account of your superior station, that I have chosen to importune you with this letter. I have the honor to be, sir, with great respect, your excellency's most obedient and humble servant.

JOHN ANDRE, Adjutant-General.

“His Excellency Gen. Washington, &c. &c.”

† Having matured the plan of attempting to take Arnold in New-York and bringing him to justice, that he might spare Andre, general Washington sent to major Lee, to repair to head quarters, (at Tappan, on the Hudson) where, upon his arrival, he thus addressed him :

“I have sent for you in the expectation, that you have some one in your corps, who is willing to undertake a delicate and hazardous project. Whoever comes forward, will confer great obligations upon me, personally ; and in behalf of the United States, I will reward him amply. No time is to be lost ; he must proceed, if possible, this night.—I intend to seize Arnold, and save Andre.”

Major Lee named a sergeant major of his corps, by the name of Champe, a native of Virginia ; a man full of bone and muscle, with a countenance grave, thoughtful and taciturn—of tried courage, and inflexible perseverance.

Champe was sent for by major Lee, and the plan proposed, which was to desert and escape to New York ; appear friendly to the enemy ; watch Arnold, and by the assistance of such trusty friends as he could procure, seize Arnold and convey him to some private place upon the

On the third of November, congress, highly impressed with a sense of the merits of the three distinguished patriots

river, to be agreed upon, where boats should be in waiting to convey him away.

Champe listened to the plan attentively ; but with the spirit of a soldier of honor and integrity, replied, " It is not danger nor difficulty that deters me from immediately accepting the proposal, but the ignominy of desertion, and the hypocrisy of enlisting with the enemy."

To which major Lee replied, " that although he would appear to desert, yet as he obeyed the call of his commander-in-chief, his departure could not be considered as criminal, and if he suffered in his reputation for a time, the matter should one day be explained to his credit." It was further urged, " that to bring such a villain as Arnold to justice, loaded with guilt as he was, and to save Andre, so young, so brave, so accomplished, and so beloved ; and to achieve so much good, in the cause of his country, was more than sufficient to counterbalance all his objections."

Champe felt the force of this reasoning, and accepted the service. It was eleven o'clock at night ; but he hastily returned to camp, with his instructions in his pocket, and taking his cloak and valise, &c. drew his horse from the picket, mounted and pushed forward with full speed for New-York.

Within the space of half an hour, captain Carnes, the officer of the night, waited upon major Lee, and informed him, that one of the patrols had discovered a dragoon, who, being challenged, put spurs to his horse, and made his escape.

Major Lee, who was in vain attempting to rest, complained of fatigue, and coolly replied, " that the patrol, most probably, had mistaken a countryman for a dragoon," and thus attempted to elude the complaint, and save a pursuit. But captain Carnes was alive to his duty, and retired in haste, to assemble his corps. On calling the roll, it was found that Champe was missing. Carnes returned hastily and informed Lee of the fact, adding, " I have detached a party to pursue the deserter, as soon as you will furnish the written orders."

Major Lee roused from his broken slumbers, proceeded to draw his orders with as much deliberation as possible, without exciting suspicion, and thus concluded ; " Bring him alive, that he may suffer in the presence of the army ; but kill him if he resists, or escapes after he is taken."

A shower of rain fell soon after Champe's departure, which enabled the pursuers to take the trail of his horse, his shoes being made in a peculiar form, (as was common to those of the army) with a private mark upon each, which was seen in the path.

Middleton, the leader of the pursuing party, left camp a few minutes past 12 o'clock, which gave Champe the start about half an hour ; a period much shorter than had been contemplated.

During the night, the dragoons were often delayed in examining the road, to keep a track of the fugitive ; but upon the approach of morning, the impression of the horse's shoe were so apparent, that they pressed on with more rapidity. Several miles above Bergen, (a village three miles above New-York, on the opposite side of the Hudson)

who arrested major Andre, on his return to New-York, and delivered him a captive at West-Point, passed the following resolve :

on ascending a hill, they descried Champe, not more than half a mile ahead, and Champe at the same time descried his pursuers, and knowing their object, put spurs to his horse to secure his escape.

By taking a different road. Champe eluded his pursuers for a few moments, but on approaching the river, he was again descried. Aware of his danger, he lashed his valise, which contained his clothes and orderly book, to his shoulders, and prepared to plunge into the river.

Swift was his flight, and swift the pursuit. Middleton and his party gained upon the fugitive, and would soon have overtaken him ; but he threw himself from his horse ; plunged into the river, and called loudly for help, to some British galleys that lay off in the stream. They despatched a boat instantly, to rescue Champe, and commenced a brisk fire upon his pursuers. When they had taken him on board the boat, they carried him to New-York, with a letter from the captain of the galley, stating minutely, the whole affair, as it had passed under his view.

Middleton took Champe's horse and cloak, and returned to camp, where he arrived about three o'clock the next morning. When the soldiers saw Champe's horse, they made the air resound with their acclamations, that the scoundrel was killed.

The agony of major Lee was indescribable, at sight of the horse ; but his fears were soon relieved when he learnt, that his faithful Champe had effected his escape, and he repaired instantly to headquarters, to bear the joyful tidings to Washington.

Soon after Champe arrived in New-York, he was carried before general Clinton, who received him kindly ; but examined him closely for more than an hour ; many of his questions were so close, that it required all the art Champe was master of, to answer them, without exciting some suspicion. He succeeded, however, and sir Henry gave him a couple of guineas, and recommended him to general Arnold, who was desirous of gaining American recruits.

Arnold received him kindly, and proposed to him to join his legion ; but Champe declined and expressed a desire to retire from the scenes of war ; assuring the general, at the same time, that should he change his mind he would enlist.

Champe soon found means to acquaint major Lee with his adventures ; but unfortunately, he could not succeed in taking Arnold, before the execution of Andre.

Ten days before Champe brought his measures to a conclusion, Lee received from him his final communication, appointing the third subsequent night, for a party of dragoons to meet him at Hoboken. (opposite to New York) where he hoped to deliver Arnold to the officers.

Champe had enlisted into Arnold's legion, from which time, he had every opportunity he could wish, to attend to the habits of the general. He soon discovered that it was his custom to return home about twelve every night, and that previous to going to bed he always visited the garden. During this visit, the conspirators were to seize and gag him. Champe had taken off several of the paleings of the fence,

Resolved, That congress have a high sense of the virtuous and patriotic conduct of John Paulding, David Williams,

near the house, and replaced them in such a manner that they could be again removed without noise, which would open a passage into an adjoining alley. In this alley he intended to convey Arnold, with the aid of his companion, who was an associate that had been introduced to him, by the friend to whom Champe had been originally made known, by letter, from the commander-in-chief, and with whose aid and counsel, he had so far conducted the enterprise. His other associate was with the boat, ready at one of the wharves on the Hudson river, to receive the party.

Champe and his friend, intended each to have placed themselves under the shoulders of Arnold, and thus have borne him along, through the most unfrequented alleys and streets, to the boat; and in case they should be questioned, they were prepared to say, that they were conveying a drunken soldier to the guard-house.

When arrived at the boat, all difficulties would have been surmounted, and they could have easily crossed over to the Jersey shore.—When the plan was made known to major Lee, he communicated the same to the commander in-chief, who was highly gratified with the intelligence. He desired major Lee to meet Champe, and to take care that Arnold should not be hurt.

The day arrived, and Lee with a party of accoutred horse, repaired to the place of rendezvous, in high expectation of meeting Champe with his prisoner. The party reached Hoboken about midnight, where they lay concealed in an adjoining wood; but major Lee, with three dragoons, took their station near the river. Hour after hour passed away, but no boat appeared, until day dawned, and major Lee found it necessary to withdraw his party and return to camp. He repaired directly to head-quarters, to acquaint the general with their mysterious disappointment. General Washington felt the disappointment the more sensibly, because he was fully convinced that the plan would succeed, and Arnold the traitor, be brought to justice, in presence of the whole army. He felt sensibly, at the same time, for his faithful Champe, lest he should have been detected in the execution of his plan, and had fallen a victim to his fidelity.

In a few days, maj. Lee received an anonymous letter from Champe's patron and friend, informing him, that on the day preceding the night fixed for the execution of the plot, Arnold had removed his quarters to another part of the city, to superintend the embarkation of troops for a secret expedition, and that the American legion, consisting chiefly of deserters, had been removed from their barracks to one of their transports, to guard against their desertion. before the troops could sail.

Thus it happened, that John Champe, instead of crossing the Hudson, was safely lodged on board of one of their transports, from which he never departed, until he landed with Arnold, in Virginia. Nor was he able to escape from the British army, until after the junction with lord Cornwallis, at Petersburg, when he deserted. Proceeding high up into Virginia, he passed into North Carolina, near the Saura Towns,

and Isaac Van Vert ; in testimony whereof, ordered, that each of them receive annually, two hundred dollars in specie, or an equivalent in the current money of these states, during life ; and that the board of war, be directed to procure for each of them, a silver medal, on one side of which shall be a shield, with this inscription, " Fidelity ;" and on the other, the following motto ; " Vincit amor patriæ," and forward them to the commander-in-chief, who is requested to present the same, with a copy of this resolution, and the thanks of congress, for their fidelity, and the eminent service they have rendered their country."

In the month of October, 1780, sir Henry Clinton detached general Arnold on a marauding expedition, into Virginia, with about 1600 men, and a number of armed vessels ; he laid waste the country upon James river, in several predatory excursions, until his progress was arrested by the appearance of the French squadron from Newport. This fleet put an end to the ravages of Arnold by capturing and destroying a very considerable part of his fleet ; and would have caused the destruction of the traitor, had not a British fleet appeared from New York, for the relief of Arnold, and by a naval engagement off the capes of Virginia, with the French fleet, and keeping in the friendly districts of that state, safely joined the army, after it had passed the Congaree, in pursuit of lord Rawdon.

His approach excited extreme surprise among his former companions, which was not a little increased, when they saw the cordial reception he met with from the late major, now lieutenant colonel Lee. His whole story was soon known to the corps, which reproduced the love and respect of officer and soldier, heretofore invariably entertained for the sergeant, heightened by universal admiration of his late daring and hazardous attempt.

Champé was introduced to general Greene, who very cheerfully complied with the promise made by the commander-in-chief, so far as was in his power ; and having provided the sergeant with a good horse, and money for his journey, sent him to general Washington, who magnificently rewarded him, agreeable to his wishes, and presented him with a discharge from further service ; lest he might, in the vicissitudes of war, fall into the hands of the enemy, where he was sure to die upon a gibbet.

We shall only add, respecting the after life of this adventurer, that when general Washington was called by president Adams, in 1789, to the command of the army prepared to defend the country against the French, he sent to lieutenant-colonel Lee, to inquire for Champé ; intending to bring him into the field, at the head of a company of infantry. Lee sent to Loudon county, Virginia where Champé had settled after he was discharged ; but learnt that he had removed to Kentucky, where he soon after died."—Lee's Memoirs.

fording him an opportunity to escape to New-York. The French returned to Newport.

All further military operations were suspended for the season, and the war raged in the West-Indies, between the British and the combined French and Spanish fleets ; but the limits of this work will not permit me to enter into the details of foreign war.

On the 18th of December, died at Newport, (Rhode-Island) his excellency Charles Louis de Terney, knight of St. John of Jerusalem, late governor of the isles of France and Bourbon, and chief commander of the French squadron in the American seas. He was interred in Trinity church-yard, the next day, with military honors.

The frequent changes in the army of gen. Washington, owing to short enlistments, the want of pay, clothing, provisions, &c. had repeatedly distressed the army, and were at last accompanied with the revolt of the whole Pennsylvania line, excepting three regiments. In defiance of all the efforts of gen. Wayne, and all the other officers, they seized on six field-pieces, and took up their march for Princeton, January, 1781.

Sir Henry Clinton, upon the first intelligence, made some important movements from Staten-Island, and sent spies at the same time, to countenance and encourage the revolters. A committee from congress, visited the mutineers at Princeton, with liberal assurances, to persuade them to return to their duty ; but general Washington sent a strong force and compelled them to return. A general arrangement was soon made to supply the armies, both with foreign and domestic aid and resources.

About the first of May, 1781, Mr. Rivington, (printer in N. York) published an intercepted correspondence between general Washington and governor Hancock, in which the general represents the unparalleled sufferings and distresses of the American army and its dependencies, and thus concludes :

“ Distressed beyond expression, at the present situation and future prospects of the army, with regard to provisions, &c. From the posts at Saratoga to that of Dobb’s ferry, inclusive, I believe there is not, (by the returns I have received) at this moment on hand, one day’s supply of meat for the army.”

On the 14th of May, general Washington received the painful tidings, that colonel Greene, with his whole detachment, had been cut off near Croton river, by a party of Delancy’s corps, consisting of about three hundred infantry and dra-

goons. Colonel Greene was wounded and taken prisoner and afterwards murdered in cold blood. Major Flagg was killed in his quarters.

On the 6th of May, monsieur de Barras arrived at Boston, in the Concord frigate, to succeed the chevalier de Terney, in the command of the French squadron at Newport.

When the count de Rochambeau had announced to general Washington the despatches he had received from France, the general with his suit, generals Knox and Du Portail, repaired immediately to Wethersfield, (Connecticut) where they were met by the French officers, the count de Rochambeau and the chevalier Chastellux, on the 21st. The ostensible object of this interview, was to concert measures for the reduction of New-York.

This conference continued about one week, with the greatest harmony and cordiality, when these illustrious characters returned to their posts. General Washington next communicated by letter, the following regulations to the governors of the several northern states :

“ On the calculations I have been able to form, in concert with the most experienced French and American officers, the operations in view will require, in addition to the French army, all the continental battalions, from New Hampshire to N. Jersey, to be completed.” He afterwards added, “ As we cannot count upon their being full, and as a body of militia will also be necessary, I have called upon the several states to hold certain numbers in readiness, to move within one week of the time I may require them.”

These despatches of general Washington, among others, were intercepted by one James Moody, who was employed by the British adjutant-general, and conveyed to New York. These gave the alarm to sir Henry Clinton, and he renewed his exertions to prepare for his defence.

At this eventful moment, a reinforcement of 1500 French troops arrived in Boston. These, together with the French troops at Newport, moved on to join general Washington, before New-York. On the 14th of June, the junction was formed complete.

On the 21st, general Washington wrote to the French admiral at Newport, as follows : “ I hope there will be no occasion for a movement to the southward, for the want of force to act against New York, as I flattered myself that the glory of destroying the British squadron at New-York, is reserved



for the king's fleet under your command, and that of the land forces at the same place, for the allied armies."

On the evening of the 18th, precisely at eight o'clock, the allied armies commenced a grand movement, and marched from their encampments, down to New-York, and at four the next morning, they were drawn up in order of battle, while general Washington and count Rochambeau, with all the general officers and engineers, reconnoitered the enemy's works throughout their whole line. The next day they renewed their reconnoitering, and in the afternoon, drew off their troops and returned to their encampments.

These movements, together with the removal of the heavy cannon and mortars, left at Boston in 1776, across the country to North river, and down to the army before New York; as well as the intercepted correspondence, confirmed sir Henry Clinton in his fears, and led him to withdraw a very considerable force from lord Cornwallis, for the defence of N. York.

At this eventful moment, count de Grasse announced his arrival in the Chesapeake bay, with a fleet of twenty-four ships of the line, frigates, &c. The allied commanders forwarded assurances that they would put their troops in immediate motion, to co-operate with him.

Count de Grasse landed 3300 troops, under the command of the marquis de St. Simon, to reinforce the marquis La Fayette.

Monsieur de Barras, at the same time, sailed from Newport with the French squadron, to join count de Grasse.

General Washington committed the command of the forces before New York, to general Heath, and put himself at the head of the allied armies, and by a rapid movement, marched to Philadelphia; and from thence to the head of the river Elk.

Sir Henry Clinton, in the mean time, despatched admiral Graves in quest of count de Grasse. On the 5th of September, he discovered the French fleet in Lynnhaven bay. At sight of the English fleet, count de Grasse slipped his cables and put to sea, and at 4 o'clock an action commenced. The French were victorious, and regained the bay; but the English retired to New-York, to repair.

At this eventful moment, de Barras entered the bay and joined de Grasse, who sent up their transports to convey the allied armies down the bay. The allied commanders, at the

same time, held an interview with the count de Grasse, on board the *Ville de Paris*, to settle the plan of operations.

On the 25th, the whole of the allied armies joined the marquis La Fayette, at Williamsburg; amounting to 12,000 men.

Pending these movements, lord Cornwallis had removed to York-Town, and proceeded to fortify his position.

Governor Nelson called into service the militia of Virginia, and took the field in person.

On the 27th of September, general Washington issued the following orders. "If the enemy should be tempted to meet the army on its march, the general particularly enjoins it upon the troops to place their principal reliance upon the bayonet, that they may prove the vanity of that boast, which the British make of their peculiar prowess, in deciding battles with that weapon."

The next morning, the whole army moved forward to the distance of two miles from York-Town; encamped about sunset, and lay on their arms through the night.

Count de Grasse, at the earnest and pressing solicitations of general Washington, by letter, and the personal address of the marquis La Fayette, who was the bearer, moved his whole fleet up to the mouth of York river, and his lordship was closely invested in York-Town.

On the 6th of October, the trenches of the allies were opened upon his lordship, at the distance of 600 yards. On the 9th, the American line began to play upon York-Town, with twenty-four, eighteen, and ten inch mortars, which continued through the night. The next morning the French opened a destructive fire from their batteries, without intermission, for about eight hours; and on the succeeding night a terrible fire was kept up from the whole line, without intermission, until morning. The horrors of this scene were greatly heightened by the conflagration of two British ships, set on fire by the shells of the allies, and consumed in the night. The next morning, October 11th, the allies opened their second parallel, at the distance of 200 yards, and another British ship was consumed by their shells.

On the 14th, general Washington ordered two battalions to advance to the second parallel, and begin a large battery in the centre, and in advance. The enemy met this movement with an incessant fire from two redoubts, in advance of their works, as well as from their whole line, that continued through the night.

General Washington detached the marquis de La Fayette, at the head of the American light infantry, supported by the baron Viomenil, from the line of the French, to advance and storm these redoubts, which had so annoyed them through the night. Lieutenant-colonel Hamilton commanded the van of the corps of the marquis La Fayette. The redoubt was promptly carried by La Fayette, at the point of the bayonet; but the captives were spared. The marquis sent his aid, major Barbour, through the whole line of the enemy's fire, to notify the baron Viomenil of his success, and enquire where he was; to which the baron replied, "I am not in my redoubt, but shall be in five minutes;" in five minutes his redoubt was carried.

General Washington was highly gratified with the success of this exploit, and commended the officers and soldiers engaged in it, in the highest terms, in the following general orders:

"The marquis La Fayette's division will mount the trenches to-morrow. The commander-in-chief congratulates the allied army on the success of the enterprise, last evening, against the two important redoubts on the left of the enemy's works. He requests the baron Viomenil, who commanded the French grenadiers, and the marquis La Fayette, who commanded the American light infantry, to accept his warmest acknowledgements for the excellence of their dispositions and for their own gallant conduct on the occasion. And he begs them to present his thanks to every individual officer, and to the men of their respective commands, for the spirit and rapidity with which they advanced to the points of attack assigned them, and for the admirable firmness with which they supported them, under the fire of the enemy, without returning a shot. The general reflects, with the highest pleasure, on the confidence, which the troops of the two nations must hereafter have in each other: assured of mutual support, he is convinced there is no danger, which they will not cheerfully encounter; no difficulty which they will not bravely overcome."

On the morning of the 16th, his lordship detached lieutenant-colonel Abercrombie at the head of 400 men, upon a sortie, to destroy two batteries, the allies had erected in the night; the enterprise succeeded, and he spiked the cannon. The French suffered severely in the defence of these works; but the British gained no permanent advantage. On the afternoon of the same day, the allies opened their batteries, covered with about 100 pieces of heavy cannon, and such was

their destructive fire, that the British lines were soon demolished, and silenced. Alarmed for his safety, his lordship now began to prepare to retire; his boats were collected, and a part of his army was embarked across to Gloucester Point;† but a violent storm suddenly arose, which defeated the plan, and it was with the greatest difficulty that his lordship could recover his boats, and restore the division.

His lordship, now seeing that all hope of succour or escape was vain, and that there was no alternative, to avoid the tremendous fire of the allies, but submission, requested a parley on the 18th. for twenty-four hours; and that commissioners might be appointed to arrange articles of capitulation. General Washington consented, and commissioners were appointed accordingly.‡ On the 19th, the articles were signed, and his lordship, with the whole British army, marched out prisoners of war. The ships were the conquest of France. The same terms were prescribed by the commissioners to lord Cornwallis, that had been prescribed to general Lincoln at Charleston, just eighteen months before; he was refused the honors of war, and general Lincoln was deputed to receive the sword of his lordship. Thus the mission of the marquis La Fayette to France, in the winter of 1779—80, was consummated by the fall of the hero of the south, at York Town.

The noble generosity of the French officers to those of the British, after the capitulation, called forth the following acknowledgement of his lordship:

“The deliberate sensibility of the officers of his most christian majesty towards our situation; their generous and pressing offers of money, both public and private, to any amount, has really gone beyond what I can possibly describe.”

Lord Cornwallis pressed hard for permission to embark the British and German troops to Europe, under suitable engagements, not to serve during the war; also that the tories might be protected; but both were refused. His lordship was, however, indulged with the permission, that the Bonetta sloop of war, might pass unsearched; and many of the most obnox-

† Gloucester Point is opposite to York Town, projecting far into the river, and then under the command of lieutenant-colonel Tarlton.

‡ The commissioners on the part of the allies were the Vicount de Noailles, and lieutenant-colonel Laurens, whose father had been sent out by congress, as minister to the court of Versailles, and who was captured on his passage, by the British, and confined in the tower of London, where he then remained in close confinement.

ious Tories escaped from the rage of their injured and insulted countrymen.

Seven thousand troops, under the command of earl Cornwallis, with 1500 seamen, were the subjects of this convention; together with one frigate of twenty-four guns, besides transports, (twenty of which had been sunk or otherwise destroyed) seventy-five brass, and sixty-nine iron ordnance, howitzers and mortars. Also a military chest, containing £2,113, 6s. sterling, which, trifling as it was, could not fail to be acceptable to the army.

Five days after the surrender of his lordship, admiral Graves again arrived off the capes of Virginia, with about 7000 troops from New-York, for the relief of lord Cornwallis; but it was too late, the allies were triumphant; and the armament returned to New-York.

His excellency general Washington, closed this glorious scene at York Town, by publishing to the army, both officers and soldiers, in general orders, the grateful effusions of his heart, and ordered the whole to be assembled in divisions and brigades, to attend to divine service, *and render thanks to that God who had given them the victory.*

Congress received the letter of general Washington, on the 24th, announcing the capture of the British army, with the most cordial satisfaction, and immediately resolved to move in procession, at 2 o'clock, to the Lutheran church, and return thanks to Almighty God, for crowning with success the allied arms of America and France. Congress next resolved, that a proclamation be issued for the religious observance of the 13th of December, then next, as a day of public thanksgiving and prayer, throughout the United States.

Thus, joy, gratitude, and praise to God, were united, and became universal, and swelled with transports, every patriotic breast, throughout United America.

Congress resolved, on the 29th, “That thanks be presented to general Washington, count de Rochambeau, count de Grasse, and the officers of the different corps, and the men under their command, for their services, in the reduction of lord Cornwallis.”

They next resolved, “That a marble column be erected at York-Town, adorned with emblems, commemorative of the alliance, between the United States and his most christian majesty, and inscribed with a succinct account of the surrendry of the British army.”

Congress next resolved, "That two stands of colors be presented to general Washington, and two pieces of ordnance be by him presented to count de Rochambeau, as trophies of their illustrious victory; and that the chevalier de Le Luzerne, be requested to inform his most christian majesty, that it was the wish of Congress, that count de Grasse might be permitted to accept the same testimonials, with the count de Rochambeau.

General Rochambeau, with his army, took up their winter quarters in Virginia; but the troops under the command of the marquis de St. Simon, were embarked for the West Indies, and the American troops returned to their former stations, excepting such cavalry and infantry as were necessary to the service of general Greene; these were sent forward in November, under the command of general St. Clair, to co-operate in the southern war.

The French fleet, under the count de Grasse, sailed at the same time, for the West-Indies, and the operations of the season were generally closed.

His excellency general Washington, retired to Philadelphia, to give repose to his mind, as well as to confer with congress upon the future exigencies of the nation.

One universal expression of gratitude and applause, burst forth from all parts of the country, to the allied heroes, who fought under Washington, and triumphed over Britain. Ministers at the altar, of all denominations, caught the sacred flame, and the temples of Almighty God, resounded with gratitude and praise to His great name, throughout United America.

On the 4th of November, congress honored the chevalier de La Luzerne with their attendance at the Roman catholic chapel, where the following address was delivered by monsieur de Bandole, chaplain to the French legation:

"Gentlemen—A numerous people, assembled to render thanks to Almighty God for his mercies, is one of the most affecting objects, and worthy the attention of the Supreme Being. While camps resound with triumphal actions, whole nations rejoice in victory and glory the most honorable office the minister of the altar can fill, is, to be the organ by which public gratitude is conveyed to the Omnipotent. Those miracles which he once wrought for his chosen people, are renewed in our favor; and it would be equally ungrateful and impious, not to acknowledge, that the event which lately con-

founded our enemies, and frustrated their designs, was the wonderful work of that God, who guards our liberties. And who but He could so combine the events that led to such success? We have seen our enemies push forward amidst perils almost innumerable, amidst objects almost insurmountable, to the spot which was designed to witness their disgrace; yet they eagerly sought it as the theatre of their triumph! Blind as they were, they bore hunger, thirst and inclement skies; poured out their blood in battle against brave republicans, and crossed immense regions to confine themselves in another Jerico; whose walls were fated to fall down before another Joshua. It is He whose voice commands the winds, the seas, and the seasons; who formed a junction on the same day, and the same hour, between a formidable fleet from the south, and an army rushing from the north like an impetuous torrent. Who but He, in whose hands are the hearts of men, could have inspired the allied troops with the friendship, the confidence, the tenderness of brothers! How is it that two nations, once divided, jealous, inimical, and nursed in reciprocal prejudices, are now become so cordially united as to form but one! Worldlings would say it is the wisdom, the virtue, and moderation of our chiefs; it is a great national interest that has performed this prodigy. They will say, that to the skill of the generals, to the courage of the troops, to the activity of the whole army, we must attribute this splendid success! Ah! they are ignorant that the combining of so many fortunate circumstances, is an emanation from the All-perfect Mind; that courage, that skill, that activity, bear the sacred impressions of Him who is divine. For how many favors have we not to thank Him during the present year?

“Your union, which was at first supported by justice alone, has been consolidated by your courage, and the knot which ties you has become indissoluble, by the accession of all the states, and the unanimous voice of all the confederates. You present to the universe the noble sight of a society, which, founded in equity and justice, secures to the individuals who compose it, the utmost happiness that can be derived from human institutions. This advantage, which so many other nations have been unable to procure, even after ages of effort and misery, is granted by Divine Providence to the United States; and His adorable decrees have marked the present moment for the completion of that memorable happy revolution, which has taken place in this extensive continent.

These large states are at once wrested from the foe. The rapacious soldier has been compelled to take refuge behind his ramparts, and oppression has vanished like those phantoms which are dispelled by the morning ray. On this solemn occasion we might renew our thanks to the God of battles, for the success he has granted to your allies, and your friends, by land and sea, through the other parts of the globe. But let us not recall those events which too dearly prove how much the hearts of our enemies have been obdured. Let us prostrate ourselves at the altar, and implore the God of mercy to suspend his vengeance, to spare them in his wrath, to inspire them with sentiments of justice and moderation, to terminate their obstinacy and error, and to ordain that your victories be followed with peace and tranquility. Let us entreat Him to continue to shed on the councils of the king, your ally, that spirit of wisdom, of justice, and of courage, which has rendered his reign so glorious. Let us beseech Him to maintain in each of the states, that intelligence by which the United States are inspired. Let us return Him thanks that a faction, whose rebellion he has corrected, and now deprived of support, is annihilated. Let us offer Him pure hearts, unsullied by private hatred, or public dissension; and let us with one voice, pour forth to the Lord that hymn of praise, by which Christians celebrate their gratitude, and His glory."

---

## CHAPTER XII.

### REVOLUTION CONTINUED.

I passed over the operations of the southern war, in their chronological order, that the great and interesting subject of the last chapter, might be continued unbroken. Also the operations of the traitor Arnold, at New London, &c. because I would not *foul* such splendid events with so infamous a name, nor tarnish the glorious achievements of the allies, with such infamous deeds. We will now notice the base exploits of Arnold, and then carry forward the southern war.

In the month of September, sir Henry Clinton detached general Arnold, with a strong party, to renew the marauding system, in Connecticut. Arnold proceeded to New London,



landed his troops ; carried forts Griswold and Trumbull, after a brave resistance, put many of the garrison to the sword, after their surrendry, and reduced the town to ashes.†

The officer who entered fort Griswold, peremptorily demanded, "Who commands this fort?" To which colonel Ledyard replied, "I did, but you do now;" and presented him his sword; which he took and plunged it into the colonel's breast. A scene of butchery ensued, too cruel to be related.

Arnold with his myrmidons fled on board their ships, and returned to New-York.

The southern war now claims our attention.

We noticed in a former chapter, the strong position general Greene had taken among the high hills of Santee, in June, 1781. We will now notice a few extracts of letters from general Greene to his friends, which will disclose clearly, the character of the southern war.

While before Ninety-Six, gen. Greene wrote thus to col. Davies, May 23d :—"The animosity between the whigs and tories of this state, renders their situation truly deplorable. There is not a day that passes, but there are more or less that fall a sacrifice to this savage disposition. The whigs seem determined to extirpate the tories, and the tories the whigs. Some thousands have fallen in this way, in this quarter; and the evil rages with more violence than ever. If a stop cannot be put to these massacres, the country will be depopulated, as neither whig nor tory can live."

General Greene wrote to colonel Pickins, on the 5th of June :—"The inhabitants near Parker's Ford, on the Saluda, are in great distress, from the savage conduct of a party of men, belonging to colonel Hammond's regiment; this party plunders without mercy, and murders the defenceless people, just as pique, private prejudice, or personal resentment dictate. Principles of humanity, as well as policy, require, that proper measures be taken to restrain these abuses, heal differences, and unite the people as much as possible."

In June, a general exchange of prisoners took place in the south, and the American prisoners were sent into Virginia and Pennsylvania. Soon after, the families of all such prisoners as resided at Charleston, were ordered to remove out of the province, by colonel Balfour, the British commander at Charleston.

Near the close of the month, governor Rutledge resumed

† Sixty dwelling-houses, and forty-eight stores were burnt.

the government of South Carolina, and retaliated the conduct of colonel Balfour, upon the royalists, by driving them and their families also, within the British lines at Charleston.

On the 7th of September, general Greene made a sudden movement, and attacked colonel Stewart, at the Eutaw springs, sixty miles north of Charleston. Both armies were about 2000 strong; the conflict was sharp and bloody, until general Greene ordered colonel Williams, to advance to the charge with trailed arms. The order was promptly obeyed, amidst a most terrible cannonade, and shower of musketry, and they carried all before them; the enemy were routed and put to flight, and the victory was complete. More than 500 prisoners, with 70 wounded, together with about 1000 stand of arms, fell into the hands of the victors.

General Greene lost more than one third of his whole force, in this desperate conflict; yet the enemy abandoned their strong hold, betook themselves to the defence of Charleston, and carried on a system of predatory war.

Congress voted their thanks to general Greene, and the different corps under his command, with their commanders, on the 24th; and directed, that he be presented with a British standard, and a gold medal.

A mutiny, serious and alarming, broke out at this time, in the army of general Greene, which he quelled, by bringing his troops into immediate action, by a sudden movement upon a British post at Dorchester. So sharp was this rencounter, and such the disposition of general Greene, after the action, that the enemy abandoned their post, and retired to the quarter house, on Charleston Neck, and the state was cleared of the enemy, except Charleston.

On the 14th of December, general Greene disclosed to the secretary of war, that he was destitute of ammunition, camp utensils, &c. and that he could not command one single quire of paper.

On the 4th of January, 1782, he was joined by general St. Clair, with the troops detached from the conquest of York-Town; and general Greene advanced, and took his position near to Charleston.

On the 18th, governor Rutledge convened the assembly of South Carolina, at Jacksonsborough, and they confiscated the estates of all the refugees.

General Greene, in his communication to the secretary of war, thus expressed himself:—"I have been seven months in

*the field, without taking off my clothes.* Our difficulties are numerous, and our wants so pressing, that I have not a moment's relief from the most painful anxieties."

March 11th.—“A great part of our troops are in a deplorable situation for want of clothing; we have 300 men without arms, and more than 100 are so naked, that they can only be put on duty, in cases of a desperate nature. I feel much for this department; no part of Saxony, during the last war, I believe, ever felt the ravaging hand of war, with greater severity, than it has been felt here.†”

April 22.—“Discontent is daily increasing, and the spirit of mutiny very prevalent. I have been able to prove the fact upon but one man, and he a sergeant of the Pennsylvania line, whom I ordered to be shot this day. I hope this example will deter others from executing the conspiracy, of betraying the army into the hands of the enemy, which we have dreaded every night.”

General Greene detached Colonel Posey, with 300 men, to join general Wayne in Georgia. The British commander at Savannah, laid waste the country, by burning and destroying all the crops and provisions, extensively, upon the borders of the river.

At this time, the state of the army under general Washington, may be seen by the following letter of the baron de Steuben, dated Fishkill, May 23, 1782.—“Yesterday was the third day our army has been without provisions. Every department is without money and credit. The army could not make a march of one day, for the want of the necessary supplies. Officers and soldiers are exceedingly discontented. You doubtless have heard of the premeditated revolt of the Connecticut line, happily discovered the day previous to that on which it was to have been put in execution. The ringleader was punished with death. Wherever I go, I hear complaints, which make me dread the most fatal consequences. The distresses of our army, have arrived to the greatest possible height.  
STEUBEN.”

Quotations of similar purport, might be multiplied to a great extent; but these may suffice to shew the wretched state of the armies, as well as the deranged state of the finances.

Who that views with attention these facts, can fail to see and acknowledge, the special agency of Divine Providence, in

† Fourteen hundred widows were made in the single district of Ninety-Six.

crowning with success, the American arms, and thus opening the way for peace, at this eventful crisis, when the resources of the country were exhausted, and the hearts of the soldiers ready to sink under the accumulated weight of their sufferings. Let those of us who witnessed these eventful scenes, eye the hand of that God, who ruled the destinies of America, and adore that wisdom, power and goodness, that rescued her from the all-devouring grasp of her enemies, and crowned her with national happiness and glory.

On the 4th of March, the house of commons resolved, "That the house will consider as enemies to his majesty and the country, all those who shall advise, or attempt the further prosecution of the war in North America."

On the 2d of August, sir Guy Carleton and admiral Digby, announced by letter to general Washington, that negotiations for a general peace, were opened at Paris, and that transports had been prepared in England, to convey the American prisoners in England, to America, to be exchanged.

Two ships soon after arrived, with 583 American prisoners, at Marblehead.

On the 11th of June, the town of Savannah was evacuated by the British, in good order.

Congress pursued the plan of loans from France and Holland; and through their ministers, liberal supplies were obtained. All further operations in South Carolina ceased, and Charleston was evacuated, on the 14th of December, 1782, in the most perfect order; and in two days, the regular police of the city, and government of the state, were restored.

The French troops, rendered so illustrious at the siege of York-Town, under the command of general Rochambeau, commenced their march for Boston, and embarked for France, in the spring of 1783.

The subject of peace now became general, in Europe and America. Negotiations had been opened at Paris, as early as June, under doctor Franklin and Mr. Jay, on the part of America; the count de Vergennes, on the part of France; with Mr. Fitzherbert and Mr. Oswald, on the part of Great Britain; and the count de Aranda, on the part of Spain.

Many points labored; the negotiation spun out. The British ministers could not be prevailed on to take the starting point, and acknowledge the independence of America, until they had received positive instructions from their court.

The fisheries next laboured with England; and France did

not favor the views of America, upon that point. During the struggle in this council, Mr. Adams left Holland, at the request of Mr. Jay, and repaired to Paris. Upon consultation, they agreed to negotiate separately, with the British ministers, if the count de Vergennes did not yield the claims of the United States, on the fisheries, &c. This movement succeeded, and brought the negotiations to a close.

During these negotiations, a new scene opened upon the commander-in-chief of the American armies. The troops before New-York became infected with a general mutiny, founded upon a demand for arrears of pay, with sufficient guarantee before them, and for discharge. His excellency general Washington, by his masterly address, quelled this mutiny. He then laid the matter before congress, by letter, in which he requested that, in the strongest terms, that the army might be satisfied. Congress met the wishes of the general, and his fellow-companions in arms, promptly, and voted, "that the officers should receive to the amount of five years full pay, in money or certificates, at six per cent interest, per annum, in stead of half pay for life." This was satisfactory.

48 In the midst of the perturbed state of affairs in camp, and while the day of final separation was supposed to be near at hand, the following anonymous notice circulated to exasperate the passions of the moment, was privately circulated:

*To the officers of the army.*

GENTLEMEN.—A fellow soldier, whose interest and affections bind him strongly to you, whose past sufferings have been as great, and whose future fortune may be as desperate as yours, would beg leave to address you.

"Age has its claims, and rank is not without its pretensions to advice; but, though supported by both, he flatters himself, that the plain language of sincerity and experience, will neither be unheard nor unregarded.

"Like many of you he loved private life, and left it with regret. He left it, determined to retire from the field, with the necessity that called him to it, and not till then—not till the enemies of his country, the slaves of power, and the hirelings of injustice, were compelled to abandon their schemes, and acknowledge America as terrible in arms, as she had been humble in remonstrance. With this object in view, he has long shared in your toils, and mingled in your dangers. He has felt the cold hand of poverty, without a murmur, and has seen the insolence of wealth without a sigh. But, too much under the direction of his wishes, and sometimes weak enough to mistake desire for opinion, he has till lately—very lately, believed in the justice of his country. He hoped, that as the clouds of adversity scattered and as the sunshine of peace and better fortune broke in upon us, the coldness and

On the 24th of March, it was announced in congress by a letter from the marquis La Fayette, bearing date February

severity of government would relax, and that more than justice, that gratitude would blaze forth, on those hands which had upheld her, in the darkest stages of her passage, from impending servitude to acknowledged independence. But faith has its limits, as well as temper, and there are points, beyond which neither can be stretched, without sinking into cowardice, or plunging into credulity. This, my friends, I conceive to be your situation,—hurried to the very edge of both, another step would ruin you forever. To be tame and unprovoked, when injuries press hard upon you, is more than weakness; but to look up for kinder usage, without one manly effort of your own, would fix your character, and show the world how richly you deserve those chains you broke. To guard against this evil, let us take a review of the ground on which we now stand, and thence carry our thoughts forward for a moment, into the unexplored field of experiment.

“After a pursuit of seven long years, the object for which we set out is at length brought within our reach—yes, my friends, that suffering courage of yours was active once.—it has conducted the United States of America, through a doubtful and bloody war. It has placed her in the chair of independency, and peace returns again to bless—who? A country willing to redress your wrongs, cherish your worth, and reward your services? A country courting your return to private life, with tears of gratitude, and smiles of admiration, longing to divide with you, that independence which your gallantry has given, and those riches, which your wounds have preserved? Is this the case? or is it rather a country, that tramples on your rights, disdains your cries, and insults your distresses? Have you not more than once suggested your wishes, and made known your wants to congress? wants and wishes, which gratitude and policy should have anticipated, rather than evaded; and have you not lately, in the meek language of entreating memorials, begged from their justice, what you could no longer expect from their favor? How have you been answered? Let the letter you are called to consider to-morrow reply.

• If this then be your treatment, while the swords you wear are necessary for the defence of America, what have you to expect from peace, when your voice shall sink, and your strength dissipate by division? when those very swords, the instruments and companions of your glory, shall be taken from your sides, and no remaining mark of military distinction be left but your wants, infirmities and scars? Can you then consent to be the only sufferers by this revolution, and retiring from the field, grow old in poverty, wretchedness and contempt? Can you consent to wade through the vile mire of dependency, and owe the miserable remnant of that life to charity, which has hitherto been spent in honor? If you can—go—and carry with you the jest of Tories and the scorn of Whigs—the ridicule, and what is worse, the pity of the world. Go, starve, and be forgotten! But if your spirit should revolt at this; if you have sense enough to discover, and spirit enough to oppose tyranny under whatever garb it may assume; whether it be the plain coat of republicanism, or the splendid robe of royalty; if you have not yet learnt to discriminate between a people and a cause, be

5th, "That the preliminaries of a general peace, had been signed at Paris, on the 20th of January, 1783."

On the 4th of April, 1783, a confirmation of the signing of the treaty on the 20th of January, arrived at Salem, in the ship *Astrea*, capt. John Derby,† in twenty-two days from Nantz. Also, that the two sovereigns of France and England, had ratified, and their ministers exchanged the same, on the 3d of February; from which day, all hostilities were to cease.

On the 10th of April, the treaty was published in the United States. On the 19th, his excellency general Washington proclaimed it in general orders, to the American army. This day completed the eighth year of the revolutionary war.

tween men and principles--awake; attend to your situation, and redress yourselves. If the present moment be lost, every future effort is in vain; and your threats then, will be as empty, as your entreaties are now.

"I would advise you, therefore, to come to some final opinion on what you can bear, and what you can suffer. If your determination be in any proportion to your wrongs, carry your appeal from the justice, to the fears of government. Change the milk and water style of your last memorial; assume a bolder tone--decent, but lively, spirited and determined, and suspect the man, who would advise to more moderation, and longer forbearance. Let two or three men, who can feel as well as write, be appointed to draw up your *last remonstrance*; for I would no longer give it the squalid, sad, unsuccessful epithet of memorial. Let it be represented in language, that will neither dishonor you by its rudeness, nor betray you by its fear--what has been promised by congress, and what has been performed--how long and how patiently you have suffered--how little you have asked, and how much of that little has been denied. Tell them, that, though you were the first, and would wish to be the last, to encounter danger; though despair itself can never drive you into dishonor, it may drive you from the field; that the wound often irritated, and never healed, may at length become incurable; and that the slightest mark of indignity from congress now, must operate like the grave, and part you forever; that in any political event, the army has its alternative. If peace, that nothing shall separate you from your arms but death; if war, that courting the auspices, and inviting the directions of your illustrious leader, you will retire to some unsettled country, smile in your turn, and "mock when their fear cometh." But let it represent also, that should they comply with the request of your late memorial, it would make you more happy, and them more respectable. That while war should continue, you would follow their standard into the field, and when it came to an end, you would withdraw into the shade of private life, and give the world another subject of wonder and applause; an army victorious over its enemies--victorious over itself."

March 10th, 1783.

† The same captain that carried out to Europe, the news of the Lexington battle. 1775.

On the 13th of May, the officers of the American army, formed themselves into a society, and entered into the following compact :

“ The officers of the army, do hereby in the most solemn manner, associate, constitute and combine themselves into a society of friends, to endure so long as they shall endure, or any of their eldest male posterity ; and in failure thereof, the collateral branches, who may be judged worthy of becoming its supporters and members.” This society, thus formed, was denominated the society of Cincinnati ; in honor of that illustrious Roman chief, Quintus Cincinnatus, whose virtuous valor, saved his country.

On or about the middle of June, the notes of the financier were received, agreeable to a resolve of congress, and a general settlement so far effected with the army, that they were honorably discharged, and returned quietly to their several homes.

On the 18th, his excellency general Washington, addressed a circular letter to the governors and presidents of the several states, in which he impressively urged the necessity of the following important points :

“ 1. An indissoluble union of all the states, under *one federal head*

2. A sacred regard to public justice.

3. The support of a proper press establishment.

4. The preservation of peace and friendly intercourse among the people of different states, which will induce them to forget their local prejudices and policies ; to make those mutual concessions, which are requisite to the general prosperity ; and in some instances, to sacrifice their individual advantages, to the interest of the community. These are the pillars on which the glorious frame of our independence and national character must be supported. It remains then, to be my final and only request, that your excellency will communicate these sentiments to your legislature, at their next meeting ; and that they may be considered as the legacy of one, who has ardently wished, upon all occasions, to be useful to his country, and who, even in the shades of retirement, will not fail to implore the divine benediction upon it.”

The honorable Peter John Van Berekel, minister plenipotentiary, from their high mightinesses, the states-general of the United Netherlands, was admitted to an audience by congress, October 31.



On the 2d of November, his excellency general Washington, issued his farewell orders to the armies of the United States, in the following style :

“It only remains for the commander-in-chief to address himself once more, and that for the last time, to the armies of the United States, (however widely dispersed the individuals who composed them may be) and bid them an affectionate—a long farewell,” &c.

Sir Guy Carleton had been intrusted with the command of the royal army in North America, in May. In August, he received the final orders of the British court, to evacuate the city of New York ; and on the 25th of November, his orders were obeyed, and the city was evacuated.

His excellency general Washington, with his principal officers, the governor of the state of New-York, &c. moved in procession, attended by a vast concourse of citizens. The ceremony was conducted with great solemnity, and did honor to the occasion.

When the festivity and hilarity of this interesting scene were closed, his excellency general Washington, took an affectionate leave of the officers, who had been his brave companions in arms ; then calling for a glass of wine, he thus addressed them :

“With a heart full of love and gratitude, I now take leave of you ; I most devoutly wish, that your latter days may be as prosperous and happy, as your former ones have been glorious and honorable.” He then stretched forth his hand, and each one in succession, approached him and bade a silent adieu. His excellency withdrew and retired to Philadelphia, and exhibited his accounts to the comptroller, in his own hand writing. He next retired to Annapolis, where congress were then sitting, by adjournment ; and on the 20th of December, 1783, resigned his commission of commander-in-chief.

Agreeable to appointment, and by notice from the president, his excellency rose from his seat, in the midst of a numerous and brilliant assembly, and with the dignity of himself addressed both houses of congress in an appropriate speech. The following were his closing remarks :

“I consider it an indispensable duty, to close the last solemn act of my official life, by commending the interests of our dearest country to the protection of Almighty God, and those who have the superintendence of them, to his holy keeping.

“Having now finished the work assigned me, I retire from the great theatre of action : and bidding an affectionate farewell to this august body, under whose orders I have long acted, I here offer my commission, and take my leave of all the employments of public life.”

The president rose from his seat, and addressed his excellency in an affectionate and dignified reply. President Mifflin concluded as follows :

“We join you in commending the interests of our dearest country to the protection of Almighty God, beseeching Him to dispose the hearts and minds of its citizens to improve the opportunity afforded them of becoming a happy and respectable nation. And for you, we address to HIM our earnest prayers, that a life so beloved, may be fostered with all his care : that your days may be as happy as they have been illustrious, and that he will finally give you that reward which this world cannot give.”

His excellency withdrew. Language can no more express the emotions of his soul, than it can paint the true worth and greatness of his character. The affections of congress and of the audience, did homage to his virtues, by their tears of gratitude, which flowed spontaneously, upon this solemn, this most interesting occasion.

The liberties of America were now sealed by the resignation of that illustrious chief, who had been the instrument, under God, of obtaining and securing all her blessings, and on whose sword, hung the destinies of America.

The father of his country, retired to his seat in Virginia, there to enjoy in the bosom of repose, the prayers and benedictions of a free and grateful people.

The definitive treaty between Great-Britain and the United States, (accompanied with the joint letter of the American commissioners, bearing date Passy September 10th) was laid before congress, on the 13th of December, and referred to a special committee, who made their report on the 14th of January, 1784, to the acceptance of the nine states then present. Thus the treaty was ratified, and thus closed the greatest revolution ever known, and with a degree of success un contemplated by the most sanguine friends of liberty, accompanied with privations and sufferings almost unparalleled—all which were endured with heroic fortitude and patience. Such a triumph, with such feeble means, and over so great and pow-

erful an enemy, could not have been accomplished, short of the special aid of an Omnipotent power.

---

#### GENERAL REMARKS ON PART III.

*Manners and Customs.*—At the commencement of the revolution, a general simplicity and purity of manners and customs prevailed throughout the colonies, such as was to have been expected from a people, who managed their own affairs in their own way, under the purest system of liberty and equality then ever known, and under the mildest system of laws, that were, or could be possible for the protection of life and property, and the just rights of the citizen. But these manners and customs were not the same at the close of the revolution. The licentiousness and corruptions of the armies both British and American, sowed the seeds of dissipation; the French army sowed the seeds of infidelity, and the fluctuating state of the paper money sowed the seeds of speculation and fraud; all which combined, greatly lessened the force of moral virtue, and weakened the moral character of the nation.

*Religion.*—In the two former periods we have seen, at full view, the religious characters of the colonies, and have noticed particularly the puritanism of New-England. The revolution greatly weakened the strength and character of the religion of New-England, by the demoralising effects common to all wars, but more particularly by the subtle arts of infidelity, which were industriously diffused among the people; but their effects in New-England, great as they were, bore no comparison to those of the middle and southern colonies, where religion had never been founded, or enjoyed, upon so extensive and permanent a basis. In these colonies infidelity generally prevailed, and religion became merely nominal. The presbyterian, and congregational clergy were so zealously engaged in the support of the revolution, as to render themselves peculiarly obnoxious to the British army. In all their ravages they vented their malice and revenge against these christians by bitter persecutions, and by burning, and destroying their meeting houses; but the episcopalians and quakers, says Dr. Ramsy, were among the opposers of the revolution, and were of course, exempt from such persecutions from the enemy.

*Trade and Commerce.*—We have noticed in the two former parts the rise and progress of American commerce, the monopoly of the mother country by her restrictive acts and her oppressive system of taxation, which commenced the third part, as among the causes that led to the revolution. To retaliate upon Great Britain for her oppressive acts, the colonies entered into a general system of non-intercourse, that almost destroyed their trade with the mother country; and the privateering system of Britain, almost swept the American commerce from the ocean. The Americans pursued the same measure and made many valuable captures; but these bore so small a proportion to regular trade, and the necessary supplies of the country, that domestic manufactures were soon introduced, as a substitute for foreign goods; and the industry and enterprize of the people, furnished a comfortable supply. These articles had not that slight finish, common to foreign goods; but what they lacked in the ornamental was supplied by their firmness of texture and durability, and the fashion of common consent, which necessity enforced.

*Agriculture.*—In the two former parts we have noticed, that agriculture formed the basis of the American republics, and that the people, as a body, were husbandmen. In the revolution, we have seen how severely this body of people suffered. Commerce, the handmaid of agriculture, was destroyed, the labors of the field were often interrupted, by the ravages of the enemy, by the absence of the young men in the armies, the military services of the militia, the depreciation of paper money, and the general depression of public feeling. But under all these embarrassments, the productions of the field were in all instances, sufficient for the support of the armies, and the people, and there was no pinching scarcity through the whole period of the revolution.

*Arts and Manufactures.*—These were common to the colonies, from their earliest settlements, particularly in New-England; but the restrictive acts of the British government, kept them down, in order to encourage her own. As soon as the non-intercourse of the revolution shut out British manufactures from the United States, their restrictive system was removed, the arts and manufactures of the colonies began to flourish, and soon furnished a supply of the necessities and conveniences, and in some instances, of the luxuries of life. Arms, of all description, naval and military stores, clothing of all kinds, hard ware and cutlery, of most kinds, necessary for

common use, in short; the whole field of arts and manufactures, then common to Europe, was soon opened, and improved in America, and the texture of the several fabrics was sufficient for all the purposes of common use.

*Population.*—At this period, no census of the United States had ever been taken, and the exact amount of population could not be known; hence the reason why it has been so variously stated. The population was generally estimated at about three millions, which was doubtless very nearly correct.

*Education.*—Those colonies that had early attended to a regular system of education, suffered in this department, in common with agriculture, commerce, &c. The laws subjected the young men to military duty, at sixteen years of age, and they were often called into actual service, which diverted their attention from a regular course of instruction; the bustle and confusion of military operations, the invasion and ravages of the enemy, and the general state of the public mind, often interrupted the progress of the schools, and many times broke up the colleges, and dispersed the youth. But when the prospects of the nation began to brighten, towards the close of the war, education began to arrest the public attention, literature began to revive, and several new colleges were founded.

*Wars.*—The wars of America commenced in their early settlements, with the natives, and next with the French and Indians from Canada and Nova Scotia, or the Spaniards and Indians from Florida. When Canada was wrested from the French, the northern colonies flattered themselves with the belief, that all Indian wars, with them, were at an end; but when Great Britain commenced the war of the revolution with her colonies, she renewed the old system of French and Indian war, and actually employed in her service, more than 12,000 of those hell-hounds of war, against the children of her own bosom, and again laid open their defenceless frontiers to the torch, the tomahawk, and the scalping knife of the blood thirsty savage. The people of the colonies felt the wound; frowned indignantly upon the measure, and manfully repelled it.

From the remarks on the two first parts of this work, it may be seen, how the first colonies laid the foundations of the American republics, and with what industry, patience, magnanimity and valor, they carried forward their labors, and maintained their just rights. The same magnanimity of char-

acter led them to resist the overbearing encroachments of Great Britain, and draw the sword in defence of their violated liberties. At the commencement of the war of the revolution, we have seen the heroes of the old French war, stand forth in the front ranks of their country's rights and honor, and nerve their arms against the foe. We have seen the hardy yeomanry of the country, electrified by such bright examples, as well as by a due sense of their country's wrongs, join the standard of liberty and brave the war. We have seen a full display of these feelings at Bunker hill, and upon almost every other contested field, through the ever memorable revolution.

The revolution in Holland, in the 16th century, had for its object, the promotion of civil and religious liberty, and although it succeeded in an entire emancipation from the slavery of the Spanish yoke, and in establishing a permanent independence, yet for the want of a regular system of education, and a fixed system of morals, they soon lost their liberties, and fell under the dominion of the house of Orange.

The revolution in England, in the 17th century, that subverted the monarchy and hierarchy, and established the commonwealth, arose out of those pure principles of civil and religious liberty, that commenced in the 14th century, under John Wickliffe : but, from the same causes that operated in Holland, the revolution failed, and the nation first fell under the dominion of Oliver Cromwell, and next under the dominion of Charles II. with the restoration of the monarchy and hierarchy.

Although this was to them better than a military despotism under Cromwell, which arose from the licentiousness of liberty, yet this was not the choice of the nation, but the effects of necessity, because they did not possess intelligence and virtue sufficient to maintain a more rational system of liberty. The same remarks will apply also, to the revolution in France, in the 18th century.

But with regard to the revolution in America, it will not apply, because our forefathers founded their American republics, upon the permanent basis of intelligence and virtue, and when they had gained their independence, their strength of character enabled them to unite in their grand federal republican compact, which has been thus far the palladium of the nation, and will continue to be, so long as they maintain their national intelligence and virtue.

# UNITED STATES.

## PART IV.

### CHAPTER I.

#### CAUSES THAT LED TO A CHANGE IN THE GOVERNMENT OF THE UNITED STATES

At the close of the American revolution, the flood-gates of commerce were thrown open to the world. Great Britain, France, and Holland, through their own agents, crowded their manufactures into the American market, which not only infringed upon the rights of the American merchants, but brought on collisions between the merchants and the government. To obviate the evils, and promote the public revenue, congress attempted to lay a national impost, which failed. This opened the eyes of the American people, to the necessity of a more efficient government.

Congress, in the year 1784, passed resolutions, recommending it to the several states, "to vest the United States, in congress assembled, for the term of fifteen years, with powers to prevent any goods, wares, or merchandise, from being imported into, or exported from the United States, in vessels belonging to, or navigated by, the subjects of any power, with whom the United States shall not have formed treaties of commerce," &c. which failed.

In February, 1785, congress appointed John Adams esq. as minister plenipotentiary to the court of Great Britain, for the express purpose of negotiating a commercial treaty. The mission failed upon the ground, that congress possessed no powers to enforce the due observance of such treaty. The contempt which Great Britain thus expressed towards the powers of congress, opened the eyes of the people, and led them again to see the necessity of a more efficient government. A spirit of discontent burst forth in Boston, and filled their Gazettes with warm resolutions, which resulted in an address to their legislature, a petition to congress, and a circular letter to the merchants of all the trading towns upon the sea coast,

in the United States. This memorial was backed by another of similar purport, from the merchants of Philadelphia. The subject was felt throughout the nation, and the alarm became general.

Congress met these petitions by originating several resolutions, recommending it to the several states, to vest in congress, sufficient powers, under certain restrictions, to regulate commerce, &c. But such was the jealousy of the states, that these resolutions were not adopted, and the discontent of the people became more serious and alarming.

Mr. Adams also presented a memorial to the British minister, complaining of the infraction of the 7th article of the treaty of peace, on the part of Great Britain, in withholding the military posts on the western frontier.

Lord Carmarthen met the memorial with an explicit acknowledgement of the fact; alleging at the same time, that America had given just cause for this, by violating the 4th article of the treaty, in withholding the payment of such bona fide debts, as were embraced in that article, and added, "whenever this embarrassment shall be removed, the 7th article shall be fulfilled, and the posts delivered up, &c.

This declaration opened the eyes of congress to a true sense of their situation, and shewed the government to be nothing more than a rope of sand. In this state of things, the evidences of public debt were undergoing a rapid depreciation, under the corruptest system of speculation, until they were run down to the pitiful sum of two shillings and six pence on the pound.

Alarmed for the safety and honor of the nation, the legislature of Virginia, in January, 1786, adopted a resolution for the appointment of commissioners, to convene at Annapolis, with such as might be appointed by the other states, to take into consideration the commercial state of the nation; establish a uniform system, and report to the states, for their ratification. Five states only, were represented in this council, and the commissioners rose and abandoned the object; but in their report they recommended, that commissioners be appointed by all the states, to meet at Philadelphia, in May next, for the express purpose of revising the articles of confederation, and enlarging the powers of congress.

On the 21st of February, 1787, congress met the recommendation of the commissioners at Annapolis, by the following resolve:



“Resolved, That in the opinion of congress, it is expedient, that on the 2d of May next, a convention of delegates be convened at Philadelphia, who shall have been appointed by the several states, for the express purpose of revising the articles of confederation, and reporting to congress, and the several legislatures, such alterations and provisions therein, as shall, when agreed to in congress, and confirmed by the states, render the federal constitution adequate to the exigencies of government, and the preservation of the union.”

Agreeable to this resolution, all the states, except Rhode-Island, appointed commissioners ; and on the 19th of May, 1787, this convention met at Philadelphia, agreeable to appointment.

His excellency general Washington, was unanimously chosen president ; Charles Thompson esq. was chosen secretary ; and the convention proceeded, with closed doors, to the momentous subject before them.

When the convention had accomplished the object of their labors, and agreed upon a form of government, they resolved, “That it should be laid before the United States, in congress assembled, and from thence be submitted to a convention of delegates, chosen in each state, by the people thereof, upon the recommendation of its legislature, for their assent and ratification. That as soon as nine states shall have so ratified the constitution, it shall be carried into operation by the United States, in congress assembled.”

The president was then directed, by the unanimous resolve of the convention, to transmit the same to congress ; which was accordingly done under his signature, September 17th, with the following remarks :

“The convention have resolved, that this constitution be transmitted to congress, as the result of a spirit of amity, and of that mutual deference and concession, which the peculiarity of their political situation rendered indispensable.

“That it will meet the full and entire approbation of every state, (adds the president) is not to be expected ; but each will doubtless consider, that had her interest been alone consulted, the consequence might have been particularly disagreeable or injurious to others. That it is liable to as few exceptions as could reasonably have been expected, we hope and believe. That it may promote the lasting welfare of our country, so dear to us all, and secure her freedom and hap-

piness, is our ardent wish."—(For the constitution, see appendix, letter C.)

Previous to the meeting of this convention, an alarming insurrection had broken out in the state of Massachusetts, under captain Daniel Shays, which threatened the subversion of that government, and filled the country with alarm. This doubtless, had its influence in uniting the convention, and the nation, in a general system of government.†

Previous to the state deliberations upon the merits of the new constitution, in their several state conventions, a series of numbers appeared in the New-York papers, under the signature of the *federalist*, which displayed a strength of character and talents, that bore down all opposition, and evinced to the people of the United States, that under God, the federal constitution was destined to become the palladium of United America.

Eleven states assented to, and adopted the constitution, in their several conventions, promptly ; and the necessary preparations as promptly made, to carry it into effect.

Electors were chosen by the several states, agreeable to the rules prescribed by the constitution, who met in December, 1788, and gave an unanimous suffrage for George Washington, as president, and a majority for John Adams, as vice-president.

† In August, 1786, the insurrection commenced at Northampton ; a mob of about 1500 men, assembled, and in a riotous manner took possession of the court-house, and broke up the session of the court, for that term.

In the month of September following, a mob assembled at Exeter. (New Hampshire) surrounded the court-house, and held the general assembly, then in session, in a state of duress, for several hours.

Mobs assembled also at Worcester, Concord, Taunton, and Springfield, and prevented the session of the courts.

Massachusetts rose in her arms, raised 4000 men, and committed them to the command of generals Lincoln and Shepard, who suppressed the insurrection, without much serious opposition.

At this time the population of the United States amounted to about 4,000,000.

## CHAPTER II.

## ORGANIZATION OF THE FEDERAL GOVERNMENT—ORIGIN OF PARTY.

A new congress was chosen, which convened in the city of New-York, in March, 1789. On the 6th of April, a quorum of both houses was formed. On the 14th, president Washington was officially notified of his appointment. On the 30th, he was inducted into office, in the presence of the most numerous, brilliant, and dignified assembly, and upon the most interesting and eventful occasion, that United America had ever witnessed. A scene wherein it was difficult to say, which of the two was most admired, the *greatness of the hero*, or the *goodness of the man*.

When the president had been regularly inducted into office, he retired to the hall of the senate, where he convened the house of representatives, and addressed both houses in a most dignified and appropriate speech, in which were conspicuously displayed, the modesty of the man, the wisdom of the statesman, and the affectionate solicitude of the chief magistrate.

The senate and house of representatives returned, each, a most respectful and affectionate reply, highly expressive of that mutual harmony that glowed in their breasts.

A permanent revenue for the support of the government, and the public faith, became one of the first objects of legislation. To effect this, Mr. Madison, of Virginia, introduced a bill, for the purpose of raising a revenue by the way of impost and tonnage duties, which was regularly adopted.

Mr. Madison next brought forward a proposition, that several new articles be added to the constitution, by way of amendment, and submitted to the several states for their approbation. Twelve new articles were accordingly agreed upon and submitted to the several states, and by a majority of three-fourths of them, approved and added to the constitution. The object of these amendments was, to promote a more general harmony in the public mind. (See the constitution in appendix.)

The officers of the cabinet, next claimed the attention of congress, or rather of the president, whose duty it was to make the nominations. Thomas Jefferson was accordingly nominated to the office of secretary of state, colonel Hamilton

was nominated secretary of the treasury, general Knox, secretary at war, and Edmund Randolph esq. attorney-general.

The president next proceeded to nominate the judiciary department, at the head of which he placed the honorable John Jay esq. With Mr. Jay were associated the honorable John Rutledge, James Wilson, William Cushing, Robert Harrison, and John Blair esqrs. All which were approved, and regularly inducted into their several offices.

The same anxious solicitude attended the president, in selecting the officers of the district courts ; and thus, through the wisdom and integrity of the chief magistrate, the departments of government were filled with the first weight of talents and respectability, as well as responsibility, in the nation.

Who that surveys the weight of character, that filled the offices of president, vice-president, and all the above departments, can fail to acknowledge, that such an assemblage of virtue, and dignified worth, has rarely, if ever, been attached to any government on earth.

Congress next passed the following resolutions :

1. " That the house consider an adequate provision for the support of the public credit, as a matter of high importance to the national honor."

2. " That the secretary of the treasury, be directed to prepare a plan for that purpose, and report the same to the house, at their next meeting."

Congress then adjourned on the 29th of September, 1789, to meet on the 1st of January, 1790.

What wisdom, what firmness, what integrity, what zeal for the public good, and yet what concord and unanimity, between the several departments of government ! All, all conspired to shew, that the power of God, the wisdom of God, and the goodness of God, had all been conspicuously displayed, in laying the foundation of the government of Federal America.

On the 15th of October, the president commenced his tour through the northern states, accompanied by major Jackson, and Mr. Lear, his private secretary. He extended his route as far as Portsmouth ; visited the theatre of the first campaign, and returned to New-York on the 13th of November.

To shew the numerous expressions of affection and respect, which flowed from the constituted authorities, corporate bodies, and literary institutions, particular trades and occupations, the militia, together with every class of citizens, who vied

with each other, in their respectful and affectionate addresses to the father of his country, accompanied with illuminations, military parades, triumphal arches, &c. would exceed the powers of my pen.

The affectionate warmth and sincerity, with which president Washington reciprocated the addresses of his fellow-citizens, may be seen in the following reply, to the address of the citizens of the town of Boston :

“ I rejoice with you, my fellow-citizens, in every circumstance that declares your prosperity ; I do so the most cordially, because you have well deserved to be happy.

“ Your love of liberty ; your respect for the laws ; your habits of industry, and your practice of the moral and religious obligations, are the strongest claims to national and individual happiness. And they will, I trust, be firmly and lastingly established.”

The president passed by Rhode-Island, because she had not yet joined the Federal Union.

In the month of November, North Carolina, by her state convention, adopted the constitution, making the twelfth pillar in the national government.

On the 8th of January, 1790, the president opened the second session of the first congress, by a dignified address to both houses. In this speech, the president called up the attention of congress to the necessity of providing for the public defence, by a well regulated militia, together with a serious attention to such manufactures as might be essential to their military defence. The sentiments of the president upon the subject of literature, were thus expressed :

“ Nor am I less persuaded, that you will agree with me in opinion, that there is nothing, that better deserves your patronage, than the promotion of science and literature. Knowledge is in every country, the surest basis of public happiness, &c.”

This speech was received in both houses, with the most affectionate zeal and concord.

The report of the secretary of the treasury, in obedience to the resolution of congress, of the 21st of September, claimed the next attention of congress.

“ Good faith,” says the secretary, in his report, “ is recommended, not only by the strongest inducements of political expediency, but is enforced by considerations of still greater authority,” &c.

“The debt of the United States, is the price of liberty. The faith of the nation has been frequently pledged for it, with solemnities that gave popular force to the obligation,” &c.

The three prominent articles contained in the report, are as follows, viz.

1. “That provision be made for the full discharge of the foreign debt, according to the precise terms of the contract.

2. That provision be made for the payment of the domestic debt, in a similar manner.

3. That the debts of the several states, created for the purpose of carrying on the war, be assumed by the general government.”

On the 28th, this report came regularly before the house, for discussion ; but it was postponed until the 8th of February, to give time for consideration and reflection.

On the 8th, congress resumed this interesting and important subject, which opened a field of debate that shook the government to its foundation.

Provision was made for the foreign debt, cordially, and unanimously ; but the provision for the domestic debt, excited great warmth of feeling, and may fairly be said to be the origin of all that division of sentiment, which for a long time, agitated the national councils.

The evidences of the domestic debt, were then current in market, at 2s. 6d. on the pound, and this it was contended, was all that the holders of the debt had a right to claim. To this it was objected, that the original holders ought not to be defrauded of their just rights, because knaves and fools had parted with theirs, for a less sum than its nominal value.

Mr. Madison then attempted to introduce a resolution, that would do justice to both parties, by granting to the original holder, the full value of the face of his debt, and to the speculator, the full value of what he honestly paid in fair market. This opened a torrent of debate, with such warmth and zeal, as shook the government to its centre. The resolution was lost, and the report of the secretary, that the full amount of all the evidences of the national debt, should be religiously paid, was finally carried.

The next question that claimed the attention of congress, was the assumption of the state debts, in connection with the national debt, styled the funding system, which was also recommended by the secretary of the treasury. This opened an-

other warm and animated field of debate, and at this time was rejected ; but a bill having passed soon after, for removing the government from New-York to Philadelphia, for ten years, and from thence to the banks of the Potomac, as a permanent establishment, the subject was resumed, and the bill to establish the funding system, was finally adopted.

It was next proposed, that certain deductions should be made voluntarily, by the public creditors, and that the debt become irredeemable, otherwise than by the consent of the creditors, except in certain specific proportions.

This resolution opened again a torrent of debate ; but was finally carried in the affirmative.

The proceeds of the sales of the public lands, lying in the western territory, together with a surplus revenue, and a loan of two millions of dollars, which the president was authorized to borrow, at 5 per cent. were to be applied as a sinking fund for the redemption of the public debt.

This measure laid the foundation of public credit, upon a basis, that raised the depreciated debt from 2s. 6d. immediately up to 20s. on the pound ; and in a short time after, to a handsome per centage above par. The strength thus given to public credit, realized immediate fortunes to the extensive holders of public securities, and gave a general spring to the affairs of the nation. New efforts and new energies sprang up throughout the nation. Public confidence, public and private credit, a spirit of agriculture, commerce, and enterprise, universally prevailed. A foundation was laid for all that unrivalled prosperity America enjoyed, and all that greatness she is destined to enjoy.

On the 12th of August, 1790, congress adjourned, to meet at Philadelphia, on the first Monday of December following.

During these proceedings of congress, a general hostile disposition appeared among the western and southern Indians, which threatened the peace of the western frontiers. To obviate this calamity, colonel Willet was despatched on an embassy to the Creek nation, with overtures of peace, which so far succeeded, as to cause M'Gillivray to repair to New York, with several of his chiefs, and there settle a peace, on the 7th of August, 1790.

Spain not only attempted to defeat this treaty, at New York, by her agents, but continued to embarrass the western section of the United States, by her restrictions upon the navigation of the Mississippi river.

Great Britain also continued to hold the western posts, and through their influence, to excite the savages in their vicinity, to acts of hostility with the United States.

Upon the return of Mr. Adams from the court of London, the president had empowered Mr. Gouverneur Morris, (then in Europe) to effect a general negotiation with the British cabinet, upon the points in controversy; but it again failed, and the savages upon the western frontiers continued their murders and depredations.

The president improved this recess of congress, to visit his beloved seat at Mount Vernon, and give permanence to his health, by relaxing his mind from the cares of public life.

Rhode Island still stood aloof from the federal union. To conciliate the passions and feelings of this state, the president made an excursion into Rhode-Island, previous to his departure for his seat in Virginia; where he was received with all those expressions of grateful affection and respect, which had been shewn him in his tour through the other New-England states.

On the first Monday of December, the president met congress, at Philadelphia, agreeable to their adjournment, by a customary speech. He noticed particularly, the pleasure he derived from the flattering prospects of public credit, and a productive revenue, &c. as being not only a "pledge of the fertility of the national resources, but an honorable testimony of the patriotic integrity of the mercantile part of the community."

This address was echoed from both houses of congress, with all that glow of mutual confidence and affection, which had marked the replies of former sessions.

The secretary of the treasury then followed with sundry reports, recommending such further measures as were judged necessary to complete the establishment of public credit.

The first object recommended in the report, was a duty on wines, spirits, teas, coffee, &c. and domestic distilled spirits. The bill introduced upon this report, opened the flood gates of the passions, and produced a torrent of debate; in which reason, good sense, and even common sense, and common decency, were carried away in the storm. A general increase of the duties on imported articles was proposed, as a substitute for the duty on domestic spirits; also an amendment to the bill was proposed, by striking out the duty on domestic



spirits, and lost, thirty-six to sixteen. The original bill was carried, thirty-five to twenty-one.

The senate originated a bill, agreeable to the report of the secretary of the treasury, for the establishment of a national bank. This opened again the field of wordy war, and the whole artillery of the south, was played off against the bill, as being unconstitutional, as well as inexpedient. These arguments were met by the firmness of the north ; and these two great sections of the union, now appeared for the first time, arrayed against each other.

To lay the storm, the president called upon the heads of departments, to examine the subject, and give their opinions in writing.

The secretary, in this council, supported his report, against the opinions of the secretary of state, and the attorney-general ; and when the bill was passed, it received the signature of the president ; but the parties were still at issue in feeling, and never became reconciled.

These great questions involved also, the question of a due balance of power, between the federal and state governments.

One party claimed and maintained, that the whole strength of the nation depended upon a preponderance of power in the federal government. The other considered, that the safety of the nation depended on maintaining such a balance, between the federal and state governments, that an equilibrium should be preserved, and each remain independent, agreeable to the true sense of the constitution.

This division of sentiment became involved in every great national question, for many years ; but is now most happily, wholly done away.

Thus balanced, the parties continued to act, until the 3d of March, 1791, when, after passing an act to augment the military establishment of the United States, congress adjourned to October.

The feelings of the parties in congress, were now generally diffused through the nation, and the people began to be engaged in the controversy, with zeal and bitterness.

## CHAPTER III.

## INDIAN WAR—AFFAIRS OF GOVERNMENT, &amp;c.

Pending this strife of party, and the collisions of this wordy war in congress, an Indian war broke out upon the north-western frontier, which became serious and alarming in its operations and effects. The president had exhausted the whole field of pacific arrangements, to avert this storm, but without effect; and he saw no other alternative but the sword. A military force was accordingly sent against the Indian settlements upon the Scioto and Wabash rivers, under the command of that old revolutionary veteran, general Harmer. About the 15th of October, he commenced his operations, at the head of 1500 men, and laid waste the villages of the enemy, upon the Scioto, without much opposition, and commenced a retrograde movement, to regain his position at fort Washington.—Near the village of Chillicothe, a detachment of 300 men, under colonel Harden, supported by majors Wyllys, McMillan, and Fountain, fell into an Indian ambush. Majors Wyllys and Fountain fell, early in the conflict, and colonel Harden effected his retreat, with the loss of more than two-thirds of his party. General Harmer made good his retreat, and returned to fort Washington.

The president availed himself of an act of congress, and caused a body of levies to be raised, for six months, and appointed major-general Arthur St. Clair to the command, as successor to general Harmer, with full powers to treat with the savages and settle a peace.

Things being thus arranged for the north-western expedition, the president commenced his southern tour, to pay a visit to that section of the union, as he had done to the northern or eastern, before. Here he was highly gratified to find in every state, the same cordial expressions, of the most affectionate regard, and respect, that had so much delighted him in his northern tour. In his letter to gouverneur Morris, on the 28th of July, he thus expressed himself:

“In my late tour through the southern states, I experienced great satisfaction, in seeing the good effects of the general government, in that part of the union &c. Industry has there taken place of idleness, and economy of dissipation. The establishment of public credit, is an immense point gained, in our national concerns. A late instance has been given, of the

confidence reposed in our measures, by the rapidity with which the subscriptions to the national bank were filled. In two hours after the books were opened, the whole number of shares were taken up, and four thousand more applied for, than were allowed by the institution," &c.

The recruiting service progressed so slowly, that the president availed himself of that part of the act of congress, that authorised him to call a force of mounted militia, to any extent, in defence of the western frontier. He accordingly sent forward two expeditions, against the Indian settlements on the Wabash river, in the spring of 1791, which laid waste their villages and cornfields; destroyed many of their warriors, and brought off their old men, women and children.

The object of this predatory warfare, was to compel the enemy to settle a just and equitable peace. It wholly failed; the enemy were exasperated, but not humbled. Their renewed murders and ravages, called up the attention of the nation, to the causes that excited and promoted these savage depredations. This was traced to the influence of the British, at the western military posts. The president remonstrated against this procedure to lord Dorchester, governor-general of Canada.†

At this eventful moment, the second congress convened at Philadelphia, October 24th, 1791, agreeable to adjournment.

The president, in his speech at the opening of the session, congratulated congress upon the prosperous state of the nation, &c. and thus concluded :

“It is desirable upon all occasions, to unite with a firm and steady adherence to constitutional and necessary acts of government, the fairest evidence of a disposition, as far as may be practicable, to consult the wishes of every part of the community, and to lay the foundations of the public administration, in the effections of the people.”‡

This speech was cordially received, and as cordially echoed by both houses of congress.

Congress next proceeded to take into consideration, a bill “for apportioning the representatives of the several states,

† It fairly appeared, that more than 1500 of the citizens of Kentucky, and probably a much greater number, had been massacred by the Indians, between the years 1783 and 1790; and notwithstanding the pacific arrangements of that state, their ravages still continued.

‡ This was a conciliatory remark, alluding directly to the unpopularity of the excise law.

according to the first enumeration." This bill embraced the number of one for every thirty thousand. A motion was made to amend the bill, by striking out the word thirty, which excited some warmth of feeling and expression, but was finally lost. Several other amendments were introduced, viz. thirty-five, thirty-four, and thirty-three thousand ; but they were all lost, and the house passed the original bill.

The senate amended the bill, by fixing the ratio at thirty-three thousand, and returned it to the house ; but they adhered to their former vote, and the bill was lost.

The house originated another bill, very similar to the first, which passed with but few remarks. This bill the senate amended, by enlarging the number of representatives, by an indiscriminate apportionment upon the states collectively, not individually, which at first was rejected by the house, and afterwards agreed to, upon a conference. This bill was rejected by the executive, as unconstitutional, and returned to the house, with his reasons.

The house then introduced a third bill, apportioning the representatives to every thirty-three thousand, which passed both houses, and was approved by the president.

Congress next proceeded to pass a bill for the establishment of a uniform militia system, throughout the union, agreeable to the recommendation of the president, in 1789.

On the 3d of November, 1791, general St. Clair assembled an army of about 2000 men, in the vicinity of the Miami villages, and fortified his position.

Thus posted, the general contemplated to commence the work of destruction, the next morning. But the enemy, alive to their safety, surprised a party of militia, that formed the advance guard, at break of day ; put them to flight, and drove them back in great disorder, upon the main body. General St. Clair beat to arms, and rallied his whole force to the charge, to support the militia ; but all in vain ; the enemy surrounded his camp, and poured in a deadly fire from the thicket, which strewed the field with death.

The contest now became desperate. The savages rushed to the combat, regardless of danger, and fearless of death, and penetrated even to the mouths of the cannon ; the artillerists were slain ; the guns were taken, and the enemy entered the camp. General Butler fell, mortally wounded. General St. Clair ordered the charge of the bayonet ; the order was

promptly obeyed ; the enemy were repulsed ; the camp was cleared, and the cannon recovered.

General St. Clair ordered major Clarke to charge the enemy in front, and clear the road, that the army might be recovered from ruin, by a retreat. The order was promptly obeyed ; the road was cleared, and the army commenced a flight, which was closely pursued by the enemy, about four miles. The savages then returned to share the spoils of the camp, and general St. Clair continued his flight to fort Jefferson, (about thirty miles.) From thence he retired to fort Washington, on the Scioto.

The severity of this bloody action, may be seen by the following statement of the losses of the American army :

Thirty-eight commissioned officers killed in the action.— Five hundred and ninety-three, non-commissioned officers and privates, killed and missing.

Twenty-two commissioned officers wounded, (several died of their wounds.) Two hundred and fifty-two non commissioned officers and privates, also wounded. The whole American camp and artillery, fell into the hands of the enemy.

Seldom has it fallen to the lot of the historian to record a more signal overthrow than this, sustained by the army under the command of general St. Clair.

Such was the uneasiness of the public mind, that the general requested a court-martial, to investigate his conduct ; but there were not left in the army, officers of rank sufficient to constitute a court.

Congress gratified the wishes of the general, by appointing a special committee, to hold a court of inquiry, who exculpated him in explicit terms, and the public mind became quiet.

Congress took the alarm, and attempted to arrest the depredations that were expected to result from this signal defeat, by augmenting the army. A bill was accordingly introduced, which met with an opposition more warm and pointed, than any that had hitherto agitated that house ;† but the bill was carried, and the secretary of the treasury was directed to devise ways and means for the support of this army, and report

† The opposition to this bill rested upon the three following points, viz.

1. The injustice of the war.
2. The impossibility of providing sufficient funds to carry on the war.
3. The danger of augmenting the army in the hands of men, already suspected of favoring monarchichal designs.

to the house. The secretary reported accordingly. The report, after a warm debate, was accepted.

General Anthony Wayne, the veteran hero of Stony-Point, was appointed to the command of this army, as successor to general St. Clair.

Congress adjourned on the 8th of May, 1792, to the 5th of November.

Thus terminated the conflicting passions of congress ; but they carried the seeds of them into their retirement, where they were sown among their constituents, and became general throughout the nation.

Thus we have traced the origin of party ; the causes that produced it, and some slight effects that have resulted from those causes. I shall avoid all remarks, and proceed to disclose their effects, with all the *impartiality, the nature, importance and delicacy* of the subject demand ; as far as my pen can be controlled by the principles of *candor* and of *truth*.

The bold measures devised and pursued by the secretary of the treasury, gave an early alarm to the secretary of state, which grew and acquired strength, as the administration progressed, until it issued in open, and irreconcilable variance, and opposition.

The fundamental principles of this variance, were a jealousy, that the one was the advocate for too great an accession of power to the administration, or rather to the constitution, through the executive ; and that the other was disposed to place more dependence on the state governments, than was consistent with the safety of the general government, and the nation. Here they were at issue.

The wisdom, virtue, integrity, as well as high popularity of the executive, held a balance between the parties, that preserved the government, and kept the nation steady. To effect this, he addressed a letter to the secretary of state, bearing date, August 23d, 1792.

After remarking upon the foreign relations of the government, the president thus proceeds :

“How unfortunate, and how much is it to be regretted then, that while we are encompassed upon all sides with avowed enemies, and insidious friends internal dissensions should be harrowing, and tearing our vitals. The last, to me is the most serious, the most alarming, and the most affecting of the two,” &c. “In this way, the government must inevitably be torn asunder, and in my opinion, the fairest prospect of happiness

and prosperity that ever presented itself to man, will be lost, forever," &c.

"I do not mean to apply this advice, or these observations, to any particular person, or character. I have given them, in the same general terms, to other officers of the government,† because the disagreements which have arisen from the difference of opinions, and the attacks which have been made upon almost all the measures of government, and most of its executive officers,‡ have for a long time filled me with painful sensations, and cannot fail, I think, of producing unhappy consequences, at home and abroad."

This friendly, yet gentle admonition, not producing the desired effect, the president addressed the following to the secretary of the treasury, in answer to his reply to a former address, upon the same subject :

"I regret, deeply regret, the difference of opinion, that has divided you, and another principal officer of the government ; and wish devoutly, there could be an accommodation of them, by mutual yieldings. For I will frankly and solemnly declare, that I believe the views of both, to be pure, and well meant, and that experience only will decide, with respect to the salubrity of the measures, which are the objects of dispute.

"Why then, when some of the best citizens of the United States, men of discernment, uniform and tried patriots, who have no sinister views to promote, but are chaste in their ways of thinking and acting, are to be found, some on one side, and some on the other, of the questions which have caused these agitations ; why should you be so tenacious of your opinions, as to make no allowance for the other," &c.

"I have a great and sincere regard for you both, and ardently wish, that some line could be marked out, by which both of you could walk."

Thus far for the origin of party, in the United States, which at this time began to become seriously involved in the politics of Europe ; but more immediately, in that wonderful phenomenon, the French revolution.

The opposition to the excise law, commenced soon after the act was passed, and became seriously alarming, in the back counties of Pennsylvania, west of the mountains ; county

† The secretary of the treasury, and the attorney general.

‡ In the Gazette of the United States, on the part of the treasury, and the National Gazette, on the part of the department of state.

meetings were held, and riotous measures against the government were adopted and pursued.

In September, 1791, the malcontent counties held a meeting at Pittsburg, and passed a set of resolutions, in confirmation of those which had been passed in their county meetings; proscribing all such persons as should attempt to execute the excise laws, as enemies to the country, and unworthy of public confidence. These measures took such effect, that the president recommended a revision of the excise law, in October, which was finally passed in May following, with the special intent to remove all such parts of said law as could be reasonably objected to. This produced no effect; the opposition continued, and the counties held another meeting at Pittsburg, and appointed a committee of correspondence, to call forth the opposition of the nation.

The president issued his proclamation, exhorting and admonishing all persons, to desist from all combinations or proceedings, tending to obstruct the execution of the laws, and calling on the civil magistrates to do their duty, and keep the peace. Prosecutions were directed to be instituted against all offenders, according to due course of law.

This proclamation produced no effect. Both magistrate and people were alike involved in the opposition, and the laws became silent, in the midst of a whiskey mob.

During the recess of congress, the president made another effort to settle a peace with the Indians, and hush the storm of war. He accordingly despatched colonel Harden and major Freeman, on an embassy to the hostile tribes; but they were both murdered by the savages.

On the 5th of November, 1792, agreeable to adjournment, congress again convened. The president opened the session with a speech, as usual, in which he touched upon the Indian war, whiskey insurrection, &c. and thus concluded:

"I entertain a strong hope, that the state of the national finances is now sufficient, to enable you to enter upon a systematic and effectual arrangement, for the regular redemption and discharge of the public debt, according to the right which has been reserved to the government."

This speech was kindly received, and cordially answered by both houses.

The subject of the national debt, engrossed more of the attention of congress, than the limits of this work will permit me to notice. The secretary of the treasury proposed addi-



tional taxes on pleasure horses, carriages, &c. in order to enable the revenue to meet the exigencies of government. This was met by a motion for postponement, and another to reduce the military establishment, which agitated the feelings and passions of congress, until the 4th of January, 1793, when it was rejected. The plan for redeeming the public debt, failed also, at this time.

The president availed himself of a law passed in August, 1790, for borrowing twelve millions of dollars, to be applied to the payment of the foreign debt, and empowered the secretary of the treasury to open loans for that purpose, to meet such sums of the foreign debt, as might become due at the end of the year 1791. These loans were opened accordingly.

Instructions were given to the agent of the United States in Europe, in May, 1791, to apply the proceeds of future loans, in payments to France, except such sums as should be otherwise specifically appropriated. Certain plans of the national assembly of France, for converting these payments into supplies for St. Domingo, were intimated by the French minister of marine, which diverted their application for a time. At the same time, the secretary of the treasury drew into the United States, such parts of these loans, as were designed to apply to the sinking fund.

At that eventful moment, an insurrection broke out in St. Domingo, August, 1791, that involved the white population in one general and indiscriminate butchery. In this state of confusion, the secretary of the treasury suffered a portion of the instalments, actually due to France, to remain unpaid.

On the 23d of January 1793, Mr. Giles, of Virginia, introduced several resolutions, requiring information from the treasury, upon the whole subject. These resolutions were adopted.

The secretary of the treasury met these resolutions with such a full and ample statement, as was highly satisfactory to the house. Mr. Giles, however, was not satisfied, but introduced sundry other resolutions, upon the same subject, tending pointedly to criminate the secretary of the treasury, with a special clause, directing that a copy of them be transmitted to the president. These resolutions were rejected by an overwhelming majority.

On the 4th of March, 1793, congress adjourned to the 1st of December following.

Parties in the United States were now distinctly formed and distinguished by the names of federalist and democrat.

Such had become the warmth and bitterness of party feeling, that these resolutions were designed to criminate, not only the secretary, of the treasury, as an ambitious man, aiming at tyranny and usurpation, but the executive also, as the abettor of his measures, and an accomplice in the plan. The reputation of the secretary was not altogether invulnerable; but the popularity of the president, stood high, above the reach of party calumny, and enabled him to hold the balances with a steady hand.

At this eventful period, the French revolution had so far progressed, that the national convention had succeeded the national assembly; brought the king to the guillotine, and given full scope to the reign of terror, under the mask of liberty and equality, in France.

The president of the United States, clearly foresaw, that without an efficient government, the people of America would become entangled in the vortex of the French revolution, and the new federal constitution be swallowed up, in the general wreck of discord, anarchy and confusion.

During these convulsions, and on the 25th of December, the electors of United America, were again called upon to fill the offices of the two chief magistrates of the nation. Warm and violent was the strife of party; but the electors were true to their country, and gave a unanimous suffrage for George Washington, as president; and a majority for John Adams, as vice-president; and the president was prevailed upon, by the solicitations of his friends, once more to take the chair.

Great efforts had been, and still continued to be made, to settle a peace with the hostile Indians, on the north-western frontier, and appearances had now become more favorable; a treaty had been negotiated with the Wabash Indians, and the Miamies had consented to hold a conference the ensuing spring; offensive operations had been suspended; but a general peace had not yet been concluded. The president pursued his preparations to prosecute the war.

The alarming state of things in Europe, arising out of the French revolution, now engrossed the attention of the president of the United States. Early in April, news arrived, that France had declared war against England and Holland. On the 17th, the president repaired to the seat of government, and on the 18th, addressed to the heads of departments, (*his cab-*

*in et council*) several important queries, relating to the conduct of the United States towards France; and requested their attendance at his house, to decide upon the momentous subject.

The council met accordingly; and after mature deliberation were unanimous in their opinion, "that a proclamation ought to be issued, announcing the neutrality of the United States, towards all the belligerent powers," &c.

They were also unanimous, that a minister ought to be received from France; but they were divided in sentiment, as to the terms upon which such minister ought to be received.

Upon the question, "whether it was advisable to convene congress," the council were unanimous in the negative.

The president next requested the council to express their opinion in writing, upon the subject, on which they were divided, and their reasons and authorities at large; and at the same time, directed the attorney general to prepare a proclamation, which was done accordingly, and approved by the council; signed by the president, on the 22d, and ordered to be published.

The publication of this proclamation of neutrality, opened a field for the display of those passions, upon the great theatre of the nation, which we have hitherto witnessed in the national councils. All the bitterness of party burst forth, in loud acclamations against the measure. The partizans of France claimed, that in gratitude, the United States were bound, to make common cause with France. Base, avaricious and unprincipled men, denounced that proclamation, as an abridgement of that commerce, which they had calculated to turn to their advantage, in the traffic of articles, contraband of war; and they joined in the party clamours. In this state of things, the government of France recalled from the United States, the minister of the crown, and sent out Mr. Genet, a subtle, artful, violent jacobin.

Mr. Genet arrived at Charleston (South Carolina) on the 8th of April, 1793, where he was received by the governor of the state, and her best citizens, with all that enthusiasm, which the American people had cherished for his nation, since the days of York-town.

All this might have been innocent in itself, but when Mr. Genet presumed upon the strength of this, to insult the government of the United States, by assuming the power of commissioning privateers, to cruise against nations then at peace

with America, and sell their prizes in the ports of the United States, under the authority of the consuls of France, even before he had been accredited by the government, involved in it consequences serious and alarming.

On the 18th, Mr. Genet arrived at Philadelphia, where he was received by the citizens, with the same acclamations of joy, which he had witnessed at Charleston. When presented to the government, he was received by the president, with expressions of sincere and cordial regard for the French people; but the president was silent upon the subject of the French republic. Mr. Genet approved the proclamation of neutrality, as being highly favorable to the interests of France.

Mr. Hammond, the British minister, had laid before the President, a statement of the captures of British vessels, which had been made by the authorized privateers of Mr. Genet, and he called a cabinet council, to advise upon the mode of procedure, lawful and expedient to be pursued. Here again the cabinet were divided, as upon the question of the new minister from France. The secretary of state and the attorney-general were of opinion, that the courts of law were the proper tribunals to decide the question, and were disposed to favor the procedure. The secretaries of the treasury and of war were of opinion, that all governments ought to be so far respected, as to direct and control all events, relating to peace or war, under their jurisdiction; and that the proceedings of Mr. Genet, were an outrage upon the sovereignty, as well as neutrality of the United States; therefore, the government ought to cause restitution to be made.

The president took time to deliberate, and addressed circular letters to the chief magistrates of the several states, calling on them to enforce the laws, within their several jurisdictions, and compel a due obedience by force, if necessary.

Mr. Genet resented this procedure, and remonstrated to the president, by letter, with an indecorous warmth. Upon which, the president signified to Mr. Genet, that it was expected, that the armed vessels which had given the offence, would immediately withdraw from the ports of the United States. Prosecutions, at the same time, were ordered, and actually commenced, against such citizens of the United States, as had been engaged in this privateering business.

Mr. Genet again expressed his resentment, and appealed from the government to the people of the United States, in a style too indecorous to be named. He next remonstrated to the secretary of state, against the decisions of the executive, and demanded a release of those persons under arrest, by order of government, “as acting under the authority of France, and defending the glorious cause of liberty, in common with her children.” The appeal of Mr. Genet to the American people, through the channels of the public prints, threw the nation into two great parties; the one adhered to the government, and the other rallied round the minister.

At this time, certain societies sprang up in America, bearing the political stamp of the jacobin societies in France, and assumed a dictatorial style, in the affairs of the nation. Civic feasts, and other public assemblages of the people, became general; especially at the south, and in the large towns; in which, the ensigns of France and the United States, were displayed in union; and the red cap of liberty and fraternity, triumphantly circulated, from head to head, accompanied with toasts, expressive of the identity of the French and American republics; crowned with their favorite toast, “*Principles, not men* ;” in allusion to the popular influence of the president, and as a reflection upon his measures; particularly the suppression of privateering, and the proclamation of neutrality; often styled the “royal edict.”

Thus were the executive, the government, and the nation, outraged by this enthusiastic zealot of the French republic.

Pause reader and reflect; what would have become the fate of America under the old confederation, or even under the new, with a weak executive? and acknowledge the hand of God, in thus preserving *the vine which he had planted*

To detail the overt acts of outrage against the executive, as well as the government, by this diplomatic disciple of liberty and equality, and shew how he meditated war against Florida and Louisiana, by raising troops in Georgia and Kentucky, without the knowledge and consent of the United States, and in defiance to the government, as well as existing treaties, would exceed the limits of this work; suffice it to say, that when the dignified patience of the executive had become exhausted, he demanded of the French government, that Mr. Genet should be recalled, and he was recalled.

Mr. Genet was succeeded by Mr. Fauchet; and at the same

time, Mr. Monroe was sent out to France, to succeed Mr. Morris, recalled.

On the 1st of December, 1793, congress convened at Philadelphia, agreeable to adjournment; notwithstanding the yellow fever had not wholly subsided.† On the 4th, the president delivered his speech, which displayed the political state of the nation, was cordially received, and as cordially echoed by both houses.

Early in the session, the secretary of state, (agreeable to a resolution of the house, passed in February, 1791) presented a report, upon the commercial state of the nation, with his views and advice thereon, &c.

On the 30th, the secretary presented an additional report, which was occasioned by certain regulations of a commercial nature, on the part of France, with regard to the West-India trade, &c. Both of which were highly acceptable, and did honor to the department.

With this official act, and agreeable to previous notice, the secretary resigned, and was succeeded by Edmund Randolph esq. January, 1794.

The limits of this work will not permit me to notice particularly, the resolutions brought forward by Mr. Madison, upon this report; the objects of which were the humiliation of Great-Britain, and the exaltation of France; nor the warm and animated debates that ensued. The subject of the resolutions was postponed until March.

In the midst of this commercial strife, the state of Algiers commenced depredations upon the commerce of the United States, and captured eleven sail of her merchantmen. This, when communicated to congress, by the executive, led to the following resolution:

“Resolved, That a naval force, adequate to the protection of the commerce of the United States, against the Algerine corsairs, ought to be provided.”

This resolve opened a torrent of debate, and let loose all the violence of party jealousy, and party strife, in the sharp conflict of wordy war. The bill finally passed, by a majority of eleven only, authorising the building of six frigates; four of forty-four, and two of thirty-two guns each, and received the sanction of the president.

At this time, the depredations of France and Great Britain

† This malignant disease had raged like the plague through the autumn.

upon American commerce, under sanction of their commercial decrees, became so alarming, that congress authorised the president to lay an embargo ; strengthen the military posts ; fortify the seaports ; raise a corps of engineers and artilleryists, and organize the militia, &c.

The president met the resolves of congress promptly, and at the same time, held out the olive branch, by nominating the honorable John Jay, as envoy extraordinary, to the court of Great Britain, to negotiate a commercial treaty, April 16th. The recommendation was finally approved, and Mr. Jay proceeded on his mission accordingly. At the same time, a bill passed the house, to suspend all further commercial intercourse with Great Britain ; but it was negatived in the senate, by the casting vote of the vice-president.

To meet the pressing exigencies of government, the secretary of the treasury recommended, that taxes be levied upon licences to retailers of wines, and spirituous liquors, also on pleasure carriages, snuff, and refined sugar.

Previous to the negotiation of Mr. Jay, another attempt was made to adjust the differences with the hostile tribes of Indians, by a treaty, which was spun out through the summer, and so far into autumn, as to prevent general Wayne from attempting any important operations. The general advanced to Greenville ; erected a fort upon the ground where the Americans were defeated in November, 1791 ; called it fort Recovery, and took up his winter quarters.

At the same time, a detachment from the garrison of Detroit, erected a fort upon the Miami of the lake, fifty miles within the limits of the United States, which caused great excitement in the nation, and occasioned sharp remonstrances from the American government.

General Wayne pushed his preparations to commence the campaign early in the season ; but such were the unavoidable delays in furnishing the necessary supplies, that he could not take the field before mid-summer.

About the first of August, 1794, general Wayne advanced upon the banks of the Miami of the lake, to the distance of thirty miles from the British fort, where he was joined by general Scott, at the head of 1100 Kentucky militia. The general made one more effort to settle a peace with the Indians, by inviting them to meet him in council, by a deputation for that purpose, but without effect.

On the 15th, he advanced down the Miami, until he reached

the Rapids, where his advance guard, under major Price, fell into an Indian ambuscade. Major Price advanced upon the enemy with trailed arms, and at the point of the bayonet, roused him from his covert. General Wayne supported his advance guard, and the enemy were driven from the field, and pursued under the guns of the British fort.

General Wayne lost in this action, 107 killed, wounded and missing. The loss of the enemy was supposed to be much greater. The general returned to his fortified station, by easy marches, and laid waste the Indian villages, corn fields, &c. to the extent of fifty miles, on each side of the river, and erected forts to secure the conquests, and keep the Indians quiet. This action was followed by the treaty of Greenville, the next year, which closed this Indian war, 1795.

At this time, the whiskey boys, in the back part of Pennsylvania, had so far matured their plans, that they resisted the excise law by force of arms, and a general insurrection took place.

When these proceedings reached the executive, he called on the judge of the district to certify, "that the laws of the United States had been opposed by combinations too powerful to be suppressed, by the ordinary course of judicial proceedings, or by the powers vested in the marshals;" which certificate authorised the president to call out the militia, to quell the insurrection. This regular preliminary being settled, the president consulted his cabinet council, together with the governor of Pennsylvania, and then issued his proclamation, commanding the insurgents to retire peaceably to their several abodes, on or before the first day of September next. At the same time, the president called on the states of New-Jersey, Pennsylvania, Maryland, and Virginia for their several quotas of militia, to raise an army of 12,000 men, to be ready at a moment's warning, to march into the back counties of Pennsylvania, and quell the insurrection.

In the mean time, the president despatched the attorney-general, Judge Yates, and a Mr. Ross, senator from Pennsylvania, on an embassy, to receive the submission of the insurgents, and grant amnesty to all such as should lay down their arms and submit to the laws.

Governor Mifflin also issued a proclamation, and sent commissioners to co-operate with those of the government; but all to no effect; the insurgents went forward, determined to oppose the excise law to the last extremity.



Upon the failure of this embassy, the president issued another proclamation, calling upon the several quotas of troops held in requisition, to assemble and rendezvous at Bedford and Cumberland. And he gave the command to governor Lee, of Virginia.

The president reviewed this army by divisions, and being pleased with its appearance, he left the secretary of the treasury, to accompany the commander-in-chief, and returned to Philadelphia, to attend the approaching session of congress.

The insurrection was quelled without opposition ; the people returned to their duty ; but several of their principal leaders fled, and made their escape.

The general stationed general Morgan, with a small force, in the heart of the disaffected country, and disbanded the remainder of the army.

The alacrity and zeal, with which all classes of citizens turned out to support the laws, was highly honorable to our country, and gratifying to the government ; but more particularly so, when general officers were seen at the head of companies, and others in the ranks, with knapsacks upon their backs, as common soldiers. Even young Quakers of the first families, enrolled themselves in the service of their country, and marched to quell the insurgents.

On the 3d of November, 1794, agreeable to adjournment, congress assembled ; on the 18th, a quorum was formed to receive the speech of the president. He applauded the zeal and alacrity of the officers and troops, in quelling the insurrection, and justly animadverted upon those " self-created societies, which had been instrumental in exciting and promoting it," &c.

On the 1st of December following, the secretary of the treasury, colonel Hamilton, resigned his office, and was succeeded by Oliver Wolcott esq. of Connecticut. The talents, integrity and experience of Mr. Wolcott, all combined to render him highly qualified for this elevated station.

On the 28th, the secretary of war announced to the president, by letter, his resolution to retire from office, on the first of January. The president accepted his resignation, and appointed Timothy Pickering esq. his successor.

Mr. Jay, agreeable to his appointment, arrived in London, June 15th, 1794, where he negotiated a treaty of amity, commerce and navigation, with Great Britain ; which was

signed by Mr. Jay, and lord Grenville, on the 19th of November, and transmitted to America, where it arrived on the 7th of March, 1795.

On the 8th of June, the senate were convened by the president, for the express purpose of discussing the merits of the treaty. On the 24th, after a minute and close investigation, that honorable body, barely by a constitutional majority, approved of the treaty, and advised to its ratification.

The president took the advice of the senate into consideration, although he strongly balanced in favor of signing the treaty.

At this time, the English prints announced, that the order of the 8th of June, 1793, for the seizure of provisions bound to France, was renewed. This led the president to pause and reflect, to learn its bearings upon the American commerce, as well as upon the public mind.

During this state of suspense and deliberation, the president set out for Mount Vernon; but his attention was arrested at Baltimore, with a warm and spirited address from the citizens of Boston, against the ratification of the treaty. This was soon following by others of the same stamp, from the large towns, which occasioned him to hasten back to Philadelphia, and consult his cabinet council.

On the 12th of August, the president gave his final decision upon the treaty, by affixing his signature, with an accompanying remonstrance against the order of the 8th of June, 1793. The ratifications were exchanged, and the order revoked.

Although this treaty had given as high excitement to the public mind, as any one event since the adoption of the constitution, yet the ratification proved very popular, and the commerce of the nation became remarkably prosperous. The western posts were given up, agreeable to the treaty of 1783; and a general peace was established with the hostile tribes of Indians, by the treaty of Greenville, 1795.

At this time, the secretary of state, (Mr. Randolph) resigned, and was succeeded by Mr. M'Henry.

On the 5th of September, a treaty of amity was concluded with the Dey of Algiers; the American captives were set free, and the commerce of the Mediterranean restored.

On the 20th of October, a treaty was concluded with Spain, which settled all the contested points that regarded a free navigation of the river Mississippi.

Congress convened on the 1st of December. agreeable to

adjournment, and the president met them with the following remarks, in his speech :

“ I trust I do not deceive myself, while I indulge the persuasion, that I never have met you at a period, when, more than at the present, the situation of our public affairs, has afforded just cause for mutual congratulation, and for inviting you to join with me, in profound gratitude to the author of all good, for the numerous and extraordinary blessings we enjoy.”

Mr. Adet, (French minister) had succeeded Mr. Fauchet, in the summer, and in December, he announced his diplomatic mission to the executive. On the 1st of January, 1796, he presented to the executive, the colors of France, accompanied with a letter, highly expressive of national fraternity, which was laid before congress, and the colors deposited in the hall of the house of representatives, accompanied with an elegant address to congress.

I pass over those violent conflicts of party in the house, upon the resolutions to provide means for carrying the British treaty into effect. The opposition was silenced ; means were finally provided ; the treaty was carried into effect, and the nation flourished under it, beyond all former example.

The president, having thus surmounted all opposition, and laid the foundation of the American republic, upon the broad basis of *peace on earth, and good will to men*, next turned his attention to the benevolent act of negotiating with the king of England, and the emperor of Germany, for the liberation of his beloved friend, the marquis La Fayette, from the prison of Olmutz, which failed ; but was accomplished by general Bonaparte, at the peace of Campo Formio, the next year.

The president, having learnt that France meditated hostilities against the United States, by way of depredations upon their West-India commerce, recalled Mr. Monroe from the court of Versailles, and sent Mr. Pinkney in his place. He next announced his resolution to retire from public life, at the close of his term, and published to the American people, his valedictory address. (See appendix, letter E.) I most highly rejoice that the limits of this work will permit me to insert this address, not only on account of its own intrinsic worth, but on account of the extensive good it is calculated to do, to every true American, who reads it with candid attention.

I pass over the gross intrigues that accompanied the election of a successor to president Washington, by observing, that

the electors met, agreeable to the constitution, in the month of December, and gave a majority of votes for John Adams, as President, and for Thomas Jefferson, as vice-President; and the father of his country, at the close of his term, retired to Mount Vernon, under the benedictions of the nation; there to enjoy, once more, the sweets of private as well as domestic life.

High raised on the summit of immortal fame, Washington looked down with calmness and composure, upon the strife of conflicting party, and as the guardian angel of America, offered to Heaven, his fervent supplications for his distracted country.†

---

## CHAPTER VI.

### PRESIDENT ADAMS' ADMINISTRATION, &c.

In the month of February, the votes of the electors were counted, in the presence of both houses of congress, and the election of Mr. Adams announced as president, and of Mr. Jefferson as vice-president. On the 4th of March, Mr. Adams was regularly inducted into office, in the presence of congress, and a numerous and brilliant concourse of spectators.

The following just and correct remarks of Mr. Marshall upon the state of the nation, are deserving of very particular consideration.

“At home, a sound credit had been erected; an immense floating debt had been funded in a manner perfectly satisfactory to the creditors, and an ample revenue had been provided. Those difficulties, which a system of internal taxation, on its first introduction, is doomed to encounter, were completely removed; and the authority of the government was firmly established.

“Funds for the gradual payment of the debt had been provided; a considerable part of it had actually been discharged; and that system which is now operating its entire extinction, had been matured and adopted. The agricultural and commercial wealth of the nation had increased, beyond all former example. The numerous tribes of Indians on the west, had

†The population of the United States at this time amounted to about 5,000,000.

been taught by arms and by justice, to respect the United States, and to continue in peace.

“Abroad, the differences with Spain had been accommodated. The free navigation of the Mississippi had been acquired, with the use of New-Orleans, as a place of deposit, for three years, and afterwards, until some equivalent place should be designed.

“Those causes of mutual exasperation, which had threatened to involve the United States in a war with the greatest maritime and commercial power in the world, had been removed ; and the military posts, which had been occupied within their territory, from their existence as a nation, had been evacuated. Treaties had been formed with Algiers and Tripoli, and no captures appear to have been made by Tunis ; so that the Mediterranean was opened to American vessels.

“This bright prospect, was indeed, in part, shaded by the discontents of France. But the causes of these discontents, it had been impossible to avoid, without surrendering the right of self-government. Such was the situation of the United States, at the close of Washington’s and the commencement of Adams’ administration.”†

The administration of Mr. Adams, was met at the threshold, by open indignity on the part of France, in her refusing to accept Mr. Pinckney in exchange for Mr. Monroe. This refusal roused the sensibilities of Mr. Adams, and he immediately nominated two others, Mr. Marshall and Mr. Gerry, who were sent out to France, to co-operate with Mr. Pinckney, if possible, to settle an accommodation with the directory.

When those envoys arrived in Paris, instead of being accredited, by the government, they were kept aloof by certain indirect propositions from the informal agents of the directory, under the signatures of X, Y and Z, for large sums of money, by way of loan from the United States to France, as conditional to their acceptance. These propositions were promptly refused. They were then urged and demanded as a *sine qua non*. This was considered by the envoys as a demand for tribute, and indignantly repelled. The informal agents of the directory, then assumed an imperious style, and threatened the envoys, by assuring them “that Austria was humbled, that Great Britain would soon follow ; that all Europe would soon be prostrate before the all-conquering arms of France, and that America would then stand alone ; that the directory

† Marshall’s Life of Washington.

had the means of rendering the envoys, as well as their government, contemptible in America."

True to their trust, the envoys repelled these threats with firmness, and communicated the whole correspondence to their government. This was soon diffused throughout the nation, by the public prints, which roused the public feeling.

Two of the envoys returned to America, and left Mr. Gerry in France, with some flattering assurances on the part of the directory, that he might possibly effect something; these assurances failed, and he returned.

President Adams publicly declared, "that he would make no further overtures to France, until assured, that his envoys would be received in character suited to the dignity of a great and independent nation."

The insult offered to the American government, was followed by outrage and depredations upon her commerce, by the citizens of France; all which roused the indignation of the American people, and they expressed their feelings by this memorable sentiment: "*Millions for defence; but not a cent for tribute.*"

Under the impression of this sentiment, the American government proceeded to raise and equip a provisional army of 12,000 men, and the ex-president Washington, agreeable to appointment, accepted the office of commander-in-chief of all the armies raised, or to be raised in the United States—1798.

A revolution in France, at this time, placed general Bonaparte at the head of the consular government. This, together with the firmness of the American government, and their successful war upon the French commerce, induced the French government to express to the American government, through Mr. Vans Murray, minister at the Hague, "that the differences between the two nations, might be accommodated"—1799.

President Adams met this overture promptly, and sent Mr. Davies† and Mr. Ellsworth,‡ to join Mr. Murray at Paris, and negotiate a treaty.

On the night of the 13th of December, general Washington was seized suddenly and violently, with an inflammatory affection of the lungs, occasioned by an exposure to a slight rain, the preceding day, which put a period to his valuable life, on the 14th. His remains were deposited in the family vault, on Wednesday, the 18th, with military honors.

† Governor of North Carolina.

‡ Chief justice of the United States

The death of the father of his country, spread a gloom over the nation. Congress felt the shock, and immediately upon the intelligence, adjourned. The next day they convened, and resolved, "that it be recommended to the members of this body, and the nation at large, to wear crape on the left arm, for thirty days, and that the president express by letter to Mrs. Washington, the condolence of congress, and request that the remains of her departed husband might be removed to the city of Washington, for interment."

A committee specially appointed by congress, recommended, that a marble monument be erected to his memory at the city of Washington, at the expense of the government; and that a funeral oration be delivered on the occasion, before both houses of congress, at the German Lutheran church.

All these resolutions passed unanimously, and general Henry Lee delivered a solemn, eloquent and dignified oration, accordingly.

The nation followed the government, and gave vent to their feelings, by their numerous funeral processions and eulogies.†

The monument, however, has never been erected. "That the great events of the political as well as military life of general Washington, should be commemorated, could not be plea-

† The following letter addressed to the president of the United States, by the senate, will shew the sensibilities of that body upon this solemn occasion.

"Permit us, sir, to mingle our tears with yours. On this occasion, it is manly to weep. To lose such a man, at such a crisis, is no common calamity to the world. Our country mourns a father. The Almighty Disposer of events has taken from us our greatest benefactor and ornament. It becomes us to submit with reverence to him who maketh darkness his pavillion.

"With patriotic pride we review the life of Washington, and compare him with those of other countries who have been pre-eminent in favour. Ancient and modern names are diminished before him.—Greatness and guilt have too often been allied; but his fame is whiter than it is brilliant. The destroyers of nations stood abashed at the majesty of his virtues. It reproved the intemperance of their ambition, and darkened the splendor of victory.

"The scene is closed; and we are no longer anxious lest misfortune should sully his glory. He has travelled on to the end of his journey, and carried with him an increasing weight of honor. He has deposited it safely where misfortune cannot tarnish it; where malice cannot blast it. Favored of heaven, he departed without exhibiting the weakness of humanity; magnanimous in death, the darkness of the grave could not obscure his brightness."

sing to those, who had condemned, and continued to condemn, the whole course of his administration."\*

On Wednesday, May 24th, 1800, congress adjourned, to meet at the city of Washington, agreeable to a law providing for the same.

On the 30th of September, 1800, the envoys at Paris concluded a treaty of peace with the French government, and as soon as the same had been ratified by the president, and senate, the provisional army was disbanded, by order of congress.

This year the electioneering field, to fill the officers of the two chief magistrates in the government, was opened with uncommon zeal and warmth, by the parties. Mr. Jefferson, Mr. Burr and Mr. Clinton, were the republican or democratic candidates. and Mr. Adams and Mr. Pinckney, the federal. The constitution at this time, provided, that the candidate, who received the greatest number of votes, should be president, and that the next highest number, should be vice-president.

Mr. Jefferson and Mr. Burr, not only received the highest number, but their votes were equal, (seventy-three each) and the choice of president, from the two, devolved upon the house of representatives, agreeable to the constitution, to vote by states. This opened a new scene; the house became divided; the federal party for Mr. Burr, and the democratic party for Mr. Jefferson. The balloting continued for several days and nights in succession, with great warmth and bitterness of feeling.† The whole nation took part in the event, and were anxiously alive to the subject. Mr. Jefferson prevailed, and was elected president, and Mr. Burr became vice-president, of course.

The new judicary system, and the alien and sedition laws, which had been recently passed, together with the direct tax, and internal duties, were supposed to have defeated the re-election of Mr. Adams.‡

\* Marshall's Life of Washington.

† The members carried their night-caps into the hall, and slept on their seats, whilst the ballots were counting.

‡ By the new judiciary system, is to be understood, the additions that had been recently made to the federal courts.

By the alien law, is to be understood, that law so entitled, "which authorised the president to order any alien, that he should judge dangerous to the peace and safety of the United States, &c. to depart the realm, within such time as he might judge proper, upon penalty of imprisonment, for a term not exceeding three years."

The *sedition law* was designed to suppress, "all false, scandalous, and malicious writings against the government of the United States



On the 4th of March, 1801, Mr. Jefferson was regularly inducted into the office of president. By his inaugural speech, he unfolded to view, the whole field of his political creed, and unmasked the plan of his administration. Although this was very intelligible to his party, yet to all such as had not been initiated into the mysteries, it resembled the responses of the oracle of Delphos ; it meant any thing, every thing, and nothing ; but as his administration progressed, it fully unveiled the mystery.†

Mr. Jefferson, not only by his inaugural speech, but at the commencement of his administration, took a bold stand, and introduced a system of measures, hostile to the general system of Washington's administration, and directly calculated to subvert it, in all its fundamental principles. Liberty and economy, (instead of equality) became the order of the day. To effect this, he made a general change in the officers of the government ; particularly those that were the most lucrative, in the several departments. Commenced and carried on a regular attack upon the army, the navy, the judiciary system,

or either house of congress, or the president, &c. under a severe penalty of "fine, or imprisonment for a term of years."

† "Equal and exact justice to all men, of whatever state or persuasion, religious or political :—peace, commerce, and honest friendship, with all nations, entangling alliances with none :—the support of the state governments in all their rights, as the most competent administrations of our domestic concerns, and the surest bulwarks against anti-republican tendencies :—the preservation of the general government in its whole constitutional vigor, as the sheet anchor of our peace at home, and safety abroad :—a jealous care of the right of election by the people, a mild and safe corrective of abuses, which are lopped by the sword of revolution, where peaceable remedies are unprovided :—absolute acquiescence in the decision of the majority, the vital principle of republics, from which is no appeal, but to force, the vital principle and immediate parent of despotisms :—a well disciplined militia, our best reliance in peace, and for the first moments of war, till regulars may relieve them :—the supremacy of the civil over the military authority :—economy in the public expense, that labor may be lightly burthened.

The honest payment of our debts, and sacred preservation of the public faith :—encouragement of agriculture, and of commerce, as its hand-maid :—the diffusion of information, and arraignment of all abuses at the bar of public reason :—freedom of religion, freedom of the press, and freedom of person, under the protection of the habeas corpus :—and trial by juries impartially selected." "These principles," added Mr. Jefferson, "should be the creed of our political faith—and should we wander from them in moments of error or of alarm, let us hasten to retrace our steps, and regain the road, which alone leads to peace, liberty, and safety."

the bank, and the internal revenue ; which introduced a new order of things.

The parties in this congress, had become regularly and decidedly formed, in the election contest for president, and now entered the field of legislation, in solid columns, determined to carry all before them. All this opened a field of discussion, that convulsed, not only the government, but the nation. The new judiciary system, together with the alien and sedition law, were repealed ; the internal taxes were removed, and the plans of Mr. Jefferson, were generally carried into effect—1801 and 2.

In 1803, fresh collisions sprang up between Spain and the United States, with regard to the navigation of the river Mississippi. By a former treaty with Spain, the port of New-Orleans became a place of deposit, for the merchandize of the citizens of the United States, in passing up and down that river ; but the Spanish intendant of that port, violated the treaty at this time, by denying to the citizens of the United States, the right of deposit. This incensed the American government, and kindled a fire in congress. The senate originated a bill, authorising the president to raise a strong military force, and seize on New-Orleans, together with Louisiana, and hold it by the right of conquest ; but this was overruled, after a long and animated discussion, and the president, through the interposition of France, purchased the whole country of Spanish Louisiana, for 15,000,000 of dollars.†

During the period of this political strife, sharp and frequent collisions had arisen between the regency of Tripoli, and the commercial citizens of the United States ; several American vessels had been taken, and their crews carried into slavery. The American government, indignant at this outrage, sent a small naval force up the Mediterranean, to check these depredations, in 1803, under the command of commodore Preble. This squadron was joined soon after by captain Bainbridge, in the frigate Philadelphia ; this vessel, when chasing a corsair into the port of Tripoli, grounded, and was taken with her crew. The sufferings of these, and other American prisoners, were so great, as to excite the most ardent enterprises

† Spain ceded this country to France, and France to the U. States, for 15,000,000 of dollars. Eleven millions of the purchase money, were to be applied to the demands of the citizens of the United States, by way of indemnification for the spoliations of France upon American commerce.

for their relief ; in one of these, lieutenant Decatur, with a select gang, entered the harbor in boats, retook the Philadelphia, and agreeable to orders, burnt her, February 16, 1804.

Soon after this, William Eaton, who had been consul at Tripoli, and when on his return to America, hearing that Hamet Caramelli, brother of the Bashaw of Tripoli, was then an exile in Egypt, changed his course, and repaired to Egypt in quest of Hamet.†

General Eaton found the object of his pursuit ; engaged him in his interest ; assembled in Egypt a small military force of the country ; put himself at their head, and traversed the desert of Barca, in the autumn and winter of 1804—5. In the spring of 1805, he arrived on the confines of the dominions of Tripoli, with his little army. The reigning Bashaw sent an army to oppose him ; they met near the city of Derne ; a sharp action ensued ; Eaton was victorious ; Derne was taken, and the troops of the Bashaw fled, and returned to Tripoli. Eaton prepared to follow up his victory, and attack the Bashaw in his capital, and close the war by a general conquest. The American fleet prepared to co-operate in the enterprise.

In the mean time, the Bashaw sued for peace, and Mr. Lear, the American consul then at Tripoli, agreeable to powers vested in him, concluded a peace, which made suitable indemnification to the American government, for all spoliations, and set the captives free.

General Eaton disbanded his army and returned to America.‡

On the 11th of June, 1804, vice-president Burr called colonel Hamilton into the field, and killed him in a duel.

In December, 1804, Mr. Jefferson was re-elected president, and George Clinton vice-president ; and in March, 1805, their terms of office commenced.

In February, 1805, an impeachment was instituted in the house of representatives, against Samuel Chase, a judge of the supreme court of the United States. A long and interesting

† Hamet Caramelli was second brother to Jussuf, the then reigning Bashaw, who being the youngest son, had murdered his father, and his eldest brother, and usurped the throne, when Hamet fled for his life, and took refuge in Egypt.

‡ Hamet followed general Eaton to America, soon after, for the purpose of obtaining some compensation for his services, from the government of the United States. The subject was laid before congress, and although it was fully discussed, and warmly supported, was finally rejected.

trial ensued before the senate, agreeable to the constitution ; but the judge was honorably acquitted.

During the first period of Mr. Jefferson's presidential term, the French consul, Bonaparte, was triumphing over the powers in the south of Europe, and now continued his triumphs, as emperor of France and king of Italy, and threatened England with an alarming invasion.

The distressed, the wretched state of Europe, distracted the commerce of America, and involved the government in a labyrinth of difficulties ; all which inflamed the feelings and passions of party, in America, and distracted the government and the nation.

To crown this mad career of politics, colonel Burr commenced a system of intrigue in the western states, with high ambitious views ; and actually assembled a small military force, upon the waters of the river Ohio,† for the purpose of carrying on an expedition against New-Orleans, and thus severing the Union, as was then supposed.

In 1806, colonel Burr descended the Ohio and the Mississippi, with his party ; but by the vigilance of the government, he was arrested in his career, in the Mississippi territory, and conveyed to Richmond, in Virginia, and committed to prison.

In 1807, he was indicted for high treason, before the circuit court at Richmond. where he was tried in due form; and acquitted.—(See Burr's trial, in 2 vols. 8 vo.)

In the midst of this strife of the parties, the British government issued their orders in council, declaring the whole sea-coast, from the Elbe to Brest, in a state of blockade, May 16, 1806. By this order, all vessels trading to this coast, were liable to be seized and condemned.

On the 22d of June, the captain of the British ship *Leopard*, fell in with the American frigate *Chesapeake*, off the capes of Virginia, and demanded of commodore Barron, sundry British seamen, (deserters) supposed to be on board ; but upon the demand being refused, the *Leopard* fired two broadsides into the *Chesapeake*, which killed five men, and wounded twenty. The *Chesapeake* struck her colors. Four deserters were taken from the *Chesapeake*, and the ship was released.

This outrage gave high excitement to the public mind, and called aloud for war ; but the president issued his proclamation, ordering all British armed vessels to quit the waters of

\* At Blannarhasset's island.

the United States ; interdicting at the same time, all intercourse between them and the American citizens.

The British government at once, disavowed the act of the Leopard, as unauthorised, and sent an envoy extraordinary to the United States, to adjust the affair. But the depredations committed by the British upon the American commerce, precluded all possibility of accommodation, and congress proceeded to interdict the importation of sundry articles of British goods, into the United States.

On the 6th of November following, the emperor Napoleon issued his Berlin decree, which declared all the British isles in a state of blockade. This decree was in direct violation of the treaty between France and the United States, as well as of the law of nations.

On the 7th of January, 1807, the British government met this decree by an order in council, declaring "all vessels coasting from one port to another on the coast of France, or that of her allies, liable to seizure and condemnation."

On the 11th of November, Great Britain repeated her orders in council, by way of retaliation upon the French decrees, "declaring all nations at war with Great Britain, and all ports from which the British flag is excluded, to be under the same restrictions in point of trade and navigation, as if the same were in a state of blockade."

To retaliate upon Great Britain for her orders in council, the French emperor issued his Milan decree, declaring "all vessels denationalized, which shall have submitted to a search from a British ship and every vessel a good prize, which shall sail to or from Great Britain, or any of her colonies, or countries occupied by British troops," December 17th, 1807.

On the 22d, congress laid an indefinite embargo.

Thus balanced, America began to feel more immediately, the convulsions of Europe, and to find herself involved in the contest. One grand system of intrigue now pervaded all Christendom, and paved the way for the calamities that followed.

Mr. Jefferson declined a re-election, this year, and the electors gave their suffrages in December, for James Madison, president, and George Clinton, again, vice-president.

On the 4th of March, 1809, Mr. Madison was regularly inducted into office.

At this eventful era, the emperor of France had subverted almost every throne in Christendom, and then shook to its

centre, the republic of America. The insults and injuries the American flag was then suffering, from the decrees of France, and orders in council of England, had kindled a spirit of indignation in congress, that breathed a spirit of war against those powers, which distracted the administration.

On the 1st of March, 1809, congress repealed the embargo law, and passed a law in its place, interdicting all commercial intercourse with Great Britain and France, until they or either of them, should revoke their edicts ; then the president was authorised to renew the intercourse with the revoking power.

On the 18th of April, Mr. Erskine, the British minister, met this overture, by such an arrangement with the American government, as was satisfactory, and the president declared by proclamation, that commercial intercourse would be renewed with Great Britain, accordingly, on the 10th of June. But the British government disavowed this act of their minister, as unauthorised, and things remained as they were.

Mr. Erskine was recalled, and his successor, Mr. Jackson, arrived in America, in September ; but his haughty imperious style, soon rendered him so obnoxious to the executive, as to preclude all further diplomatic intercourse, and he was recalled, June 19.

On the 19th of August, the president renewed by proclamation, the non-intercourse with Great Britain.

The same system of intrigue continued into the year 1810. The emperor of France issued his decree of Rambouillet, declaring all American vessels, with their cargoes. good prizes, if found in any of the ports of France, or of countries occupied by French troops, March 18th, 1810.

This decree excited great warmth of feeling in America, and the nation was ripe for war.

On the 1st of May, congress passed an act, excluding all British and French armed vessels from the waters of the United States ; providing that commercial intercourse might be renewed with that power, which should cease to violate neutral commerce, by its edicts, on or before the 3d of March, 1811, but not with the other.

The emperor Napoleon palliated this blow, by causing his minister to declare to the American minister, at Paris, " that the Berlin and Milan decrees were revoked, and would cease to operate on the 1st of November next," upon certain conditions therein expressed.

Mr. Madison issued his proclamation, announcing the fact, and declaring, that the intercourse with France might be renewed, after the 2d of November following. Thus the parties were balanced through the year.

In May 1811, the affair of the Chesapeake was renewed, by an attack of the British sloop of war, *Little Belt*, upon the American frigate, *President* ; several broadsides were exchanged, and much damage done, but nothing decisive.

The president convened congress, by his proclamation, on the 5th of November, and in his speech, considered the insult as a just cause of war, unless due reparation should be made by Great Britain.

This speech gave serious alarm to congress, and they passed sundry resolutions, preparatory to the national defence. Twenty-five thousand troops were ordered to be raised, and great preparation was made, to enlarge and improve the naval establishment. The whole nation felt the shock, and prepared for the contest.

This spirit continued through the year ; and early in 1812, a resolution was brought forward in congress, to raise 20,000 volunteers, in addition to the former force, for the purpose of wresting the Canadas and Nova Scotia from Great Britain ; but the resolution was lost, 49 to 57.

This plan had for its object, to defeat a conspiracy, then suspected to be carried on between certain leading characters, in the northern or eastern states, and the British government, through the agency of a captain John Henry, to dismember the Union, by a coalition with Canada, and to form what was then termed, the *northern kingdom*.

The president communicated to congress, by message, an intercepted correspondence, between this captain Henry and the governor of Canada, purporting the same ; but upon a close investigation of the subject, no satisfactory evidence appeared, and the alarm subsided.

Congress pursued their hostile preparations, and laid an embargo for ninety days, April 4th, 1812.

In June, the president announced to congress by message, that the aggressions on the part of Great Britain, were sufficient to justify a declaration of war. Among other things, he charged Great Britain with exciting the Indians to acts of hostility on the western frontiers.†

† The British had employed Tecumseh, a noted Indian chief, and his brother, a kind of conjurer, styled the prophet, to excite the Indian

Congress met this recommendation of the president promptly, and passed a bill, announcing a declaration of war against Great Britain, June 17th, 1812 ;† and the president signed the same on the 18th.

The northern states were opposed to the war, and their representatives in congress, formed a minority, that entered their protest against the measure, and their constituents could never be induced to enter cordially into the war.‡

## CHAPTER V.

### WAR WITH GREAT-BRITAIN.

The war opened by an attack upon Upper Canada. General Hull advanced from Detroit, at the head of about 2000

tribes, throughout the western frontier, to commence hostilities; and the Wabash Indians began their ravages. November 7th, 1811; but they were defeated in a severe and bloody action with general Harrison, governor of Indiana Territory, at Tippecanoe, and sued for peace. †The emperor Napoleon had at this time, assembled an army in Poland, of 4 to 600,000 men, in readiness to commence the Russian expedition.

‡The following summary will shew the hostile orders, acts, and decrees of the contending parties.

British orders in council for the blockade of Europe, from the Elbe to Brest, May 16, 1806.--page 340.

Emperor Napoleon's Berlin decree, to counteract this order, November 6, 1807.---page 341.

British orders in council to intercept the coasting trade of France, January 7, 1807.---page 341.

Orders in council, declaring the ports of all nations, from which the British flag is excluded, to be in a state of blockade, November 11, 1807.---page 341.

Milan decree, December 17, 1807.---page 341.

American embargo, December 22, 1807.--page 341.

Nonintercourse with Great Britain and France, March 1, 1809,---page 342.

American nonintercourse with Great Britain, June 19, 1809.---page 342.

French Rambouillet decree, March 18, 1810.---page 342.

American conditional commercial act, May 1, 1810.---page 342.

President's proclamation, November 2, 1810.---page 343.

American embargo, April 4, 1812.---page 343.

Declaration of war against Great Britain, June 18, 1812.--page 344.



men, into the British dominions, and issued his proclamation, with full expectations, that the people would make a common cause with the United States ; rally round his standard, and engage in the conquest of Lower Canada ; but to his great disappointment and mortification, he was met by general Brock, at the head of a superior British army, and constrained to make a hasty retreat back to Detroit, August 8th, 1812.

General Brock pursued general Hull to the walls of Detroit, after having gained a signal victory at the river Raisin ; and others at Brown's Town, and at Maguaga, August 9.

On the 15th. general Brock summoned the fortress of Detroit, in due form, and on the 16th, it was surrendered, together with the adjacent country, without further resistance, and the garrison marched out prisoners of war.

The surrendry of this fortress, in this dastardly manner, caused great excitement throughout the nation, which called for satisfaction. General Hull was accused of treachery and cowardice, and tried by a court martial, and condemned to be shot. The sentence was approved by the president ; but the punishment was remitted, in consideration of his advanced age, and former services. General Hull was at the same time, sentenced by the president, with a total disability for all further public service.

During these movements on the land, the naval force of the United States, prepared to retrieve the honor of their country, by their gallant exploits on the water.

On the 17th of July, off Egg-Harbor, the Constitution, capt. Hull, was chased by a British squadron, consisting of the ship of the line Africa, and frigates Shannon, Guerriere, Belvidera, and Æolus. The chase continued under light breezes, for three days ; but the Constitution made her escape, by her superior nautical skill, and by the novel expedient of kedging, in times of calm, and returned to port.

Commodore Rodgers put to sea from New-York, in the President, with a small squadron, consisting of the President, United States, Congress, Hornet, and Argus, early in June, to intercept the homeward bound West-India fleet. Commodore Rodgers fell in with, and attempted to engage, the British frigate Belvidera ; but had the misfortune to receive a severe wound, and lose at the same time, nineteen men in the chase, killed and wounded, by the bursting of one of his guns.

Commodore Rodgers next crossed over to the European

coast, where he cruised with success, three months, and then returned to Boston.

Captain Porter, in the *Essex*, and captain Hull, in the *Constitution*, put to sea in July. On the 19th of August, the *Constitution* fell in with his Britannic majesty's frigate, the *Gurriere*, captain Dacres; an action commenced with desperate valor, and in fifteen minutes, the *Gurriere* struck her colors, a complete wreck; with the loss of fifteen killed and sixty wounded; captain Dacres was among the latter. The *Constitution* had seven killed and seven wounded. Captain Hull burnt the prize at sea.

Captain Porter pursued his course, and cut out a brig from a convoy, on the coast of Brazil, and took out of her 14,000 dollars in cash, and 150 soldiers. He next fell in with, and captured the sloop of war *Alert*, in eight minutes, and then continued his cruise, August 17th.

Commodore Rodgers put to sea again, in October, with his little squadron; fell in with, and captured, the British packet *Swallow*, with 200,000 dollars in specie, on board. The squadron returned to Boston, after a successful cruise.

On the 18th of October, captain Jones, in the United States sloop of war *Wasp*, of 16 guns, fell in with, and captured, his Britannic majesty's sloop of war *Frolic*, of 18 guns, captain Vinyates, after a sharp and desperate action of forty-three minutes. The *Frolic* lost thirty killed and fifty wounded; the *Wasp* five killed and five wounded.

His Britannic majesty's ship of war *Poicters*, of 74 guns, fell in with, and captured the *Wasp* and her prize, soon after the action.

Commodore Decatur, in the frigate *United States*, of 44 guns, on the 25th of October, off the Western Isles, fell in with and captured, the British frigate *Macedonian*, of 49 guns, and 300 men, J. S. Carden commander, after an action of one hour and thirty minutes. The *Macedonian* lost thirty-six killed and sixty-eight wounded. The *United States*, five killed and seven wounded.

In October, commodore Bainbrige, in the frigate *Constitution*, and captain Lawrence, in the sloop of war *Hornet*, sailed from New-York, to join captain Porter, in the *Essex*, which sailed at the same time from Delaware bay, in order to form a cruising squadron, against the British whale fisheries in the south seas, or western ocean; but the junction failed, and captain Porter proceeded alone on his cruise.

On the 29th of December, the United States frigate

stitution, 44 guns, commodore Bainbridge, fell in with, and captured, his Britannic majesty's frigate Java, of 44 guns, captain Lambert, off the coast of Brazil, after an action of fifty minutes. The Java lost 69 killed and 101 wounded. The Constitution 9 killed and twenty-five wounded.

Such was the crippled state of the Java, that it was impossible to take her into port, and she was accordingly dismantled and blown up at sea the next day. The constitution then stood in for St. Salvador, and off that port fell in with the Hornet, then blockading the British frigate Bonne Citoyenne. After discharging his prisoners in that port, commodore Bainbridge received the public thanks of the governor, with an elegant sword, in testimony of the high sense he entertained of his valor, humanity and benevolence ; he then set sail for the United States, leaving the Bonne Citoyenne closely blockaded by the Hornet.

The Hornet challenged the Bonne Citoyenne to naval combat, but she declined, and lay secure, until released by the British ship of war Montague, January 4th, 1813.

These signal victories, in such rapid succession, were achieved with a chivalrous valor, that bordered on desperation, and displayed such nautical skill, and naval tactics, as never had been excelled in the annals of naval war. The nation felt the honor of their flag, and exulted in these naval triumphs. Many of the large cities greeted these naval heroes, when they returned to port, with distinguished attention and applause, by their public entertainments, and theatrical exhibitions ; and by presenting them with honorary swords, rich services of plate, &c. ; congress bestowed on them honorable pecuniary rewards, in consideration for such prizes as were lost, or destroyed at sea, and the executive rewarded their valor by appropriate promotions.

These feats of valor were not confined to the armed ships of the nation, but extended to the private armed vessels, and privateers.

On the 3d of August, the privateer Atlass, captain Moffat, fell in with two British armed vessels, and captured both, after a severe action ; destroyed one at sea, and brought the other into port.

The Dolphin, from Salem, captain Endicot, was also very successful in her cruises, and captured fifteen sail of British merchantmen, early in the war. The Dolphin was not only noted for daring intrepidity and valor, but for the particular

humanity, and noble generosity displayed towards the captured. These losses appeared to be particularly distressing to individuals on board their prizes ; both officers and seamen, with an unprecedented unanimity, and cheerfulness, held their property sacred, and when they arrived in port, restored it to its former owners.

Commodore Barney, who had been a distinguished naval officer in the war of the revolution, put to sea, from Baltimore, in the armed vessel *Rossie*, and made several captures from the enemy, of rich and valuable merchantmen. When congress met in November, the public prints had announced the capture of three of the finest frigates in the British navy, and about 250 other vessels, of all descriptions, with more than 3000 prisoners. More than fifty of these vessels, were armed, and their whole number of guns was about 275. Before the first of January 1813, the frigate *Java*, 44 guns, was added to the list. The losses on the part of the Americans at this time, was comparatively small.

These triumphs upon the ocean gave a spirit of high exultation to congress and the nation ; but the enemy felt themselves wounded in the tenderest point, their honor, when they saw and felt the naval superiority of the flag of the United States, over the banner of the once mistress of the ocean.

Great Britain could boast, that she had not lost a frigate, in equal combat, for more than thirty years before.

Formidable preparations were now in forwardness, against Canada. One army was assembled under the command of general Harrison, governor of Indiana, called the north-western army. Another under the command of general Stephen Van Rensselaer, at Lewistown, called the army of the centre ; and another under the command of general Dearborn, at Plattsburg, called the army of the north.

In the course of the general operations against Canada, this autumn, the Americans surprised and took two valuable fur ships, upon lake Erie, and brought off one, valued at 100,000 dollars. This successful enterprise, kindled fresh ardor in the American troops, and they pressed general Van Rensselaer to lead them against the enemy. The general gratified their wishes, and on the 12th of October, detached about 1000 men, under the command of colonel Solomon Van Rensselaer, who crossed over the river Niagara, and effected a landing upon the Canada shore, at Queenstown. Colonel Van Rensselaer was severely wounded upon his first

landing, but kept the field at the head of his brave troops, where he was soon joined by colonel Scott, with his artillery, and the British retired before the victors. The troops at Buffalo and Lewistown, were put in motion at the same time, to be in readiness to cross over and support the action.

Colonel Van Rensselaer was now reinforced, with regulars and militia, and general Brock advanced to the combat, with a strong reinforcement of regulars and Indians, and the battle became fierce and bloody ; but the British recoiled. Stung with chagrin and mortification, general Brock rallied his troops to the charge ; but he fell, mortally wounded, in the heat of the action, and his troops again recoiled.

General Van Rensselaer, at this critical moment, crossed over to secure the victory ; but the enemy were again reinforced, and returned to the charge, and were again repulsed.

At this eventful moment, when the American troops were exhausted with the fatigues of the day, and anxiously expecting the volunteers to cross over, and secure the victory they had gained, general Van Rensselaer, impatient of their delay, crossed over in person, to lead on the reserve ; but to his inexpressible disappointment and mortification, they refused to follow, upon *constitutional grounds*.

During this parley, the British were again reinforced, and again rallied to the combat, to revenge the death of their brave general Brock, and to wipe off the disgrace of the day. The conflict was renewed, and raged, with such violence, that the Americans were overpowered ; about sixty were killed, 100 wounded, and 1000 taken prisoners. Had the volunteers followed their general, the victory of the day would, most probably, have been complete, and the whole aspect of the campaign changed.

General Van Rensselaer soon after, retired from the command, and was succeeded by general Smyth.

General Smyth reconnoitered the position of the enemy, and made great preparations to cross over, and renew the combat, on the shores of Canada. He accordingly issued a proclamation, calling for volunteers to join in the enterprise, and actually assembled his troops upon a given day, (November 28th) to embark upon the expedition against the enemy. The van of the army crossed over, and finding the enemy ready to receive them, they retired from the fire of their batteries, and returned ; leaving a detachment of about thirty men, who had effected a landing, to fall into their hands.

Such was the resentment of the officers and troops generally, at this dastardly failure, that general Smyth was constrained to renew the attempt ; and general Porter, of the New-York volunteers, took the command of the van—December 4th. The troops were generally embarked and ready for the onset ; but general Smyth, at this interesting moment, when all hearts were alive to the object before them, abandoned the enterprise for the season, and the troops retired into winter quarters.

Such was the mortification and resentment of the army, that general Smyth thought it necessary to challenge general Porter, to vindicate his courage, and then to withdraw from the command.

Previous to these operations on the northern frontier, the Indians committed such depredations and murders, on the north-western frontiers, as deeply wounded the pride, and excited the resentment of the states of Kentucky and Ohio. They roused to the contest, as volunteers, and rallied round the standard of general Harrison, in such numbers, that he was constrained to dismiss several whole regiments, as supernumeraries.

General Harrison, in September, sent several detachments of those volunteers, into the Indian country, to relieve such posts as were in immediate danger, from savage war, and desperate attacks ; particularly fort Harrison, upon the Wabash, which captain Taylor was then defending with desperate valor.

In those expeditions, generals Hopkins and Tupper, with colonels Campbell and Russell, distinguished themselves, in giving relief and security to the forts and frontier, generally.

Soon after these movements, general Winchester detached a strong party, from fort Winchester, under the command of colonel Lewis, to give assistance to the village of Frenchtown, upon the river Raisin. Col. Lewis, with his 500 Kentucky volunteers and regulars, reached the Raisin, on the 18th of January, 1813 ; and by a bold and decisive movement, attacked, routed and dispersed the enemy.

General Harrison, having arrived at fort Winchester, at this time, sent forward general Winchester, at the head of 200 men, to support his detachment, and take the command. He arrived safe, and encamped for the night, contiguous to the fortified camp of colonel Lewis ; but the enemy collected his forces, and supported by a strong reinforcement, on the night

of the 22d, commenced a desperate attack upon the camp of general Winchester, killed and took the whole party, together with the general and colonel Lewis. This opened the way for an attack upon the fortified camp ; but a firm resistance, and desperate conflict ensued, until about 11 o'clock, then a parley commenced. The enemy proffered an honorable capitulation, if the party would surrender prisoners of war ; but threatened savage vengeance if they refused. His arts prevailed ; the whole detachment laid down their arms, and submitted as prisoners of war.

General Proctor violated his engagements, and gave up the prisoners to indiscriminate massacre, as well as cruel savage torture ; and the wounded, the next day, to the number of sixty, were all consumed in the general conflagration of the village.

To attempt to paint the horrors of this scene, would exceed the powers of my pen ; language would fail ; humanity stand appalled, and even Britannia herself would blush at the deed.

General Harrison, upon the first intelligence of this defeat, constructed hastily, a stockade, upon the Miami of the lake, for the protection of his troops, which he called fort Meigs.†

General Proctor followed up his victory ; advanced to meet general Harrison, and invested him in fort Meigs. He commenced his attacks upon this fort, with great fury, which continued for several days, until general Clay and colonel Dudley advanced for the relief of the fort, and put the enemy to flight. Colonel Dudley, in his unguarded pursuit of the enemy, fell into an ambush, and suffered severely, in the loss of his whole party.

General Clay, in co-operation with the garrison, succeeded in raising the siege, and dispersing the enemy ; and thus fort Meigs was relieved, after a siege of thirteen days.

These gloomy and distressing scenes of the forest, served as so many shades to the brilliant scenes on the ocean, where the American flag continued to wave victorious.

On the 24th of February, 1813, captain Lawrence, in the *Hornet*, of sixteen guns, fell in with, and captured his Britannic majesty's brig *Peacock*, of eighteen guns, after an action of fifteen minutes. The *Peacock* went down, at the close of the action, with her brave captain Peake, and the rest of her kil-

† In honor of the then governor of the state of Ohio.

led ; but the thirty-three wounded, were all saved. The *Hornet* had one killed, four wounded, and lost three sunk in the prize.

In April, captain Lawrence returned to port, and was promoted to the command of the *Chesapeake*, then lying at Boston, and ready for sea.

The British frigate *Shannon*, (captain Broke) with the *Tenedos* in company, appeared off the harbor of Boston, and invited the *Chesapeake* to the contest. Captain Lawrence accepted the invitation, promptly, and put to sea—June 1st. The *Shannon* manœuvred for the combat, and the ships were soon in action, and along side. A short, but desperate conflict ensued ; captain Lawrence was wounded early in the action ; but kept his station, until the fatal ball pierced his body, and he was carried below. He then exclaimed, “ *Don’t give up the ship.*”

Captain Broke seized the favorable moment ; boarded the *Chesapeake* and carried her, after all her officers were either killed or wounded ; and seventy of her crew were killed and eighty wounded. The *Shannon* had twenty-three killed, and fifty-six wounded.

The *Shannon* sailed for Halifax, with her prize, where captain Lawrence and lieutenant Ludlow, were honorably interred, with the honors of war.†

About the same time, the United States brig *Argus*, captain Allen, sailed for France, with the American minister, Mr. Crawford, and from thence on a cruise in the British channel, where her successes led the British government to despatch several frigates to check her career. The *Argus* fell in with one of those frigates, the *Pelican*, and after a sharp action of forty-seven minutes, was captured and carried into port.—Captain Allen fell, mortally wounded, at the first broadside ; his lieutenant, soon after, and his wheel being shot away, the brig became a wreck ; yet she maintained a brave and obstinate conflict, until all resistance became ineffectual, then surrendered—August 14th, 1813. The loss upon both sides, was nearly equal.

In the month of August, the skirmishing commenced upon lake Ontario, with various success. The Creek and Choctaw Indians, began their successful ravages. The British fleet,

† The remains of captain Lawrence were afterwards removed to New-York, and interred with great solemnity.



under the command of sir J. B. Warren, blockaded the ports south of the Chesapeake bay.

On the 5th of September, the United States brig *Enterprise*, of sixteen guns, captain Burrows, fell in with, and captured his Britannic majesty's brig *Boxer*, of eighteen guns, captain Blythe, after an action of forty-five minutes. The *Enterprise* lost nine, the *Boxer* forty-five ; both captains fell in the action.

On the 26th, commodore Rodgers arrived in port, after a long cruise. He explored the Atlantic, circumnavigated the British isles, made eleven captures in his cruise, and on his return, captured the *Highflyer*, one of the tenders of sir J. B. Warren's fleet, off the American coast.

On the morning of April 29th, 1814, the United States sloop of war *Peacock*, fell in with his Britannic majesty's brig *Epervier*, of eighteen guns, and 128 men, captain Wales, and captured her, after an action of forty-five minutes, and took from her 120,000 dollars. The *Epervier* lost in the action, eight killed, and fifteen wounded. The *Peacock* had none killed, and only two wounded.

When the *Epervier* struck, she had five feet water in her hold, forty-five shot in her hull, and her spars and rigging very much wounded, and shot away ; but the damages of the *Peacock* were repaired, and she was ready for action again, in fifteen minutes.

On the 23th of June, 1814, the United States sloop of war *Wasp*, of sixteen guns, captain Jones, fell in with, and captured his Britannic majesty's sloop of war *Reindeer*, of eighteen guns, and a shifting twelve pound cannonade, and 118 men, commanded by William Manners esq. after an action of nineteen minutes. The *Wasp* lost five killed, and twenty-one wounded. The *Reindeer* lost her captain, and twenty four other officers and seamen ; and was so crippled in her hull, spars and rigging, as to be unmanagable, and was burnt at sea.

On the 30th and 31st of August, 1814, the *Wasp* fell in with his Britannic majesty's brigs *Lettice*, Henry Cockburn, master, and *Bon Accord*, Adam Duro, master, and after short actions captured both. The *Wasp* on the next day, succeeded in cutting out of the convoy, the British Brig *mary*, John D. Allen, master, laden with brass and iron ordnance, and military stores ; and after removing the prisoners, burnt her at sea.

On or about the 1st of September, 1814, the *Wasp* fell in

with his Brittanic majesty's sloop of war Avon, supposed eighteen guns, captain Arbuthnot, and after a desperate action of nearly two hours, the Avon struck her colors, a complete wreck, and soon after went down. Her crew were saved by the British brig Castilian, which was also in company with the Avon.

These captures were the result of desperate conflicts. Many of these prizes were stripped of every spar ; and several so cut to pieces as to become unmanageable, and were burnt at sea. Others sunk in the action, or immediately after.

In December, Mr. Madison was re-elected president, and Mr. Gerry was elected vice-president, in the place of George Clinton, deceased.

---

## CHAPTER VI.

BRITISH WAR CONTINUED—GENERAL OPERATIONS UPON THE SEA-BOARD—AGAINST CANADA, LOUISIANA, &c.—PEACE.

Early in the spring of 1813, a British squadron entered the Delaware bay, under the command of admiral Beresford, and commenced their operations on the American sea-board, and Lewistown suffered severely. Admiral Cockburn, at the same time, with his squadron, entered the Chesapeake, where he committed the most cruel ravages ; Frenchtown, Havre-de-Grace, Frederickstown, Georgetown and Norfolk, all felt the ruthless hand of the marauders, and several of those places were wholly destroyed.

Admiral Warren made an unsuccessful attack upon Craney Island—June 24, (near Norfolk.) The next day the enemy made a descent upon Hampton, and gave it up to indiscriminate plunder, licentiousness, and brutality ; such brutality as was never alleged against a savage, and such as would make a *savage blush*.

During these operations, three American frigates, which had been blockaded in the port of N. York, made their escape through the sound, and were chased into the port of New-London, where they were blockaded through the remainder of the war.

The enemy attempted to bombard Stonington, about this

time ; but the borough was so valiantly defended, that it suffered very little damage.

General Dearborn, who had succeeded general Smyth, in the command of the northern army, commenced his operations early in the spring of 1813, to carry the war into Canada. He detached general Pike with 2000 men, to make a descent upon York, and seize on the naval and military stores, as well as the vessels on the stocks.

General Pike embarked his troops on the 25th of April, crossed over the lake, and executed his commission promptly. The enemy were driven from their redoubts, and gen. Pike had halted his troops to give them a moment's repose, when he was astonished by the explosion of a terrible magazine, which overwhelmed his troops with a shower of stones, timber, &c. that killed and wounded more than 200 men. The indignation of the soldiers soon recovered them from their surprise, and rallied them again to the charge. Their brave general animated their courage, as he lay expiring under a severe contusion from the awful explosion, with this solemn charge : *" Revenge the death of your general "*

Colonel Pease led on the troops to the conquest of York, without further opposition, and the town surrendered by capitulation.

The enemy lost about 750 men in killed, wounded, and prisoners, and the American loss in killed and wounded, did not exceed 300.

It is recorded of York, *" that a human skull was found in the hall of the assembly, placed over the mace of the speaker."*

General Dearborn secured the stores, prisoners, &c. and abandoned the place.

On the 22d of May, the general embarked his army and proceeded against the British forts on the Niagara, under cover of commodore Chauncey's fleet. General Lewis led on the troops to victory and conquest, during the illness of general Dearborn. The British forts, and more than 500 Canada militia, surrendered prisoners of war. The Americans lost 39 killed and 111 wounded. The next day the British blew up fort Erie, and all remaining fortifications, and returned to the head of Burlington bay.

On the 1st of June, generals Chandler and Vinder were detached with a force of 2600 men, to destroy the British force. They advanced to Stony Creek, to prepare for the attack ; but the enemy anticipated their views ; commenced

a furious attack upon their camp, in dead of night, and after a severe conflict; carried their two generals into captivity.

The Americans lost in this action, 16 killed, 38 wounded, and 100 missing, including their two generals.

The British loss in killed and wounded could never be correctly ascertained, but was supposed to be much greater, as the Americans took 100 prisoners.

In this action, the Americans were completely surprised; the British rushed to close combat, at the point of the bayonet, and the parties were commixed, in desperate conflict, under cover of thick darkness. The two generals, with undaunted bravery, in attempting to rally and form their troops, were surprised and taken by the enemy.

Both parties withdrew from the field, and both claimed the victory.

Pending these operations, and during the absence of commodore Chauncey, commodore Yeo appeared with his fleet, before Sacket's Harbor, and landed about 1200 men, under the command of sir George Prevost. The place was in a defenceless situation, and would have fallen an easy conquest: but general Brown rallied the neighboring militia, and fell upon the enemy with such fury as put him to flight, and compelled him to abandon the enterprise, and retire to Canada. Such was the panic excited by this invasion, that the Americans destroyed by fire, a great quantity of public stores, that were not exposed to the depredations of the enemy.

The Six Nations now joined the Americans in the war.

General Lewis, who had succeeded to the command, upon the resignation of general Dearborn, detached colonel Boerstler with 500 men, to dislodge the British at La Louvre House: (so called) but unfortunately, he fell into an Indian ambuscade, and was taken with all his party.

General Boyd and colonel Miller, about this time, surprised and took fort George, after a sharp and severe conflict.

General Proctor, at the head of a strong party of regulars, Canadians and Indians, attempted to surprise fort Meigs, on the Miami, and Stephenson, on the Sandusky; both of which failed; but at the latter, the enemy met with signal defeat and disgrace.

The general movements for the reduction of Canada, were now completed; the fleets on lakes Erie and Ontario, were about equal, and ready for action. The American forces un-

der general Harrison, moved towards Detroit. An action commenced at the same time, on lake Erie, between the American fleet, under the command of commodore Perry, and the British fleet, under the command of commodore Barclay, September 10, 1813.

The fleets were nearly equal.† Commodore Barclay, an old, experienced officer, in the school of Nelson, had seen much service. Commodore Perry was a young officer, and without experience.

The conflict commenced on the part of the enemy, about noon; the action soon became general and desperate. Commodore Perry's ship, (Lawrence) being disabled, he changed his flag on board the Niagara, in an open boat, in the heat of the action, and at once bore down upon the enemy; broke through their line, and the fleets were closely engaged. The action was short and terrible. The whole British squadron surrendered to commodore Perry.

The commodore announced this victory to general Harrison, in the following style :

“ Dear general—We have met the enemy, and they are ours. Two ships, two brigs, and one sloop.

Yours with respect and esteem,

O. H. PERRY.

September, 10th, 1813.”

The British immediately evacuated Detroit; general Harrison advanced, took possession, and pursued into Canada, September 28th. The illustrious Perry joined him, and became his companion in arms.

On the 5th of October, general Harrison gained a complete victory over general Proctor, and captured and destroyed his whole army.

Commodore Chauncey, at the same time, took and destroyed seven sail of the British squadron on lake Ontario.‡

On the 4th of November, overtures for peace arrived from England, and at the same time, general Wilkinson took the

† The British force consisted of five vessels and 63 guns. The American force of nine vessels and 54 guns.

‡ Such had been the naval competition on lake Ontario, that several ships were constructed by both parties, of from 20 to 60 guns, at Sacket's Harbor and Kingston; and at the close of the war, the British had one ship on the stocks, of about 100 guns, at Kingston, and the Americans had two ships of the largest class, on the stocks, at Sacket's Harbor. All which were nearly ready for sea.

command of the northern army ; moved his whole force to Sacket's Harbor, and from thence down the St. Lawrence, to Ogdensburg, where he appointed an interview with general Hampton, at St. Regis, which failed.

During these movements, general McClure evacuated fort George ; set fire to the village of Newark, and retired out of Canada.

General Harrison had followed up his victory, and proceeded down to join general Wilkinson ; but his movements were so hasty, that he left the whole Niagara frontier uncovered. The enemy availed himself of this ; crossed over, and burnt the village of Buffalo, with several others, to revenge the destruction of Newark ; took fort Niagara, and put the garrison to the sword.

These movements closed the campaign of the north, and both armies went into winter quarters.

At this time, general Jackson took revenge on the Creek Indians, for their predatory ravages ; and in the ensuing spring, they were completely humbled.

The United States frigate Essex, captain Porter, which had sailed early in the war, cruised with great success, in the Pacific ocean, off the coast of Peru and Chili, and captured and destroyed the British whale ships in those seas. Captain Porter, at the close of his cruise, repaired to the bay of Valparaizo, to obtain supplies, where he was overtaken and blockaded by a superior British force, the Phœbe and Cherub, and was captured, after an action of two hours and thirty minutes, March 28th, 1814.

Messrs. Gallatin and Bayard had been appointed commissioners, and sent out to Petersburg, (Russia) in April, to meet such commissioners as the British court might send, and in union with Mr. Adams, then minister resident of the U. States, at Petersburg, enter upon negotiations for peace, under the mediation of the emperor Alexander, as has been noticed.

Great Britain declined this overture ; but appointed lord Gambier, Henry Golbourn and William Adams, to meet the American commissioners at Gottenburg.

The president of the United States appointed J. Russell and H. Clay, to unite with the American commissioners named in April, and the city of Ghent was agreed upon as the place of negociation, January, 1814. In August, the whole of the above named commissioners assembled at Ghent, and entered upon the business of their appointment.

On the 3d of June, operations re-commenced upon the northern frontier. General Izard had now succeeded generals Wilkinson and Hampton, and general Brown took the command upon the Niagara station.

On the 3d of July, general Brown commenced operations, by crossing over and surprising fort Erie, which fell an easy conquest, and the next day he advanced to the plains of Chippewa, where he engaged the enemy, and gained a signal victory.† This victory gave great eclat to the American arms, and diffused a general joy throughout the nation.

General Brown returned to Queenstown, and from thence to the plains of Chippewa, to await the enemy, who was advancing with a strong re-inforcement, under general Drummond.

General Brown, supported by general Scott, met the enemy at Bridgewater, commanded by generals Drummond and Riall ; a desperate action commenced, and continued, with various successes, until midnight. The Americans carried the field, and the British retired. Generals Brown and Scott were both wounded in this action, and general Ripley led back the army, the next day, to fort Erie.

The loss of the British in this action, was estimated at 860 killed and wounded ; and the loss of the Americans at about the same number. The whole force engaged, was 4000 on the part of the British, and 3000 on the part of the Americans. Few actions have been recorded more bloody than this, for its numbers engaged.

General Drummond advanced and invested the American army in fort Erie ; but finding an obstinate resistance, he attempted to carry it by storm, Aug. 15th. Here the scenes of Chippewa and Bridgewater were renewed. The enemy were repulsed with great loss.

General Brown had now recovered of his wounds and succeeded to the command, Sept. 2d.

General Drummond continued his operations before fort Erie ; strengthened his works, and pushed the siege.

On the 17th, general Brown executed a gallant sortie, by performing a circuitous march, and surprised the enemy upon the flank of his trenches ; charged him in column, and carried his works with a dreadful carnage. More than 800 men

† The Americans lost 60 killed and 243 wounded. The British lost 133 killed and 329 wounded.

fell, on the side of the enemy, and the Americans lost 300. General Drummond raised the siege and retired to Chippewa.

During these operations, general Izard arrived with a reinforcement from Plattsburg, of 400 men, to support the garrison at Erie ; but finding the garrison relieved by the retreat of the enemy, he ordered the fort to be destroyed, and retired into winter quarters at Buffalo.

On the 11th of September, (soon after the departure of general Izard) the town of Plattsburg was assaulted by a land force, under the command of general Prevost, and a naval force, under the command of commodore Downie. The town was defended by general McComb, in the absence of general Izard, and the harbor, by a squadron, under the command of commodore Macdonough. The merits of this action, so glorious to the American navy, may be seen by the following official report of commodore Macdonough.†

“ United States ship Saratoga, off }  
Plattsburg, Sept. 11, 1814. }

Sir—The Almighty has been pleased to grant us a signal victory on lake Champlain, in the capture of one frigate, one brig, and two sloops of war.

I have the honor to be most respectfully,

Sir, your most obedient servant,

T. MACDONOUGH.

Hon. Wm. Jones, secretary of the navy.”

General Prevost commenced a formidable attack at the same time, upon the town of Plattsburg ; but he was repulsed with such spirit, as to be constrained to retire, with the loss of a great part of his ammunition, baggage, and wounded. The Americans pursued, and he returned into Canada.

This action closed the campaign in the north, and the troops went into winter quarters.

In the spring of 1814, commodore Barney took the command of a small flotilla of gunboats, to protect the inlets and small rivers, that fall into the Chesapeake bay. About the 1st of June, the enemy entered the Chesapeake bay, and renewed their ravages, with greater severity than they had done the last year. Sharp and frequent rencounters took place, upon the water and upon the land ; but the enemy suc-

† The British naval force consisted of 95 guns and 1050 men. The American force of 96 guns and 825 men. The loss of the British to that of the Americans, was 84 to 52 killed, and 110 to 98 wounded.



ceeded in laying waste the country, and carrying off the negroes, through the months of June and July.

About the middle of August, the British entered the Chesapeake, with a fleet of about 60 sail, including transports, under admiral Cockburn, and landed about 6000 men at Benedict,<sup>†</sup> on the Patuxent, under the command of general Ross.

On the 22d, general Ross reached the Wood-yard, (so called) twelve miles from Washington, where commodore Barney caused a large flotilla of gun-boats to be destroyed, to prevent their falling into the hands of the enemy.

On the 23d, general Ross reached Bladensburg, six miles from Washington, where he dispersed the militia, after a short resistance, and advanced to the city. Commodore Barney had assembled a small force in defence of the capital, with several eighteen pounders, and made a stand ; but he was soon overpowered by numbers, wounded and taken prisoner, and the capital fell into the hands of the enemy. The navy yard was destroyed.

Here stands recorded one more display of British magnanimity. *By order of general Ross, the capitol, the president's house, and executive offices were burnt.*

The enemy retired on the night of the 25th, by rapid marches ; regained their ships and embarked.

A detachment from this fleet visited Alexandria , plundered the city, and carried off a great quantity of flour, &c.

On the 11th of September, a large detachment of this fleet appeared at the mouth of the Petapsco, twelve miles from the city of Baltimore. A part of this fleet moved up to the north point, and landed about 7000 men, under the command of major-general Ross. The next day, general Ross moved forward to enter the city ; a sharp action commenced, and the Americans were constrained to retire within their lines. Major-general Ross fell among the slain, and the command devolved upon colonel Brook, who pushed the attack ; but the Americans shewed so firm a front, that he abandoned the enterprise, drew off his troops, and hastily retired.

The next day, the enemy commenced a serious attack from his fleet, upon fort McHenry, and a terrible cannonade ensued, that continued into the night. Admiral Cockburn landed about 2000 men, with a view of surprising the city ; but the Americans were in force, and the British were again compelled to abandon the enterprise and retire hastily, and

<sup>†</sup> Forty miles from the city of Washington.

with loss, on board their fleet. The next day the whole fleet moved down the bay.†

About the same time, the British threatened the seaports of New England ; took possession of Castine and Eastport, in Maine, and kept up a general alarm along the coast.

The governor of Massachusetts convened a special session of the general court, upon the occasion ; and early in October, a special committee was appointed, to take into consideration that part of the speech of his excellency governor Strong, which related to national defence, &c. and report. On the 8th, this committee made the following report, viz. “ that ten thousand men be raised for the defence of the sea-board, that a number of delegates be appointed to meet such delegates in convention, as may be appointed by other states, to confer on the subject of their public grievances ; upon the best means of preserving their resources, and the defence against the enemy ; and to devise and suggest for adoption, by those respective states, such measures as they may deem expedient ; and also to take measures, if they think proper, for procuring a convention of delegates from all the United States, in order to revise the constitution thereof,” &c.

These resolutions were adopted, and forwarded to the several New-England states, for their consideration. Massachusetts, Connecticut and Rhode Island, chose their delegates accordingly ; but New Hampshire and Vermont declined.

About the middle of December, these delegates assembled in convention, at Hartford, (Connecticut.) On the 4th of January, 1815, they summarily thus reported : “ That the constitution be altered, so that taxation and representation be in direct proportion to the number of free persons ; that no new state be admitted into the Union, without the concurrence of two-thirds of both houses of congress ; that no embargo be laid for more than sixty days ; that commercial intercourse shall not be interdicted, nor war declared, without the concurrence of two-thirds of both houses of congress ; that no person hereafter naturalized, shall be eligible as senator or representative ; that no president shall be twice elected, nor a president chosen twice from the same state, in succession,” &c.

This convention then resolved, “ that another convention be called, to carry into effect the doings of this convention,

† The loss of the parties was about equal ; between two and three hundred each, killed, wounded and missing.

&c. in case the government of the United States refuse permission to the New England States, to assume the defence of their territory ; holding a reasonable proportion of the public taxes to defray the necessary expense, until peace shall take place, or congress assume their just and proper defence," &c.

Peace soon after took place, and the doings of this convention became null and void.†

On the 15th of September, 1814, a small British squadron appeared before fort Bowyer, at Mobile Point, to co-operate with a land force of 100 marines, and 400 Indians, in reducing the fortress ; but such was the firmness of captain Lawrence, that with a garrison of 120 men, he resisted the repeated attacks of the enemy, and obliged him to retire with loss, and abandon the enterprise.

On the 5th of November, general Jackson marched to Pensacola, at the head of a force of about 3000 men, to chastise the English and Spaniards, who had kindled and kept alive, the war with the Seminole Indians. After destroying their forts and dispersing the British, he returned to Mobile.

The marauders of the Chesapeake, when they abandoned the enterprise against Baltimore, retired to Bermuda, where they prepared a formidable armament, and sailed for New-Orleans, with a fleet of sixty sail, besides transports and barges.

Upon the first intelligence of this movement, general Jackson marched with his whole force, to the defence of this key of the western country. On the 2d of December, he reached New Orleans, and hastened his preparations to receive the enemy. The citizens, as well as the slaves, united with the troops in the arduous labors of constructing works of defence, and the general participated in all their toils.

On the 12th of December, the fleet of the enemy appeared in the bay of St. Louis, and the American flotilla retired up the river to a more favorable position. On the 14th, the enemy commenced an attack upon the flotilla, and captured the whole.

General Jackson next ordered martial law to be proclaimed, and the whole militia to appear on duty.

† Although the resolutions for amending the constitution, were submitted to the consideration of the legislatures of the several states, they were almost universally rejected.

The legislature made the necessary appropriations, and laid an embargo on all vessels then in port.

On the 21st, general Carrol arrived and joined general Jackson, with 4000 brave Tennesseans, (partially armed) and the Barratarians arrived at the same time, to join in the general defence.

General Jackson next ordered all the canals leading to the lake, to be closed; but the enemy, about 12,000 strong, reached the high banks of the river, on the 28th, notwithstanding this precaution, where they halted to take refreshment, before they entered the city, then full in their view.

General Jackson assembled his whole force, of about 6000 men, and marched down to meet the enemy; but did not reach them before dark. After reconnoitering their position, he commenced an attack, which surprised the British, and threw them into disorder; but they soon rallied to the combat, and a sharp rencounter ensued. A thick fog arose, that rendered it necessary for general Jackson to withdraw his troops, and he retired about two miles up the river, and took his stand at his fortified position.†

At the dawn of day, the British army (12,000) was in motion, and advanced in columns to the combat. General Jackson reserved his fire until the enemy approached within the reach of his grape, he then opened a destructive fire from his artillery, that mowed down their ranks. These were successively closed, and the enemy continued to advance, until they came within musket shot; then the whole lines vomited forth one incessant sheet of flame from the deadly rifle, which strewed the plain with indiscriminate slaughter, and threatened the whole columns with universal ruin. The enemy broke and fled in confusion, except a small detachment that

† His lines extended about 1000 yards in front, constructed with bales of cotton, placed along the bank of the ditch, and defended by twelve pieces of cannon, and 6000 men; supported also by a battery of fifteen guns, on the opposite side of the river; the ditch contained five feet of water.

General Jackson had posted his men ten deep in his lines, under the following orders, viz.

1. To receive the enemy at his approach, with a discharge of grape shot.
2. To reserve the fire of the musketry until special orders, and then for the front rank only to fire, and pass their rifles to the rear to be loaded, the centre and rear to pass their rifles to the front in quick succession, and the front to keep up as quick a fire. The rear ranks only to load.

bravely advanced to the lines ; but these all fell, to a man. Stung with indignation, the British officers rallied their troops, and advanced again to the charge. Again they were overwhelmed with the fire of the deadly rifle, and again they fled ; leaving the field strewed with the carnage of more than 2000 wounded, dead and dying. The general-in-chief, sir Edward Packenham, together with several other generals, and an unusual proportion of officers, were among the slain. About 500 were taken prisoners ; total loss of the enemy, about 3000. The loss of the Americans in the action, did not exceed 20 killed and wounded, January 8th, 1815.

The British who survived, retired on board their fleet ; descended the river, and proceeded to attack fort Bowyer, which they carried, after a brave resistance ; but the return of peace, soon restored it again to the Americans.

On the 15th, the United States frigate President, captain Decatur fell on with his Brittanic majesty's squadron, Majestic, Tenedos, Endymion, and Pomone, off Long Island. The President engaged and silenced the Endymion ; but before captain Decatur could take possession of his prize, the three other frigates came up, and the President was constrained to strike her colors, to such a superior force.

The President lost in the action with the Endymion, 25 killed and 60 wounded ; and was much crippled in her hull, spars, and rigging.

On the 11th of February, 1815, news arrived in New York, that peace had been concluded by the commissioners at Ghent, on the 24th of December. On the 17th of February, the treaty was ratified by the senate, and received the signature of the president. All parties rejoiced at the event.

The grievances complained of by the American government, as causes of the war, were not noticed in the treaty, but an express article provided, that the commercial differences of the two nations should be settled by commissioners, to be specially appointed for that purpose. In the summer of 1816, commissioners met accordingly, at London, and on the 3d day of July, signed a commercial treaty, between the two nations, founded upon the principles of mutual and reciprocal interest, and to continue for the term of four years.

Thus ended this war with Britain, and the American navy bore away the palm.

In the year of 1812, the Dey of Algiers took offence at a remittance of naval and military stores, from the government of

the United States, in fulfilment of certain stipulations of a former treaty ; and ordered Mr. Lear, the American consul, to depart, and at the same time sent out his cruisers to commence depredations upon the commerce of the United States ; several vessels were taken, and their crews subjected to the most rigid slavery.

As soon as the war had closed with England, congress deemed it expedient to humble that nest of pirates, and on the 2d of March, 1815, they declared war against the regency of Algiers. A squadron of eleven frigates and armed vessels, was despatched to the Mediterranean, in two divisions, under commodores Bainbridge and Decatur, who sailed upon that service. In four months, not only the regency of Algiers, but all the Barbary powers were united in treaties with the American government ; our own prisoners, and those of several European states, released ; expressions of submission, from several of those powers obtained, not hitherto contemplated, and such as had never been extorted by any other nation. *A just tribute to the American flag.*

The nation settled down and became tranquil under the peace, and nothing of importance occurred during the remainder of president Madison's administration.

In the winter of 1815—16, congress resumed the subject of a national bank, which was warmly contested for several weeks ; but a bill to incorporate the bank of the United States, with a capital of 35,000,000 of dollars was passed, and received the signature of the president on the 10th of April following.

The charter of this bank is to expire on the 3d of March, 1836.†

In 1816, Mr. Madison declined a re-election, and Mr. Monroe was chosen president, and Mr. Tompkins was chosen vice-president.‡

† The conditions of the charter are as follows, viz : Of the stock of the bank, seven millions were to be subscribed by the United States, the remaining twenty-eight by individuals. The affairs of the corporation to be managed by twenty five directors, five of whom were to be chosen by the president, with the advice and consent of the senate ; the remainder to be elected by the stockholders at the banking house, in Philadelphia.

‡ In the concluding remarks of Mr. Madison's message to congress, he thus expressed himself. "I can indulge the proud reflection," said he, "that the American people have reached in safety and success their fortieth year, as an independent nation ; that for nearly an entire

The chastisement of the Seminole Indians, and the conquest of Pensacola, by general Jackson, in 1813, opened the way for a cession of the Floridas to the United States, by Spain, in February, 1821. Thus a long and interesting Spanish negotiation terminated; war with Spain, so long contemplated, was averted, and a suitable indemnification was made to those American citizens, that had suffered from Spanish spoliation.

The Floridas, the same year, were erected into a Territorial government, and general Andrew Jackson was appointed governor.

Under the first term of president Monroe's administration, the asperity of party greatly softened down, and the nation became more united.

In 1821, Mr. Monroe was re-elected president, and Mr. Tompkins was also re-elected vice-president. The same increase of union and harmony continued to prevail in the nation.

In December, 1824, the electoral colleges again gave in their suffrages for president and vice-president. Their votes were divided between Andrew Jackson, J. Q. Adams, Wm. H. Crawford and Henry Clay, for president; neither of them having a majority of votes, it devolved on the house of representatives to make a choice from the three highest candidates, when a majority of the states voted for Mr. Adams, who, with Mr. J. C. Calhoun, the vice-president, was regularly inducted into office, on the 4th of March, 1825.

Nothing of great importance has yet occurred under Mr. Adams' administration, excepting the visit of general La Fayette to the United States, and the grant by congress, of 200,000 dollars, and an entire township of land, to that distinguished hero and patriot of the revolution.

The general affairs of the nation continue to move on prosperously.

generation, they have had experience of their present constitution, the offspring of their undisturbed deliberations, and of their free choice; that they have found it to bear the trials of adverse, as well of prosperous circumstances; to contain in its combination of the federate and elective principles, a reconciliation of public strength, with individual liberty, of national power, for the defence of national rights, with a security against wars of injustice, of ambition, or of vain glory. in the fundamental provision, which subjects all questions of war to the will of the nation itself, which is to pay its costs, and feel its calamities.— Nor is it less a peculiar felicity of this constitution, so dear to us all, that it is found to be capable, without losing its vital energies, of expanding itself over a spacious territory, with the increase and expansion of the community for whose benefit it was established."

## CHAPTER VII.

A HISTORICAL VIEW OF THE SOUTHERN AND WESTERN STATES,  
AS THEY BECAME TERRITORIAL GOVERNMENTS AND WERE  
ADMITTED INTO THE FEDERAL UNION—ALSO OF THE  
PRESENT TERRITORIAL GOVERNMENTS.

The country formerly known by the name of the north-western territory, was first explored by Marquette, a Frenchman, from Canada, in the year 1671. He traversed the country, by the way of the lakes; ascended the Fox river, from lake Michigan; crossed over the portage to the Ouisconsin; descended the latter and discovered the Mississippi; descended that river to the mouth of the Missouri, and returned.

La Salle, another Frenchman, explored the country from the St. Lawrence to the Ohio; followed its course to the Mississippi, and discovered their junction—1680.

From this time, numerous French traders visited this vast interior, for the benefit of the fur trade; but no settlements were attempted until the year 1735, when the French commenced the settlement of Vincennes, upon the Wabash.

In 1750, the English government made a grant to a company in Virginia, of 600,000 acres of land upon the river Ohio, for the purpose of establishing the British claims to this western wilderness.

To counteract these claims, the French erected fort Duquesne, at the head of the Ohio.—1753.

In 1758, the English dispossessed the French of this fort, (as has been noticed under the old French war) which struck a fatal blow to the claims of France.

At the peace of Paris, 1763, France relinquished to Great Britain, by the cession of Canada, all further claims to this western country.

The hostile disposition of the savages prevented a general settlement of this country, until the peace of Greenville, which followed the famous victory of general Wayne, August 3d, 1795.

The times of discovery and settlement of the states and territories south of the Ohio, may be seen in the sketches of their several histories.

Thirty years ago, this whole southern and western region was literally the habitation of cruelty; the abode of savage beasts and more savage men. It is now covered with



rich and flourishing towns and villages ; filled with a numerous population of free and enlightened citizens, whose noble and virtuous exertions, have added nine illustrious pillars to the glorious republic of United America, and formed several territorial governments.

This vast interior abounds with every variety of soil and climate, and furnishes in rich abundance, all the conveniences, and as many of the luxuries of life, as are essential to the happiness and prosperity of man.

The vast waters of the Mississippi, through the medium of her numerous tributary streams, afford all the facilities of internal navigation, as well as foreign intercourse with the ocean, that possibly could be desired.

The numerous steam-boats on the western waters, (which now exceed one hundred) have rendered this internal navigation, both safe and expeditious, and given to the western farmer and merchant, all the facilities of mutual interchange of commodities, that the Atlantic states enjoy on their extensive sea-board. Added to this, the hands of these hardy and industrious sons of labor, have cleared the forests, levelled hills and vallies, and opened numerous roads, that intersect each other in all necessary directions, to promote mutual and reciprocal intercourse, throughout this vast region.

The federal government, ever mindful of the best interests of this section of United America, has provided as a permanent fund for the education of the rising generation, 45,680 acres of land for each new state, or two entire townships, to be applied to the purpose of endowing seminaries of learning.—Also 640 acres for the benefit of each town, as a permanent fund for the support of schools.

For the purpose of giving a more particular history of the western states, we have taken them separately, in the order of their formation and admission into the Union, which is as follows :

#### KENTUCKY.

The Six Nations from the north claimed the district of country, now known by the name of Kentucky, as a part of their hunting grounds, and often extended their excursions over this range. The Cherokees from the south had the same claims, and ranged over this region in their hunting excursions. Collisions often took place between the parties, and bloody wars ensued, which gave to the country an Indian name, signifying the *the bloody grounds*.

Virginia purchased the claims of the Six Nations, at the treaty of Lancaster and Stanwix, in 1768. Colonel R. Henderson purchased the claims of the Cherokees, in 1775; but these treaties and purchases did not secure the first settlers, against the harassing excursions of the Indians.

In 1773, colonel Daniel Boon explored this country, and commenced a settlement. In 1775, he moved with his family, and several others, into Kentucky. In 1777, Virginia erected it into a county. In 1778, the settlers joined colonel Clark, who was sent out from Virginia against the French and Indian settlements of upper Mississippi, and overrun and took the whole, from the Ohio to the Illinois. On his return he dispossessed the French of their fort and settlement at Vincennes, and brought into submission the adjacent tribes. Colonel Clark returned to Kentucky and rallied the settlers against the Shawnee, Delaware, and Mingo tribes, upon the Miami and Scioto rivers, laid waste their settlements, and dispersed the Indians; all of which kindled a savage war, that continued to rage, with very little intermission, down to the peace of Greenville, in 1795, about seventeen years. During this period, the settlements of Kentucky, and upon the Ohio, generally, were often very much distressed. In 1782, Virginia erected this county into a district, with a regular judiciary, open to appeals to the superior courts in Virginia. In 1785, Kentucky became an independent state; and in February, 1792, was admitted into the Union.

Kentucky entered with spirit into the late war with England, and although her territory was not invaded, yet she suffered severely, by the loss of many of her brave sons in the Indian war.

#### TENNESSEE.

Tennessee was formerly visited by that people who constructed the ancient fortifications of this state, as well as those mentioned in the several other states, and who also left a monumental record of those engravings upon the rocks of the enchanted mountains, and numerous others, which are found in other states. It is most probable that this people were a part of the Mexican colony, who attempted to settle the western country, but were overpowered by the natives and lost.

Tennessee was claimed by North Carolina, and by her ceded to the United States, in 1789. It was erected by congress into a territorial government in 1790; and admitted into

the union in 1796. The rise and progress of Tennessee have been remarkably prosperous ; almost without a parallel.— She furnished a full share of those heroes, that fought under general Jackson, and with their rifles repelled the attack of the British upon New Orleans, January, 1815. The Tennesseans are a brave, hardy, and industrious people. Although the first settlers were mostly Scots, Irish and Germans, from Virginia and Pennsylvania, with a few English, their national character is fast assimilating and blending.

#### OHIO.

This section of the Union was formerly claimed by Virginia and Connecticut, by virtue of their original patents, which embraced all lands west, within their parallels of latitude, to the Pacific ocean. In 1789, these states ceded their claims to congress, reserving to Virginia her military bounty lands, situated between the Little Miami and the Scioto ; and reserving to Connecticut 3,000,000 of acres on the north-east section of the state of Ohio. About the same time, the Ohio company commenced the settlement of Marietta, under Rufus Putnam, esq. ; and John Cleves Symms commenced his settlement at the mouth of the Great Miami ; and soon after, fort Washington was built upon the Scioto ; and the settlement of Cincinnati was begun near the mouth of Little Miami. The Indian wars that soon after commenced, checked the progress of these settlements, until the treaty of Greenville, in 1795. Since that time the settlements of this north-western territory have been prosperous without a parallel.

Ohio was erected into a state and admitted into the Union, 1802. In 1818, Ohio purchased of the Indians, a tract of land, on the north-west corner of the state, amounting to 4,000,000 of acres ; the land is considered of a quality equal to any in the state, both for cultivation and commerce.

#### LOUISIANA.

About the middle of the 17th century, De la Salle traversed the Mississippi river, and explored the country, and called it Louisiana. This name embraced the country upon both sides of the river, and France continued to claim it down to the peace of 1763, when she relinquished all her claims to Louisiana, on the east of the Mississippi, except New Orleans, to Great Britain ; and on the west, to Spain. Great-Britain

ceded her claims to the United States, by the treaty of Paris, 1783.

Spain held possession of western Louisiana and New-Orleans, till she ceded it to France, by the treaty of Ildefonso, in 1802. In 1803, France ceded Louisiana to the United States for \$15,000,000. Congress divided it into two sections, termed Upper and Lower Louisiana, or the territory of Missouri, and the territory of Orleans. In 1812, the territory of Orleans became a state, and was admitted into the Union, under the name of Louisiana.

(For Jackson's defence of N. Orleans see pages 363 to 365.)

#### INDIANA.

Indiana was first explored by La Salle, a Frenchman, from Canada, in the year 1680. In the year 1736, a company of French came out from Canada, and settled the town of Vincennes, on the Wabash. This settlement commenced, and continued in the heart of an Indian country, and the settlers so far assimilated with the Indian manners and customs, as to become more than half savage, until this country began to be settled by the English, after the peace of Greenville, in 1793. Vincennes has now become an enlightened, rich and flourishing town.

Indiana has shared with Ohio in the distresses of Indian wars; first, from the expedition of general Harmer, in 1760, to the treaty of Greenville, in 1795; next, from the invasion of the British, in 1813, to the close of the war in 1815. Since that time, Indiana has flourished, and her settlements have rapidly progressed.

In 1818, 8,500,000 acres of land were added to this state by a purchase from the Indians, lying in the northern section of the state. This purchase affords incalculable advantages to Indiana.

Indiana was erected into a territorial government in 1801; became a state, and was admitted into the federal government in 1816.

#### MISSISSIPPI.

The early history of Mississippi is so interwoven with, and so much resembles the history of Louisiana, as to render particular details unnecessary. This state formerly belonged to Georgia, and under that government, became the theatre of a noted speculation. In 1795, the legislature of Georgia, sold a large tract of land, lying chiefly in the centre and western

parts of this state. The four original companies sold their lands principally in the eastern and middle states. The legislature of Georgia caused the records of the acts of sales of these lands, to be burnt in their presence, in the year 1790, and the sales were considered as a nullity. The contracts, however, among the speculators, were considered valid in law, which involved them in general distress and ruin.

About the year 1820, congress, after long and repeated solicitations, took up the subject, and granted some relief to the sufferers ; but it was too late to be of much benefit to the original speculators.

Mississippi became a state and was admitted into the Union, in 1817.

#### ILLINOIS.

Illinois was first discovered by Marquette, as early as 1671, by the way of the lakes. It was also a part of the interior, discovered by La Salle, in 1680. The French commenced the settlement of this country at Kaskaskia, Cahokia, and several other villages, soon after the discovery of Marquette, and about the time of the discovery of La Salle. When the revolutionary war commenced, in 1775, the village of Kaskaskia contained about 700 inhabitants ; but now there are 160 houses. In 1778, the governor of these French settlements excited the Indians to commit depredations upon the settlements in the back parts of Virginia, and colonel Clark was sent out with a force to subdue them. He traversed the desert 1200 miles, surprised these settlements, took them, administered the oath of allegiance to the inhabitants, and sent their governor into Virginia. The Indians became quiet for a time. Illinois was a part of the N. W. Territory, until it became a territorial government, in the year 1800. It became a state, and was admitted into the Union, in 1819. The same year, in August, the commissioners of the United States met the chiefs of the Kickapoo Indians, at Edwardsville, and made a purchase by treaty, of ten millions of acres of land, lying between the Illinois river on the north-west, the Kaskaskia on the south-east, the Kaskakee on the north-east, and the Mississippi on the south-west. These lands remain unsold by government. Illinois, with the river Mississippi on the west, the Ohio on the south, the Wabash and lake Michigan on the east, possesses commercial advantages that must ultimately render her one of the most flourishing states of the west.

## ALABAMA.

Alabama formerly belonged to Georgia, and was in part a theatre of the well known Georgia speculation ; but not very extensively, because the lands sold at that time, lay principally upon and between the rivers Tombigbee and Yazoo.

In 1817, Alabama was erected into a territorial government, and in 1819, it became a state, and was admitted into the Union.

By the late treaty with the Cherokees, known by the name of Jackson's treaty, they ceded to the United States about 17,000 square miles, lying within the state of Alabama, equal to 10,880,000 acres.

It is so far believed that most of the tropical productions will flourish near the gulf coast, that congress have granted 29,160 acres of land, upon the Creek cession in this state, to a company of French emigrants, on condition, that they shall introduce the culture of the vine and olive. It is also in contemplation to introduce the tea-plant.

## MISSOURI.

The settlements of the French at St. Louis, St. Genevieve, &c. commenced soon after La Salle explored the country, in 1680 ; but their history forms a part of the chapter of all the other French settlements in this region ; they could not flourish until they came under the jurisdiction of the United States, and enjoyed the blessings of a free government, and a free religion ; since that time, they have begun and will continue to flourish. Not only Missouri, but all the region of Western America, will flourish, and become populous, prosperous and happy, so far as the blessings of a free government and religion shall extend, and no further.

Missouri was erected into a territorial government in 1804 ; became a state and was admitted into the Union in 1821.

## MICHIGAN TERRITORY.

The forts and villages of Detroit and Michillimackinac, were built by the French from Canada, in the early part of the 18th century, as military posts, to protect the fur traders, who visited the interior country. They also formed links in the great chain of military posts, between Quebec and New-Orleans. It is not unusual for 7 or 800 traders to assemble at Mackinaw, in the months of June and July, annually. France ceded these posts to Great Britain, in connection with Cana-

da, at the peace of Paris, 1763 ; Great Britain ceded them to the United States, at the treaty of Paris, 1783 ; but they were not delivered up until the treaty of London, by Mr. Jay, in 1794, and the peace of Greenville, in Indiana, in 1795. In 1796, it was formed into a county, and called Wayne.

In the year 1800, it was formed into a territorial government, and general Hull became governor. On the 16th of August, 1812, Detroit was taken by the English, at the commencement of the late war. On the 28th of September, 1819, general Harrison, at the head of the north-western army, recovered Detroit, and it was confirmed to the United States by the peace of Ghent, December 24, 1814.

#### ARKANSAS TERRITORY.

This country was explored by the French, and they erected the trading post of Arkansaw, about forty miles up that river, early in the 18th century ; but this settlement, like all the other French settlements, progressed very slowly.— Since the country has fallen under the jurisdiction of the United States, the settlements progress rapidly.

Arkansas was erected into a territorial government, and general James Miller, appointed governor, in 1819.

#### TERRITORY OF EAST AND WEST FLORIDA.

Florida was discovered by John Cabot, in 1497. It was again visited in 1502, and the romantic circumstances that led to this adventure, as related by Dr. Williamson, may not be unworthy of notice.

“It had been reported a few years after the discovery of America,” says the doctor, “that in Bimini, one of the Bahama islands, there was a fountain, that had the marvellous and happy power of restoring youth and vigor to aged persons, who should bathe in its waters. Juan Ponce de Leon, a wealthy, but aged inhabitant of Porto Rico, believed the story, and sailed in quest of the grand restorative. Stretching to the west, he discovered land, in March, the Sabbath before Easter, which the Spaniards call Pasqua de Flores, for which reason he called the country Florida. Ponce de Leon dipped himself in every stream or fountain, that he saw ; no Brahmin or Mahomedan could match him in ablutions ; but he returned an older man. Failing in his attempts to recover youth, he resolved to increase his wealth at the expense of the natives ; and for this purpose, Juan Ponce de Leon, a

Spaniard, obtained a commission to explore and conquer ; and in 1513, he entered upon the coast of Florida, and began a settlement, which laid the foundation of the claims of Spain."

In 1563, commodore Laudonnier sailed from France, with three ships, to plant a colony in Florida. He landed in June, and built a fort upon the river St. Mary's, and left a colony of 100 men, and called it Carolina, in honor of king Charles IX. This commenced the claims of France to Florida. The next year the Spaniards dispossessed the French and held the country, until the close of the seven years war, when it was ceded to the English, in exchange for the Havanna, on the island of Cuba, by the peace of 1763, and they divided it into East and West Florida. Spain again took possession of Florida, in the year 1780, and Great Britain confirmed Florida to Spain, by the treaty of Paris, 1783.

In 1818, general Jackson pursued the Seminole Indians into Florida, and took possession of St. Mark's. The next year the government of the United States restored it to Spain.

In 1821, Spain ceded the Floridas to the United States, and congress erected Floridas into a territorial government, and appointed general Jackson governor.

#### MISSOURI TERRITORY.

This vast region was explored to the head waters of the Missouri, by Clark and Lewis, under the patronage of president Jefferson, during his administration, and it has since been explored by others ; but such is the dreary and uninviting aspect of the country, that no settlements have been made, except a few military establishments, for the protection of trade. It will probably remain in the quiet possession of the natives, for centuries to come.

#### NORTH-WEST TERRITORY.

Of this territory very little is known. The French settlements on the Fox and Ouisconsin rivers, commenced before France ceded Canada to Great Britain ; but the English had no knowledge of this region, until it was explored by captain John Carver, soon after the peace of 1783.

#### TERRITORY OF COLUMBIA.

The coast on the Pacific had been explored by captain Cook, and others, but the interior had never been explored, until it was visited by captains Clark and Lewis, under the pat-



ronage of president Jefferson, in the year 1805. These adventurers ascended the Missouri to its sources ; crossed over the Rocky mountains, and explored the rivers that bear their names, and descended the Columbia to its mouth. They returned without being able to explore the country, at any distance from the Columbia, either north or south, and published an account of their adventure, with such facts as they could collect. All which serves to shew, that a water communication from New-York to Astoria, (a village at the mouth of the Columbia) and another from New Orleans to the same place, may be effected with only one portage, between the head streams of Missouri and Clark's rivers, of less than 300 rods. Another such instance is not to be found on the face of the whole earth.

A pass has lately been discovered through the Rocky mountains, a little south of the route of Lewis and Clark, that will make a good waggon road.



#### GENERAL REMARKS ON PART IV.

*Manners and Customs.*—In our remarks upon Part III. we noticed the demoralizing effects of the revolution, upon the sober and virtuous manners and customs of the country, generally. In our remarks upon Part IV. the same observations will apply, and in addition to this, at the close of the revolutionary war, a great change of manners and customs commenced. When the pressure of war was removed, and the officers and soldiers of the revolution returned to private life, and commixed with the people, a new spirit of hilarity, and free, familiar social intercourse commenced, that gave new life and animation to society. The partiality generally indulged towards France, our great and good ally, gave a new relish for the levity of manners peculiar to that nation. French dancing masters were patronised in all the large towns, throughout the country, and that coarse and rustic mode of dancing, which had been common to all the former periods, now gave place to that refinement of manners, and those graceful movements, that have ever characterised the French people, and gave a new polish to the manners and customs of this period. This cheerful state of public feeling, and this improved state of manners, went very far to assimilate

late and harmonize the discordant feelings and prejudices of the northern and southern people, and unite them in one common family. It was also attended with some serious evils, for it tended strongly to diffuse and cherish the principles of that atheistical philosophy, which had at that time become common to France, and which, during her revolution, drenched all Christendom in blood, through a twenty-five years war. During the fore part of this period, and even down to the time of the adoption of the federal constitution, a corrupt speculation commenced, and raged so extensively, as to deaden the finer feelings, and render a sordid avaricious selfishness the predominating passion in society. Previous to the organization of the federal government, this passion was principally confined to the speculation on the evidences of public debt; but when the government had removed this, and given permanence to the debt by the funding system, then land jobbing took the lead, and numerous other speculations followed on in their train, until bankruptcies became so common, as to render it necessary for congress to pass a bankrupt law, to relieve the general monied distress. All these evils had a powerful demoralizing influence upon the manners and customs of that period. Under the influence of all these evils combined, a political strife commenced in congress, that diffused itself throughout the nation. The old names and feelings of the revolutionary period, whig and tory, were now changed for the more bitter names and feeling, if possible, of federalist and democrat. Under the standard of these names, the whole American people were martialled into two great parties, and the question of, what is best for the nation? was lost in the strife of, who shall rule? The demoralizing effects of this party strife, were felt, from the capitol at Washington to the log hut beyond the mountains, and excited a strife of party interest, and bitterness of party feeling, that disturbed not only the peace of the community at large, but of cities, villages, and even private families. All these evils combined, were in full operation to break up and destroy the ancient land-marks of moral virtue, and by their demoralizing influence, break down the powers of government, and sow the seeds of anarchy, throughout the American family. The belligerents of Europe took advantage of our divided weakness, as they supposed, and by their acts and decrees, added injury to insult, until the government rose in the majesty of itself, and drew the sword, to vindicate its violated rights,

Although the nation, as a body, were not cordial to the measure, they soon felt the necessity of the war ; gloried in the splendid triumphs of their naval heroes ; and rallied round the government, to support the common cause. The splendid successes in the war, the wise administration of president Madison, added to the discreet and prudent administration of president Monroe, hushed to peace the storm of party strife, and brought back the people of the United States, to that state of political feeling, with which they commenced the federal government ; and the terms federalist and democrat, like those of whig and tory, exist at this time, only in name ;—*there let them rest forever.*

*Religion.*—A general view of religion has been carried forward with the several colonies. from their first settlement, down to the peace of 1763. The demoralizing effects of the revolutionary war, and of modern infidelity, have also been noticed in their place ; but from the time of the organization of the federal constitution, religion has been supported, under the weight of all the force that the most bitter infidel writers could rally against it. There has been good sense enough in America, to contrast that happy state of civil and religious society, the people of the United States enjoyed from that system of pure religion and moral virtue their fathers planted in this country, with the horrid excesses and corruptions, that followed in the train of modern infidelity in Europe, and accompanied the vicious lives of her votaries. The peace and happiness of individuals, and of families, as well as of the community at large, led the citizens of the United States to engage their influence, their talents, and their efforts on the side of religion and virtue ; a kind and beneficent providence approved the choice, and added his blessing, by pouring out his spirit in large and copious effusions, upon various parts of the Union, and calling up the attention of all classes of the people, to a consideration of the weighty importance of religion.

*Trade and Commerce.*—The commercial treaty of 1794, between the United States and Great Britain, then denominated Jay's treaty, opened a new field of commerce to the United States ; and the war that commenced in Europe with the French revolution, opened a commercial field to the United States, as a neutral power, not contemplated by either of the parties to that treaty, at the time it was executed, and which secured to America, almost the whole carrying trade for the

continent of Europe. So extensive had this trade become in 1797, as to amount to an aggregate of exports from the United States, to nearly fifty-seven millions of dollars, and an amount of imports exceeding seventy-five millions. Such was the prosperity of this commerce, that in the year 1807, the exports of the United States amounted to more than 108 millions, and their imports to about 140 millions, notwithstanding the commercial restrictions in Europe, under the British orders in council, and French decrees; but the restrictive measures of the United States, and her general embargo lessened the imports in the United States, in 1808, down to the sum of about twenty-two millions. In 1809, commerce began, in some measure, to recover from the first shock, received from the embargo, and it continued to rise, until the exports in 1815, amounted to fifty-two millions and a half, and in 1816, to about eighty-two millions. Since the last mentioned dates, the channels of commerce have been regular, and subject to very little variation, excepting the restrictive measures of Great Britain in 1826, in excluding the commerce of the United States from her West India Islands.

Thus may be seen at one view, that in about two centuries, the citizens of the United States have cut the first tree in an unbounded wilderness, erected the first log hut, built the first ship, and have cleared the forest, and erected cities, towns and villages, to support and accommodate more than ten millions of people, whose wealth, and enterprise upon the ocean, have rendered them the second commercial nation in the world.

*Arts and Manufactures.*—Before the organization of the federal government, arts and manufactures were very limited, and such as they were, may be considered of the coarser fabrics only; but by the fostering care of the government, these have been regularly extending and improving. It is true, that even before the revolution, we could boast of a Franklin, who discovered the art of directing the electric fluid, and disarming the thunder storm of its terrors; of a Rittenhouse, who exhibited at one view, the sun, with the whole planetary system, with their regular orbits, motions and periods; we could boast of a Godfrey, who invented the mariner's quadrant, and although by plagiarism, the first of these inventions is called an orrery, in allusion to lord Orrery, and the other Hadley's quadrant, in allusion to an Englishman of that name, still they are both of American origin, and the

merit of their invention belongs to citizens of the United States. Under the patent laws of the government, useful and valuable inventions have been multiplied, to an extent too great to be particularized; but the application of steam to the purposes of navigation, by a Fulton, may possibly be considered as the most useful and valuable improvement in the arts, in the United States. Large and valuable manufactories of cotton and woollen cloths, commenced in the northern and middle states, soon after the federal constitution went into operation; and from the time the general embargo and non-intercourse acts were passed these establishments were extended and enlarged; and at the close of the last British war, a good foundation was laid in the United States, to render her manufactures permanent, and the nation independent of all foreign fabrics whatever. The return of peace brought such quantities of foreign goods, again into market, as to embarrass the woollen manufacturers, but the cotton establishments continue to flourish, and great quantities of domestic cottons are shipped to Mexico and South America, with a handsome profit. Even Britain herself is obliged to imitate the domestic cottons of the United States, to give to their's a currency in market, in this country, or in any part of Spanish America.

*Agriculture.*—The improvements in agriculture, have kept pace generally, with the improvements in arts and manufactures; agricultural societies have been formed, throughout the northern and middle states, and men of the first talents and capital, have bestowed their attention upon the most important agricultural improvements. Soon after the general embargo commenced, a general spirit appeared in the country, for multiplying and improving their flocks of sheep. Large and numerous lots of merino sheep, were imported from Spain, and sold to a great profit. These sheep have multiplied greatly in the country, and proved a useful and valuable acquisition. Many of the American farmers have improved the pile of the merino, by introducing sheep of a still finer pile, from Saxony, and thereby producing a wool of the finest possible texture. This spirit of improvement has been extended to the horse, the ox, and the cow, by the importation of foreign stocks of superior breeds, which succeed well, in giving an increased value to the stock of the American farmer.

The culture of the bee, the silk worm, and the grape, have as

yet, been too much neglected ; they are all capable of greatly augmenting the revenue of the agricultural interest in the United States, at the expense of very moderate capitals ; and it is strongly to be hoped, that they will soon become as profitable in the United States, as they are in France, Italy, and Germany.

*Education.*—In the course of this work, we have noticed with peculiar satisfaction, the rise and progress of education, throughout the United States. We have witnessed a general diffusion of information among all classes of society, which far surpasses that of any other country upon earth ; but since the establishment of the federal government, great has been the encouragement for the promotion of education ; schools, academies, and colleges have multiplied, as population has extended. Newspapers, and other periodical publications, of various descriptions, have also multiplied, and extended their usefulness, in diffusing valuable and important information, both foreign and domestic, among all classes of the community. Useful and valuable school books, embracing all the sciences, have also been multiplied and diffused, and at such cheap rates, as to be easily obtained by the poor, as well as the rich ; so that a free and useful system of education, has become the pride and boast of the United States.

Education is the broad basis upon which the civil and religious privileges of United America have rested, and must continue to rest ; remove this, and the grand fabric of American liberty will totter to its base and tumble into ruins. Preserve this, with the virtuous principles, intelligent understandings, and skillful industry, she now enjoys, and the united republic of America may bid defiance to faction and conspiracy, and become the admiration of ages.

*Population.*—At the commencement of the old French war, the then British colonies of North America, were supposed to contain about

1,000,000

At the commencement of the revolutionary war, 2 to 3,000,000

of the federal government, 4,000,000

of the 19th century, 5,000,000

of the late British war, 7,000,000

census of 1820, about 10,000,000

In this general census of the United States, the fractional parts have been omitted, because a general view is sufficient to shew an increase of population, unparalleled in the whole family of man.

*War.*—We have seen with what union and spirit the American colonies entered into the old French war, and the war of the revolution, and with what happy and prosperous success they were both closed. We have seen with what discordant views the United States entered into the late war with England, and the disasters that attended the war upon the land, along the Canada frontier. Let us eye the hand of providence in this, for had that war been prosperous, Canada would have been added to the United States ; and an extent of territory, peopled with discordant feelings, habits and interests, might have marred the peace and prosperity of the now happy American family. The brilliant naval war upon the ocean and the lakes, that added such lustre to the American navy, and such glory to her naval heroes, proved a great naval school, that brought forward in America, the useful and important science of practical naval tactics, half a century at least beyond which they would have attained, in an ordinary course of peace ; and taught the government and people, the only true point of defence for a commercial nation. Thus it proved a glorious war to America ; it united the people, and strengthened the government.

#### CONCLUSION.

When we take a retrospective view of the whole period, over which we have passed, and call to mind the persecutions that drove out our fathers, from their dear native land, into this savage wilderness ; the magnanimity and firmness with which they entered upon their arduous labors ; the virtuous patience and perseverance, with which they endured all their privations and sufferings ; the unparalleled wisdom and zeal with which they commenced, and laid deep and broad the foundations of their civil, religious, and literary institutions ; the valient exploits they achieved, in repelling the merciless savages, and the marauding French, in a succession of cruel and bloody wars, too numerous and distressing to be detailed. And last of all, in resisting and humbling the gigantic power of Great-Britain ; first in the war of the revolution, and next in the late unnatural and bloody contest, we are ready to exclaim, what a people ! what a novel and unprecedented display of national virtue, and national character ! Great and

magnanimous nation ; well may you glory in such virtuous ancestors ; well may you glory in yourselves, for having thus far cherished and preserved their virtuous principles and institutions, and by your improvements, added a lustre to their characters and memories.



## APPENDIX.

---

[NOTE A.]

### DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE

#### PREAMBLE.

When, in the course of human events, it becomes necessary for one people to dissolve the political bands that have united them with another, and to assume among the powers of the earth, the separate and equal stations, to which the laws of nature and of nature's God, entitle them, a decent respect to the opinions of mankind requires, that they should declare the causes which impel them to a separation.

“ We hold these truths to be self-evident ; that all men are created equal ; that they are endowed by their Creator, with certain unalienable rights ; that among these are life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness ; that to secure these rights, governments are instituted among men, deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed ; that whenever any form of government becomes destructive of these ends, it is the right of the people to alter or abolish it, and to institute a new government, laying its foundation on such principles, and organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most likely to effect their safety and happiness.

“ Prudence indeed, will dictate, that governments long established, should not be changed for light and transient causes ; and accordingly all experience hath shewn, that mankind are more disposed to suffer, while evils are sufferable, than to right themselves, by abolishing the forms to which they are accustomed. But when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same object, evinces a design to reduce them under absolute despotism ; it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such a government, and to provide new guards for their future security. Such has been the patient sufferance of these colonies, and such is the necessity

now, that constrains them to alter their former systems of government."

Here follows a succession of injuries, in detail, which the colonies have suffered from Great Britain, which are closed with this remark,—“ To prove this, let facts be submitted to a candid world.” Causes of separation here follow :

As these causes here enumerated, consist only of a summary of the numerous causes, already noticed, it will be unnecessary to swell this work with their recital here in detail, a few only shall suffice.

“ Standing armies have been kept up among us, in times of peace, without the consent of our legislatures.

“ The military has been rendered independent of, and superior to, the civil power.

“ A plan has been formed to subject us to a jurisdiction foreign to our constitution, and unacknowledged by our laws.

“ Acts have been passed by the British legislature, for quartering large bodies of armed troops upon us ; for protecting them by a mock trial, from punishment for any murders, which they should commit upon the inhabitants of these states ; for cutting off our trade from all parts of the world ; for imposing taxes upon us without our consent ; for depriving us in many cases of the benefits of the trial by jury ; for transporting us beyond the seas to be tried for supposed offences ; for abolishing the free system of English laws in a neighboring province, establishing them in an arbitrary government, and enlarging its boundaries so as to render it at once an example, and fit instrument for introducing the same absolute rule into these colonies ; for the taking away our charters, abolishing our most valuable laws, and altering fundamentally the forms of our governments ; for suspending our own legislatures, and declaring the British parliament invested with powers to legislate for us in all cases whatsoever.

“ The crown of Great Britain has abdicated government here, by declaring us out of its protection, and waging war with us.

“ Our seas have been plundered, our coasts ravaged, our towns burnt, and the lives of our people destroyed.

“ Large armies of foreign mercenaries are at this time transporting into this country, to complete the work of death, desolation and tyranny, already begun, with circumstances of cruelty and perfidy, scarcely paralleled in the most barbarous ages, and totally unworthy a civilized nation.

“ Our fellow citizens taken captive upon the high seas, have been constrained to bear arms against their country, to become the executioners of their friends and brethren, and to fall themselves by their hands.

“ Domestic insurrections have been excited among us, and endeavors have been used to bring on the inhabitants of our frontiers, the merciless savages, whose known rule of warfare is, an undistinguished destruction of all ages, sexes and conditions.

“ In every stage of these oppressions, we have petitioned for redress, in the most humble manner. Our repeated petitions have been answered, only by repeated injury. Nor have we been wanting in attention to our British brethren. We have warned them, from time to time, of attempts by their legislature, to extend an unwarrantable jurisdiction over us.— We have reminded them of the circumstances of our emigration and settlement here. We have appealed to their native justice and magnanimity, and we have conjured them by the ties of our common kindred, to disavow these usurpations, which would inevitably interrupt our connections and correspondence. They too, have been deaf to the voice of justice, and of consanguinity. We must therefore acquiesce in the necessity, which denounces our separation, and hold them, as we hold the rest of mankind, enemies in war, in peace, friends.

“ We, therefore, the representatives of the United States of America, in congress assembled, appealing to the Supreme Judge of the world for the rectitude of our intentions, do, in the name, and by the authority of the good people of these colonies, solemnly publish and declare, that these united colonies are, and of right ought to be, free and independent states ; that they are absolved from all allegiance to the British crown ; and that all political connexion between them and Great Britain, is, and ought to be, totally dissolved ; and that as free and independent states, they have full power to levy war, conclude peace, contract alliances, establish commerce, and do all other acts and things, that independent states may do. And for the support of this declaration, with a firm reliance on Divine Providence, we mutually pledge to each other our lives, our fortunes, and our sacred honors.”

The above Declaration of Independence, was, by order of congress, engrossed, and signed by the following members, ac-

cording to the order of the states, July 4, 1776.—John Hancock, president.

*New-Hampshire*, Josiah Bartlet, William Whipple, Matthew Thornton.

*Massachusetts-Bay*, Samuel Adams, John Adams, Robert T. Paine, Elbridge Gerry.

*Rhode-Island and Providence Plantations*, Stephen Hopkins, William Ellery.

*Connecticut*, Roger Sherman, Samuel Huntington, William Williams, Oliver Wolcott.

*New-York*, William Floyd, Philip Livingston, Francis Lewis, Lewis Morris.

*New-Jersey*, Richard Stockton, John Witherspoon, Francis Hopkinson, John Hart, Abraham Clark.

*Pennsylvania*, Robert Morris, Benjamin Rush, Benjamin Franklin, John Morton, George Clymer, James Smith, George Taylor, James Wilson, George Ross.

*Delaware*, Cæsar Rodney, George Reed.

*Maryland*, Samuel Chase, William Paca, Thomas Stone, Charles Carrol.

*Virginia*, George Wythe, Richard H. Lee, Thomas Jefferson, Benjamin Harrison, Thomas Nelson, Jr. Francis L. Lee, Carter Baxton.

*North Carolina*, William Hooper, Joseph Hewes, John Penn.

*South Carolina*, Edward Rutledge, Thomas Heyward, Jr. Thomas Lynch, Jr. Arthur Middleton.

*Georgia*, Button Gwinnett, Lyman Hall, George Walton.

This is one of the most memorable state papers, that the whole historic page can boast, and the worthies, whose names stand recorded in support of this masterly production, and who were the authors of this glorious epoch, are enrolled in the temple of immortal fame, and their names can never die.

On the 8th of July, the Declaration was publicly proclaimed in the city of Philadelphia, amidst the united applause of the people. From thence the sons of liberty caught the sacred fire, and proclaimed it with loud acclamations of joy, throughout the nation. Never was a people better prepared for such an event, and never was there a measure in which all hearts were more cordially united. This was the epoch of permanent liberty, and the death blow to British power, and British influence in America.

## [NOTE B.]

Articles of confederation, and perpetual union, between the states of New-Hampshire, Massachusetts-Bay, Rhode-Island and Providence Plantations, Connecticut, New-York, New-Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina, and Georgia ; July 12th, 1777.

“Article 1. The style of this confederacy shall be, the United States of America.

Article 2. Each state retains its sovereignty, freedom, and independence ; and every power, jurisdiction and right, which is not by this confederation expressly delegated to the United States, in congress assembled.

Article 3. The said states hereby enter into a firm league of friendship with each other, for their common defence ; the security of their liberties and their mutual and general welfare ; binding themselves to assist each other against all force offered to, or attacks upon them, or either of them, on account of religion, sovereignty, trade, or any other pretence whatsoever.

Article 4. The better to secure and perpetuate mutual friendship and intercourse, among the people of the different states in this union, the free inhabitants of each of these states, (paupers, vagabonds, and fugitives from justice, excepted) shall be entitled to all privileges and immunities of free citizens, in the several states, and the people of each state shall have free ingress and regress from any other state, and shall enjoy therein, all the privileges of trade and commerce, subject to the same duties, impositions and restrictions, as the inhabitants thereof, respectively ; provided, that such restrictions shall not extend so far as to prevent the removal of property imported into any state, to any other state, of which the owner is an inhabitant ; provided also, that no imposition, duties, or restriction, shall be laid, by any state, upon the property of the United States, or either of them.

If any person guilty of, or charged with treason, felony, or other high misdemeanor, in any state, shall flee from justice, and be found in any of the United States, he shall, upon demand of the governor, or executive power of the state, from whence he fled, be delivered up, and removed to the state having jurisdiction of the offence.

Full faith and credit shall be given in each of these states,

to the records, acts, and judicial proceedings of the courts and magistrates of every other state.

Article 5. For the more convenient management of the general interests of the United States, delegates shall be annually appointed, in such manner as the legislature of each state shall direct, to meet in congress on the first Monday in November, in every year, with a power reserved to each state, to recall its members, or any of them, at any time within the year, and send others in their stead, for the remainder of the year.

No state shall be represented in congress by less than two, nor more than seven members ; and no person shall be capable of being delegated for more than three years, in any term of six years ; nor shall any person, being a delegate, be capable of holding an office under the United States, for which he, or any other for his benefit, receives any salary, fees, or emolument of any kind.

Each state shall maintain its own delegates in any meeting of the states, or while they act as members of the committee of the states.

In determining questions in the United States, in congress assembled, each state shall have one vote.

Freedom of speech and debate, in congress, shall not be impeached, or questioned in any court, or place out of congress ; and the members of congress shall be protected in their persons, from arrest and imprisonment, during the time of their going to and from, and attendance on congress, except for treason, felony, or breach of the peace.

Article 6. No state, without the consent of the United States, in congress assembled, shall send any embassy to, or receive any embassy from, or enter into any conference, agreement, alliance, or treaty, with any king, prince, or state ; nor shall any person holding any office of credit or trust, under the United States, or any of them, accept of any present, emolument, office or title of any kind whatsoever, from any king, prince, or foreign state ; nor shall the United States, in congress assembled, or any of them grant any title of nobility.

No two or more states, shall enter into any treaty, confederation, or alliance whatever, between them, without the consent of the United States, in congress assembled, specifying accurately the purposes for which the same is to be entered into, and how long it shall continue.

No state shall lay any impost or duties, which may interfere with any stipulations, or treaties entered into by the Uni-

ted States, in congress assembled, with any king, prince, or state, in pursuance of any treaties already proposed by congress, to the courts of France and Spain.

No vessels of war shall be kept by any state, in time of peace, except such numbers only, as shall be deemed necessary by the United States, in congress assembled, for the defence of such state, or its trade ; nor shall any body of forces be kept up by any state, in time of peace, except such number only, as in the judgment of the United States, in congress assembled, shall be deemed requisite to garrison the forts necessary for the defence of such state ; but every state shall always keep up a well regulated and disciplined militia, sufficiently armed and accoutred, and shall provide, and have constantly for use in public stores, a due number of field pieces and tents, and a proper quantity of arms, ammunition, and camp equipage.

No state shall engage in any war, without the consent of the United States, in congress assembled, unless such state be actually invaded by enemies, or shall have certain advice of a resolution being formed by some nation of Indians, to invade such state, and the danger is so eminent as not to admit of a delay, until the United States, in congress assembled, can be consulted ; nor shall any state grant commissions to any ships, or vessels of war, nor letters of marque or reprisal, except it be after a declaration of war by the United States, in congress assembled, and then only against the kingdom or state, and the subjects thereof, against which war has been so declared, and under such regulations as shall be established by the United States, in congress assembled, unless such state be infested by pirates, in which case, vessels of war may be fitted out for the occasion, and kept, so long as the danger shall continue, or until the United States, in congress assembled, shall determine otherwise.

Article 7. When land forces are raised by any state for the common defence, all officers of, or under the rank of colonel, shall be appointed by the legislature of each state respectively, by whom such forces are raised, or in such manner as such state shall direct ; and all vacancies shall be filled up by the state which first made the appointment.

Article 8. All charges of war, and all other expenses, that shall be incurred for the common defence, or general welfare, and allowed by the United States, in congress assembled, shall be defrayed out of a common treasury, which shall be

supplied by the several states, in proportion to the value of all lands within each state, granted to, or conveyed by any person, as such land, and the buildings and improvements thereon, shall be estimated, according to such mode as the United States, in congress assembled, shall from time to time direct and appoint.

The taxes for paying that proportion shall be laid and levied by the authority and direction of the legislatures of the several states, within the time agreed upon by the United States, in congress assembled.

Article 9. The United States, in congress assembled, shall have the sole, and exclusive right and power, of determining on peace and war, except in such cases mentioned in the sixth article, of sending and receiving ambassadors ; entering into treaties and alliances, provided that no treaty of commerce shall be made, whereby the legislature of any state, shall be restrained from imposing such imposts and duties on foreigners, as their own people are subjected to, or from prohibiting the exportation or importation of any species of goods or commodities, whatsoever ; of establishing rules for deciding in all cases, what captures on land and water shall be legal, &c. in what manner prizes taken by land, or naval forces, in the service of the United States, shall be divided, or appropriated ; of granting letters of marque or reprisal, in time of peace ; appointing courts for the trial of piracies, for felonies committed upon the high seas, and establishing courts for receiving and determining finally, appeals in all cases of captures, provided that no member of congress shall be appointed judge of any of said courts.

The United States, in congress assembled, shall also be the last resort on appeal, in all disputes and differences now subsisting, or that may hereafter arise between two or more states, concerning boundary, jurisdiction, or any other cause whatsoever ; which authority shall always be exercised in the manner following, viz.

Whenever the legislature or executive authority, or lawful agent of any state, in controversy with another, shall present a petition to congress, stating the matter in question, and praying for a hearing, notice thereof shall be given by order of congress, to the legislative or executive authority of the other state in controversy, and a day assigned for the appearance of the parties, by their lawful agents, who shall then be directed to appoint by joint consent, commissioners or judges to



constitute a court, who shall hear and determine the matter in question ; but if they cannot agree, congress shall name three persons from each of the United States, and from the list of such persons, each party shall alternately strike out one, the petitioners beginning, until the number shall be reduced down to thirteen, and from that number, not less than seven nor more than nine names, as congress shall direct, shall in the presence of congress, be drawn out by lot, and the persons so drawn out, or any five of them, shall be commissioners or judges, to hear and finally determine the controversy, so always as a major part of the judges, who shall agree in the determination ; and if either party shall neglect to attend at the day appointed, without shewing reasons which congress shall judge sufficient, or being present shall refuse to strike, the congress shall proceed to nominate three persons out of each state, and the secretary of congress shall strike in behalf of such party absent or refusing ; and the judgment and sentence of the court to be appointed, in the manner before prescribed, shall be final and conclusive ; and if any of the parties shall refuse to submit to the authority of such court, or to appear to defend their claim or cause, the court shall nevertheless proceed to pass sentence or judgment, which shall in like manner, be final and conclusive ; the judgment or sentence, in either case, being transmitted to congress, and lodged among the acts of congress, for the security of the parties concerned ; provided that every commissioner, before he sits in judgment, shall take an oath, to be administered by one of the judges of the supreme or superior court of the state where the cause shall be tried, “ well and truly to hear and determine the matter in question, according to the best of his judgment, without favor or affection, or hope of reward ;” provided also, that no state shall be deprived of territory for the benefit of the United States.

All controversies concerning the private right of soil, claimed under different grants of two or more states, whose jurisdiction, as they may respect such lands, and the states that passed such grants, are adjusted, the said grants or either of them, being at the same time claimed to have originated antecedent to such settlement of jurisdiction, shall, on the petition of either party to the congress of the United States, be determined as near as may be, in the same manner as before prescribed for deciding disputes, respecting territorial jurisdiction between different states.

The United States, in congress assembled, shall have the sole and exclusive power of regulating the alloy and value of coin, struck by their own authority, or by that of the respective states ; fixing the standard of weights and measures throughout the United States ; regulating trade, and managing all affairs with the Indians, not members of any of the states, provided that the legislative rights of any state, within its own limits, be not infringed or violated. Establishing and regulating post offices, from one state to another, throughout the United States, and exacting such postages on the papers passing through them as may be requisite to defray the expenses of such offices ; appointing all the officers of the naval forces, and commissioning all officers whatever, in the service of the United States ; making rules for the governing and regulating of the said land and naval forces, and directing their operations.

The United States, in congress assembled, shall have authority to appoint a committee to sit in the recess of congress, to be denominated the *Committee of the States*, to consist of one delegate from each state, and to appoint such other committees and civil officers, as shall be necessary for managing the general affairs of the United States, under their direction ; to appoint one of their number to preside, provided no person be allowed to serve in the office of president, for more than one year, in any term of three years ; to ascertain the necessary sums of money to be raised for the service of the United States, and to appropriate and apply the same for defraying the public expences ; to borrow money or emit bills on the credit of the United States, transmitting every half year to the several states, an account of the sums of money so borrowed or emitted ; to build and equip a navy, to agree upon the number of land forces, and to make requisitions from each state for its quota, in proportion to the number of white inhabitants in such state ; which requisition shall be binding, and thereupon the legislature of each state shall appoint the regimental officers, raise the men, and clothe, arm and equip them, in a soldier-like manner, at the expence of the United States ; and the officers and men so clothed, armed and equipped, shall march to the place appointed, within the time agreed upon by the United States, in congress assembled ; but if the United States, in congress assembled, shall upon consideration of circumstances, judge proper that any state should not raise men, or should raise a less number than its

quota, and that any other state should raise a greater number than its quota, such extra number shall be raised, officered, clothed, armed and equipped, in the same manner as the quota of such state, unless the legislature of such state shall judge that such extra number cannot be safely spared out of the same. In such case, they shall raise, officer, clothe, arm, and equip, as many of such extra number, as they judge can be safely spared. And the officers and men, so clothed and equipped, shall march to the place appointed, and within the time agreed on by the United States, in congress assembled.

The United States, in congress assembled, shall never engage in war, nor grant letters of marque and reprisal in time of peace, nor enter into any treaties or alliances, nor coin money, nor regulate the value thereof, nor ascertain the sums and expenses necessary for the defence and welfare of the United States, or any of them ; nor emit bills of credit, nor borrow money on the credit of the United States, nor appropriate money, nor agree upon the number of vessels of war to be built or purchased, or the number of land or sea forces to be raised, nor appoint a commander-in-chief of the army or navy, unless nine states shall assent to the same ; nor shall a question on any point, except for adjournment from day to day, be determined, unless by the votes of a majority of the United States, in congress assembled.

The congress of the United States, shall have power to adjourn to any time within the year, and to any place within the United States, so that no period of adjournment be for a longer space than six months, and shall publish the journals of their proceedings monthly, except such parts thereof relating to treaties, alliances, or military operations, as in their judgment require secrecy ; and the yeas and nays of the delegation of each state, on any question, shall be entered upon the journals when it is desired by any delegate ; and the delegates of a state, or either of them, at his or their request, shall be furnished with a copy of said journal, except such parts as are above excepted, to lay before the legislatures of the several states.

Article 10. The committee of the states, or any nine of them, shall be authorised to execute, in the recess of congress, such of the powers of congress as the United States, in congress assembled, by the consent of the nine states, shall see fit, from time to time, to vest them with ; provided that no

power be delegated to the said committee, for the exercise of which, by the articles of confederation, the voice of nine states, in the congress of the United States assembled, is requisite.

Article 11. Canada acceding to this confederation; and joining in the measures of the United States, shall be admitted into, and be entitled to all the advantages of this union; but no other colony shall be admitted into the same, unless such admission be agreed to by nine states.

Article 12. All bills of credit emitted, monies borrowed, and debts contracted, by, or under the authority of congress, before the assembling of the United States, in pursuance of the present confederation, shall be deemed and considered as a charge against the United States, for payment and satisfaction whereof, the said United States, and the public faith are hereby solemnly pledged.

Art. 13. Every state shall abide by the determinations of the United States, in congress assembled, on all questions, which by this confederation are submitted to them. And the articles of this confederation, shall be inviolably observed by every state, and the union shall be perpetual; nor shall any alteration, at any time hereafter, be made in any of them; unless such alteration be agreed to in a congress of the United States, and be afterward confirmed by the legislature of every state."

This confederation was submitted to the several states for their approbation and acceptance.† and when duly approved by all the states, went into operation, and became the palladium of the United States, through the revolutionary war, and down to the year 1789, when the present federal constitution was organized, and went into operation.

Such was the virtue of the American character, that even this rope of sand possessed powers and energies sufficient to manage the affairs of a rising state, and regulate and control all their essential concerns, for the best interests of the whole; but when peace had removed the pressure of the common danger, and private interest began to claim precedence of the public good, and corrupt intrigue began to trample upon public virtue and public rights, then it became necessary to revise this compact, and raise in its place that stupendous monument of wisdom and virtue, the federal constitution.

† Twelve states ratified this confederation, in December following.

## [NOTE C.]

## CONSTITUTION OF THE UNITED STATES,

As proposed by the convention held at Philadelphia, September 17th, 1787, and ratified by the several States ; with the subsequent amendments.

## PREAMBLE.

We, the people of the United States, in order to form a more perfect union, establish justice, ensure domestic tranquillity, provide for the common defence, promote the general welfare, and secure the blessings of liberty to ourselves and our posterity, do ordain and establish this constitution, for the United States of America.

## ARTICLE I.

Section 1. All legislative powers herein granted, shall be vested in a congress of the United States, which shall consist of a senate, and a house of representatives.

Section 2. The house of representatives shall be composed of members chosen every second year, by the people of the several states ; and the electors in each state, shall have the qualifications requisite for the most numerous branch of the state legislature.

No person shall be a representative who has not attained to the age of twenty-five years, and been seven years a citizen of the United States, and who shall not, when elected, be an inhabitant of that state in which he shall be chosen.

Representatives and direct taxes, shall be apportioned among the several states, which may be included within this union, according to their respective numbers, which shall be determined by adding to the whole number of free persons, including those bound to service for a term of years, and excluding Indians not taxed, three fifths of all other persons. The actual enumeration shall be made within three years after the first meeting of the congress of the United States, and within every subsequent term of ten years, in such manner as they shall by law direct. The number of representatives shall not exceed one for every thirty thousand ; but each state shall

have, at least, one representative. And until such enumeration shall be made, the state of New-Hampshire shall be entitled to choose three—Massachusetts eight—Rhode-Island and Providence Plantations one—Connecticut five—New-York six—New-Jersey four—Pennsylvania eight—Delaware one—Maryland six—Virginia ten—North Carolina five—South-Carolina five—and Georgia three.

When vacancies happen in the representation from any state, the executive authority thereof, shall issue writs of election, to fill such vacancies.

The house of representatives shall choose their speaker, and other officers, and shall have the sole power of impeachment.

Section 3. The senate of the United States, shall be composed of two senators from each state, chosen by the legislature thereof, for six years ; and each senator shall have one vote.

Immediately after they shall be assembled, in consequence of the first election, they shall be divided as equally as may be, into three classes. The seats of the senators of the first class, shall be vacated at the expiration of the second year ; of the second class, at the expiration of the fourth year ; and of the third class, at the expiration of the sixth year ; so that one-third may be chosen every second year. And if vacancies happen by resignation, or otherwise, during the recess of the legislature of any state, the executive thereof may make temporary appointments, until the next meeting of the legislature, which shall then fill the vacancies.

No person shall be senator, who has not attained to the age of thirty years, and been nine years a citizen of the United States, and who shall not, when elected, be an inhabitant of that state for which he shall be chosen.

The vice-president of the United States, shall be president of the senate ; but shall have no vote, unless they be equally divided.

The senate shall choose their other officers, and also a president pro tempore, in the absence of the vice-president, or when he shall exercise the office of president of the United States.

The senate shall have the sole power to try all impeachments. When sitting for that purpose, they shall be on oath or affirmation. When the president of the United States is tried, the chief justice shall preside ; and no person shall be

convicted, without the concurrence of two-thirds of the members present.

Judgment, in cases of impeachment, shall not extend further than removal from office, and disqualification to hold and enjoy any office of honor, trust or profit, under the United States ; but the party convicted, shall nevertheless, be liable and subject to indictment, trial, judgment, and punishment, according to law.

Section 4. The times, places and manner of holding elections for senators and representatives, shall be prescribed in each state, by the legislature thereof ; but the congress may at any time by law, make or alter such regulations, except as to the place of choosing senators.

The congress shall assemble, at least once in every year, and such meeting shall be on the first Monday in December, unless they shall by law appoint a different day.

Section 5. Each house shall be the judge of the elections, returns, and qualifications of its own members, and a majority of each, shall constitute a quorum to do business ; but a smaller number may adjourn from day to day, and may be authorised to compel the attendance of absent members, in such manner and under such penalties, as each house may provide.

Each house may determine the rules of its proceedings ; punish its members for disorderly behavior, and with the concurrence of two-thirds may expel a member.

Each house shall keep a journal of its proceedings, and from time to time, publish the same, excepting such parts as may in their judgment, require secrecy ; and the yeas and nays of the members of either house, on any question, shall at the desire of one-fifth of those present, be entered on the journal.

Neither house, during the session of congress, shall, without the consent of the other, adjourn for more than three days, nor to any other place than that, in which the two houses shall be sitting.

Section 6. The senators and representatives shall receive a compensation for their services, to be ascertained by law, and paid out of the treasury of the United States. They shall in all cases, except treason, felony and breach of the peace, be privileged from arrest, during their attendance at the session of their respective houses, and in going to and from the

same. And for any speech or debate in either house, they shall not be questioned in any other place.

No senator or representative shall, during the time for which he was elected, be appointed to any civil office, under the authority of the United States, which shall have been created, or the emoluments of which shall have been increased during such time ; and no person holding any office under the United States, shall be a member of either house, during his continuance in office.

Section 7. All bills for raising revenue, shall originate in the house of representatives ; but the senate may propose or concur with amendments, as in other bills.

Every bill which shall have passed the house of representatives and the senate, shall, before it becomes a law, be presented to the president of the United States. If he approve, he shall sign it ; but if not, he shall return it with his objections, to that house in which it shall have originated, who shall enter the objections at large, on their journal, and proceed to re-consider it. If, after such re-consideration, two-thirds of that house shall agree to pass the bill, it shall be sent, together with the objections, to the other house, by which it shall likewise be re-considered, and if approved by two-thirds of that house, it shall become a law. But in all such cases, the votes of both houses, shall be determined by yeas and nays ; and the names of the persons voting for or against the bill, shall be entered on the journal of each house, respectively. If any bill shall not be returned by the president in ten days, (Sundays excepted) after it shall have been presented to him, the same shall be a law, in like manner as if he had signed it ; unless the congress by their adjournment, prevent its return, in which case it shall not be a law.

Every order, resolution, or vote, to which the concurrence of the senate and house of representatives may be necessary, (except on a question of adjournment) shall be presented to the president of the United States, and before the same shall take effect, shall be approved by him, or being disapproved by him, shall be re-passed by two-thirds of the senate and house of representatives, according to the rules and limitations prescribed in the case of a bill.

Section 8. The congress shall have power to lay and collect taxes, duties, imposts and excises ; to pay the debt of the United States, and provide for the common defence and general welfare of the United States ; but all duties, imposts and excises, shall be uniform throughout the United States,



To borrow money on the credit of the United States ; to regulate commerce with foreign nations, and among the several states, and with the Indian tribes ; to establish an uniform rule of naturalization, and uniform laws on the subject of bankruptcy, throughout the United States. To coin money ; regulate the value thereof, and of foreign coin ; and fix the standard of weights and measures ; to provide for the punishment of counterfeiting the securities and current coin of the United States. To establish post-offices and post-roads ; to promote the progress of science and useful arts, by securing for limited times, to authors and inventors, the exclusive right to their respective writings and discoveries. To constitute tribunals inferior to the supreme court ; to define and punish piracies and felonies, committed on the high seas, and offences against the law of nations. To declare war ; grant letters of marque and reprisal, and make rules concerning captures on land and water ; to raise and support armies ; but no appropriation of monies for that use, shall be for a longer term than two years ; to provide and maintain a navy ; to make rules and regulations for the land and naval forces. To provide for calling forth the militia, to execute the laws of the Union, suppress insurrections, and repel invasions. To provide for organizing, arming and disciplining the militia, and for governing such part of them as may be employed in the service of the United States ; reserving to the states respectively, the appointment of the officers, and the authority of training the militia, according to the discipline prescribed by congress. To exercise exclusive legislation, in all cases, whatsoever, over such district (not exceeding ten miles square) as may, by the cession of particular states, and the acceptance of congress, become the seat of the government of the United States, and to exercise like authority over all such places, purchased by the consent of the legislature of the state in which the same shall be, for the erection of forts, dock-yards, and other needful buildings. And to make all laws, which may be necessary for carrying into execution the foregoing powers, vested by this constitution, in the government of the United States, or in any department or office thereof.

Section 9. The migration or importation of such persons, as any of the states now existing, shall think proper to admit, shall not be prohibited by congress, prior to the year one thousand eight hundred and eight ; but a duty may be impos-

ed on such importation, not exceeding ten dollars per each person.

The privileges of the writs of habeas corpus, shall not be suspended unless in cases of rebellion or invasion, the public safety may require it.

No bill of attainder or ex post facto law shall be passed. No capitation, or other direct tax shall be laid, unless in proportion to the census or enumeration herein before directed to be taken. No tax or duty shall be laid upon any articles exported from any state.

No preference shall be given by any regulation of commerce or revenue, to the ports of one state over those of another : nor shall vessels bound to or from one state, be obliged to enter, clear, or pay duties in another.

No monies shall be drawn from the treasury, but in consequence of appropriations made by law ; and a regular statement and account of the receipts and expenditures of all public monies, shall be published from time to time.

No title of nobility, shall be granted by the United States. And no person holding any office of profit or trust, under them, shall, without the consent of congress, accept of any present, emolument, office, or title of any kind whatever, from any king, prince, or foreign state.

Section 10. No state shall enter into any treaty, alliance or confederation ; grant letters of marque and reprisal : coin money ; emit bills of credit ; make any thing but gold and silver a tender in payment of debts : pass any bills of attainder or ex post facto law, or law impairing the obligation of contracts, or grant any title of nobility.

No state shall, without the consent of congress, lay any impost, or duties on imports or exports, except what may be absolutely necessary for executing its inspection laws : and the net produce of all duties and imposts laid by any state, on imports and exports, shall be for the use of the treasury of the United States : and all such laws be subject to the revision and control of congress.

No state shall, without the consent of congress, lay any duty of tonnage, keep troops, or ships of war, in time of peace ; enter into any engagement or compact with another state, or with a foreign power, or engage in war, unless actually invaded, or in such imminent danger as will not admit of delay.

## ARTICLE II.

Section 1. The executive power shall be vested in a president of the United States of America. He shall hold his office during the term of four years, and together with the vice-president, chosen for the same term, be elected as follows :

Each state shall appoint, in such manner as the legislature thereof may direct, a number of electors, equal to the whole number of senators and representatives to which the state may be entitled in the congress ; but no senator or representative, or person holding an office of trust or profit, under the United States, shall be appointed an elector.

The electors shall meet in their respective states, and vote by ballot, for two persons, of whom one at least, shall not be an inhabitant of the same state with themselves. And they shall make a list of all the persons voted for, and the number of votes for each ; which list they shall sign and certify, and transmit sealed, to the seat of government of the United States, directed to the president of the senate. The president of the senate shall, in the presence of the senate and house of representatives, open all the certificates, and the votes shall then be counted. The person having the greatest number of votes, shall be president, if such number be a majority of the whole number of electors appointed ; and if there be more than one who shall have such majority, and have an equal number of votes, than the house of representatives shall immediately choose by ballot, one of them for president.— And if no person have a majority, then from the five highest on the list, the said house shall in like manner, choose the president. But in choosing the president, the votes shall be taken by states ; the representatives of each state, having one vote. A quorum for this purpose, shall consist of a member or members from two-thirds of the states, and a majority of all the states shall be necessary to a choice. In every case, after the choice of the president, the person having the greatest number of votes of the electors, shall be vice-president. But if there be two or more who have equal votes, the senate shall choose from them by ballot, the vice-president.

The congress may determine the time of choosing the electors, and the day on which they shall give their votes ; which day shall be the same throughout the United States.

No person, except a natural born citizen, or a citizen of the United States, at the time of the adoption of this constitution,

shall be eligible to the office of president ; neither shall any person be eligible to that office, who shall not have attained to the age of thirty-five years, and been fourteen years a resident within the United States.

In case of the removal of the president from office, or of his death, resignation, or inability to discharge the powers and duties of that office, the same shall devolve on the vice-president ; and the congress may provide by law, for the case of removal, death, resignation, or inability, both of the president and vice-president, declaring what officer shall then act as president, and such officer shall act accordingly, until the disability be removed, or a president be elected.

The president shall at stated times, receive for his services, a compensation which shall neither be increased nor diminished during the period for which he shall have been elected : and he shall not receive within that period any other emolument from the United States, or any of them.

Before he enter upon the execution of his office, he shall take the following oath or affirmation : I do solemnly swear (or affirm) that I will faithfully execute the office of president of the United States, and will to the best of my ability, preserve, protect and defend the constitution of the U. States.

Section 2. The president shall be commander-in-chief of the army and navy of the United States : and of the militia of the several states, when called into actual service of the United States : he may require the opinion in writing, of the principal officer in each of the executive departments, upon any subjects relating to the duties of their respective offices : and he shall have power to grant reprieves or pardons for offences against the United States, except in cases of impeachment.

He shall have the power, by and with the advice and consent of the senate, to make treaties, provided two-thirds of the senators present, concur ; and he shall nominate, and by and with the advice and consent of the senate, appoint ambassadors, other public ministers and consuls, judges of the supreme court, and all other officers of the United States, whose appointments are not herein otherwise provided for, and which shall be established by law. But the congress may, by law, vest the appointment of such inferior officers, as they think proper, in the president alone, in the courts of law, or the heads of departments.

The president shall have the power to fill all vacancies

that may happen during the recess of the senate, by granting commissions, which shall expire at the end of the next session.

Section 3. He shall from time to time, give to the congress, information of the state of the Union, and recommend to their consideration, such measures as he shall judge necessary and expedient. He may, on extraordinary occasions, convene both houses of congress, or either of them; and in case of disagreement between them, with respect to the time of adjournment, he may adjourn them to such time and place as he shall think proper. He shall receive ambassadors and other public ministers. He shall take care that the laws are faithfully executed, and shall commission all the officers of the United States.

Section 4. The president, vice-president and all the officers of the United States shall be removed from office, on impeachment for, and conviction of, treason, bribery, or other high crimes and misdemeanors.

#### ARTICLE III.

Section 1. The judicial power of the United States, shall be vested in one supreme court, and in such inferior courts as the congress may, from time to time, ordain and establish. The judges, both of the supreme and inferior courts, shall hold their offices during good behaviour, and shall, at stated times, receive for their services, a compensation, which shall not be diminished during their continuance in office.

Section 2. The judicial power shall extend to all cases in law and equity, arising under this constitution, the laws of the United States, and treaties made under their authority; to all cases affecting ambassadors, other public ministers and consuls; to all cases of admiralty and maritime jurisdiction; to controversies, to which the United States shall be a party; to controversies, between two or more states; between a state, and citizens of another state; between citizens of different states; between citizens of the same state, claiming lands under grants of different states, and between a state, or the citizens thereof, and foreign states, citizens or subjects.

In all cases affecting ambassadors, or other public ministers, and consuls, and those in which a state shall be a party, the supreme court shall have original jurisdiction. The other cases before mentioned, the supreme court shall have appellate jurisdiction, both as to law and fact, with such exceptions, and under such regulations, as the congress shall make.

The trial of all crimes, except in cases of impeachment, shall be by jury, and such trial shall be held in the state where the said crimes shall have been committed ; but when not committed within any state, the trial shall be at such place or places, as the congress shall by law, have directed.

Section 3. Treason against the United States, shall consist only in levying war against them, or in adhering to their enemies, giving them aid and comfort. No person shall be convicted of treason, unless on the testimony of two witnesses to the same overt act, or on confession in open court.

The congress shall have power to declare the punishment of treason ; but no attainder of treason, shall work corruption of blood or forfeiture, except during the life of the person attainted.

#### ARTICLE IV.

Section 1. Full faith and credit shall be given in each state, to the public acts, records, and judicial proceedings of every other state. And the congress may, by general laws, prescribe the manner in which such acts, records, and proceedings shall be proved, and the effect thereof.

Section 2. The citizens of each state, shall be entitled to all the privileges and immunities, of the citizens of the several states.

A person charged with treason, felony or other crime, in any state, who shall flee from justice, and be found in another state, shall, on demand from the executive authority of the state, from which he fled, be delivered up, to be removed to the state having jurisdiction of the crime.

No person held to service or labor in one state, under the laws thereof, escaping into another, shall in consequence of any law or regulations therein, be discharged from such service or labor, but shall be delivered up, on claim of the party to whom such service or labor may be due.

Section 3. New states may be admitted by the congress, into this Union ; but no new state shall be formed or erected, within the jurisdiction of any other state, nor any state be formed by the junction of two or more states, or parts of states, without the consent of the legislatures of the states concerned, as well as of the congress.

The congress shall have power to dispose of, and make all needful rules and regulations, respecting the territory, and

other property belonging to the United States ; and nothing in this constitution shall be so construed, as to prejudice any claims of the United states, or any particular state.

Section 4. The United States shall guarantee to every state in this Union, a republican form of government ; and shall protect each of them against invasion ; and on application of the legislature, or of the executive, (when the legislature cannot be convened) against domestic violence.

#### ARTICLE V.

The congress, whenever two-thirds of both houses shall deem it necessary, shall propose amendments to this constitution ; or on the application of the legislatures of two-thirds of the states, shall call a convention for proposing amendments, which in either case, shall be valid to all intents and purposes, as part of this constitution, when ratified by the legislatures of three fourths of the several states, or by conventions in three-fourths thereof, as the one or the other mode may be proposed by the congress ; provided, that no amendment which may be made prior to the year one thousand eight hundred and eight, shall in any manner affect the first and fourth clauses in, the ninth section of the first article ; and that no state without its consent, shall be deprived of its equal suffrage in the senate.

#### ARTICLE VI.

All debts contracted, and engagements entered into, before the adoption of this constitution, shall be as valid against the United States, under this constitution, as under the confederation.

This constitution, and the laws of the United States, which shall be made in pursuance thereof, and all treaties made, or which shall be made, under the authority of the United States, shall be the supreme law of the land ; and the judge in every state shall be bound thereby, any thing in the constitution, or laws of any state to the contrary, notwithstanding.

The senators and representatives before mentioned, and the members of the several state legislature, and all executive and judicial officers, both of the United States and of the several states, shall be bound by oath or affirmation, to support this constitution ; but no religious test shall ever be required, as a qualification to any office or public trust, under the United States.

## ARTICLE VII.

The ratification of the conventions of nine states, shall be sufficient for the establishment of this constitution, between the states so ratifying the same.†

## AMENDMENTS.

Article 1. Congress shall make no law respecting the establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof, or abridging the freedom of speech, or of the press ; or the right of the people peaceably to assembly, and to petition the government for a redress of grievances.

Article 2. A well regulated militia being necessary to the security of a free state, the right of the people to keep and bear arms, shall not be infringed.

Article 3. No soldier shall, in time of peace, be quartered in any house, without the consent of the owner ; nor in time of war, but in a manner to be prescribed by law.

Article 4. The right of the people to be secure in their persons, houses, papers and effects, against unreasonable searches and seizures, shall not be violated ; and no warrants shall issue, but upon probable cause, supported by oath or affirmation, and particularly describing the place to be searched, and the persons and things to be seized.

Article 5. No person shall be held to answer for a capital or otherwise infamous crime, unless on a presentment or indictment of a grand jury, except in cases arising in the land or naval service, or in the militia, when in actual service, in time of war or public danger ; nor shall any person be subject for the same offence, to be twice put in jeopardy of life and limb ; nor shall be compelled in any criminal case, to be witness against himself, nor be deprived of life, liberty or property, without due process of law ; nor shall private property be taken for the public use, without just compensation.

Article 6. In all criminal prosecutions, the accused shall enjoy the right of a speedy and public trial, by an impartial jury of the state and district wherein the crime shall have been

† The fundamental difference between the old confederation, and new constitution rests principally on this ; the former looked to the states for support ; but the latter supports the states.



previously committed ; which district shall have been previously ascertained by law, and to be informed of the nature and cause of the accusation ; to be confronted with the witnesses against him ; to have compulsory process for obtaining witnesses in his favor, and to have the assistance of counsel, for his defence.

Article 7. In suits at common law, where the value in controversy, shall exceed twenty dollars, the right of trial by jury, shall be preserved ; and no fact tried by a jury, shall be otherwise re-examined in any court of the United States, than according to the rules of the common law.

Article 8. Excessive bail shall not be required, nor excessive fines imposed, nor cruel and unusual punishments inflicted.

Article 9. The enumeration in the constitution of certain rights, shall not be construed to deny or disparage others retained by the people.

Article 10. The powers not delegated by the constitution to the United States, nor prohibited by it to the states, are reserved to the states respectively, or to the people.

Article 11. The judicial power of the United States, shall not be construed to extend to any suit in law or equity, commenced, or prosecuted against one of the United States, by citizens of another state, or by citizens or subjects of a foreign state.

Article 12. (In lieu of the third paragraph of the first section of the second article.) The electors shall meet in their respective states, and vote by ballot for president and vice-president, one of whom at least, shall not be an inhabitant of the same state with themselves. They shall name in their ballots, the person voted for as president, and in distinct ballots, the person voted for as vice-president ; and they shall make distinct lists of all persons voted for as president, and of all persons voted for as vice-president, and of the number of votes for each : which lists they shall sign and certify, and transmit, sealed, to the seat of the government of the United States, directed to the president of the senate. The president of the senate shall, in the presence of the senate and house of representatives, open all the certificates, and the votes shall then be counted. The person having the greatest number of votes for president, shall be the president, if such number be a majority of the whole number of electors appointed ; but if no person have such majority, then from the persons having the highest number, not exceeding three, or

the list of those voted for as president, the house of representatives shall choose immediately, by ballot, the president. But in choosing the president, the votes shall be taken by states ; the representatives from each state having one vote. A quorum for this purpose, shall consist of a member or members from two-thirds of the states, and a majority of all the states shall be necessary to a choice. And if the house of representatives shall not choose a president, whenever the right of choice shall devolve upon them, before the 4th day of March, next following, then the vice-president shall act as president, as in the case of the death, or other constitutional disability of the president.

The person having the greatest number of votes as vice-president, shall be vice-president, if such number be a majority of the whole number of electors appointed ; but if no person have a majority, then from the two highest numbers on the list, the senate shall choose the vice-president. A quorum for this purpose, shall consist of two-thirds of the whole number of senators, and a majority of the whole number, shall be necessary to a choice. But no person constitutionally ineligible to the office of president, shall be eligible to the office of vice-president.

This 12th article was ratified in 1804.

---

[NOTE D.]

*By the Congress of the United States of America.*

### MANIFESTO.

“These United States having been driven to hostilities by the oppressive and tyrannous measures of Great Britain ; having been compelled to commit the essential rights of man to the decision of arms ; and having been at length forced to shake off a yoke, which had grown too burdensome to bear, they declared themselves free and independent.

Confiding in the justice of their cause ; confiding in him, who disposes of human events, although weak and unprovided, they set the power of their enemies at defiance.

In this confidence they have continued, through the various fortune of three bloody campaigns, unawed by the powers,

unsubdued by the barbarity of their foes. Their virtuous citizens have borne, without repining, the loss of many things, which made life desirable. Their brave troops have patiently endured the hardships and dangers of a situation, fruitful in both beyond example.

The congress, considering themselves bound to love their enemies, as children of that being, who is equally the father of all, and desirous, since they could not prevent, at least to alleviate the calamities of war, have studied to spare those who were in arms against them, and to lighten the chains of captivity.

The conduct of those serving under the king of Great Britain, hath, with some few exceptions, been diametrically opposite. They have laid waste the open country, burned the defenceless villages, and butchered the citizens of America.— Their prisons have been the slaughter houses of her soldiers ; their ships of her seamen ; and the severest injuries have been aggravated, by the grossest insults.

Foiled in their vain attempt to subjugate the unconquerable spirit of freedom, they have meanly assailed the representatives of America, with bribes, with deceit, and the servility of adulation. They have made a mock of humanity, by the wanton destruction of men ; they have made a mock of religion, by impious appeals to God, whilst in the violation of his sacred commands ; they have made a mock even of reason itself, by endeavoring to prove, that the liberty and happiness of America, could safely be entrusted to those, who have *sold their own*, unawed by the sense of virtue or of shame.

Treated with the contempt, which such conduct deserved, they have applied to individuals ; they have solicited them to break the bonds of allegiance, and imbrue their souls with the blackest of crimes ; but fearing that none could be found, through these United States, equal to the wickedness of their purpose, to influence weak minds, they have threatened more wide devastation.

While the shadow of hope remained, that our enemies could be taught by our example, to respect those laws, which are held sacred among civilized nations, and to comply with the dictates of a religion, which they pretend, in common with us to believe and revere, they have been left to the influence of that religion, and that example. But since their incorrigible dispositions cannot be touched by kindness and compassion, it

becomes our duty by other means, to vindicate the rights of humanity.

We, therefore, the congress of the United States of America, do solemnly declare and proclaim, that if our enemies presume to execute their threats, or persist in their present career of barbarity, we will take such exemplary vengeance as shall deter others from a like conduct. We appeal to that God who searcheth the hearts of men, for the rectitude of our intentions. And in his holy presence declare, that as we are not moved by any light and hasty suggestions of anger or revenge, so through every possible change of fortune, we will adhere to this our determination.

Done in congress, by unanimous consent, the 30th day of October, 1778.

Attest,

CHARLES THOMPSON, Sec'y.

---

[NOTE E.]

### WASHINGTON'S FAREWELL ADDRESS.

*Friends and Fellow-Citizens :—*

The period for a new election of a citizen to administer the executive government of the United States, being not far distant, and the time actually arrived, when your thoughts must be employed in designating the person, who is to be clothed with that important trust, it appears to me proper, especially as it may conduce to a more distinct expression of the public voice, that I should now apprise you of the resolution I have formed, to decline being considered among the number of those, out of whom a choice is to be made. I beg you, at the same time, to do me the justice to be assured, that this resolution has not been taken, without a strict regard to all the considerations appertaining to the relation, which binds a dutiful citizen to his country ; and that, in withdrawing the tender of service, which silence in my situation might imply, I am influenced by no diminution of zeal for your future interest ; no deficiency of grateful respect for your past kindness ; but am supported by a full conviction, that the step is compatible with both.

The acceptance of, and continuance hitherto in the office, to which your suffrages have twice called me, have been a uniform sacrifice of inclination, to the opinion of duty, and to a deference for what appeared to be your desire. I constantly

hoped, that it would have been much earlier in my power, consistent with motives, which I was not at liberty to disregard, to return to that retirement from which I had been reluctantly drawn. The strength of my inclination to do this, previous to the last election; had even led to the preparation of an address to declare it to you ; but mature reflection on the then perplexing and critical posture of our affairs with foreign nations, and the unanimous advice of persons, entitled to my confidence, impelled me to abandon the idea.

I rejoice that the state of your concerns, external as well as internal, no longer renders the pursuit of inclination incompatible with the sentiment of duty, or propriety ; and am persuaded, whatever partiality may be retained for my services, that in the present circumstances of our country, you will not disapprove my determination to retire.

The impressions with which I first undertook the arduous trust were explained on the proper occasion. In the discharge of this trust I will only say, that I have, with good intentions, contributed towards the organization and administration of the government, the best exertions of which a very fallible judgment was capable. Not unconscious, in the outset, of the inferiority of my qualifications, experience in my own eyes, perhaps still more in the eyes of others, has strengthened the motives to diffidence of myself ; and every day the increasing weight of years admonishes me more and more, that the shade of retirement is as necessary to me, as it will be welcome. Satisfied that if any circumstances have given peculiar value to my services, they were temporary, I have the consolation to believe, that while choice and prudence invite me to quit the political scene, patriotism does not forbid it.

In looking forward to the moment, which is intended to terminate the career of my public life, my feelings do not permit me to suspend the deep acknowledgment of that debt of gratitude, which I owe to my beloved country, for the many honors it has conferred upon me ; still more, for the steadfast confidence with which it has supported me ; and for the opportunities I have thence enjoyed, of manifesting my inviolable attachment, by services faithful and persevering, though in usefulness unequal to my zeal. If benefits have resulted to our country from these services, let it always be remembered to your praise, and as an instructive example in our annals, that under circumstances, in which the passions, agitated in ev-

ery direction, were liable to mislead, amidst appearances sometimes dubious—vicissitudes of fortune often discouraging—in situations in which not unfrequently want of success has countenanced the spirit of criticism—the constancy of your support, was the essential prop of the efforts, and a guarantee of the plans by which they were effected.

Profoundly penetrated with this idea, I shall carry it with me to my grave, as a strong incitement to unceasing vows, that Heaven may continue to you the choicest tokens of its beneficence—that your union and brotherly affection may be perpetual—that the free constitution, which is the work of your hands, may be sacredly maintained—that its administration in every department, may be stamped with wisdom and virtue—that, in fine, the happiness of the people of these states, under the auspices of liberty, may be made complete, by so careful a preservation, and so prudent a use of this blessing, as will acquire to them the glory of recommending it to the applause, the affection, and the adoption of every nation, which is yet a stranger to it.

Here, perhaps, I ought to stop. But a solicitude for your welfare, which cannot end but with my life, and the apprehension of danger, natural to that solicitude, urge me, on an occasion like the present, to offer to your solemn contemplation, and to recommend to your frequent review, some sentiments, which are the result of much reflection, of no inconsiderable observation, and which appear to me all important to the permanency of your felicity as a people. These will be offered to you with the more freedom, as you can only see in them the disinterested warnings of a parting friend, who can possibly have no personal motives to bias his council. Nor can I forget as an encouragement to it, your indulgent reception of my sentiments on a former and not dissimilar occasion. Interwoven as is the love of liberty with every ligament of your hearts, no recommendation of mine is necessary to fortify or confirm the attachment.

The unity of government, which constitutes you one people, is also now dear to you. It is justly so; for it is a main pillar in the edifice of your real independence, the support of your tranquility at home, your peace abroad; of your safety; of your prosperity; of that very liberty, which you so highly prize. But as it is easy to foresee, that from different causes, and from different quarters, much pains will be taken, and many artifices employed to weaken in your minds the con-

viction of this truth ; as this is the point in your political fortress, against which the batteries of internal and external enemies will be most constantly and actively (though often covertly and insidiously) directed, it is of infinite moment, that you should properly estimate the immense value of your national union, to your collective and individual happiness ; that you should cherish a cordial, habitual, and immoveable attachment to it ; accustoming yourselves to think and speak of it, as the palladium of your political safety and prosperity ! watching for its preservation with jealous anxiety ; discountenancing whatever may suggest, even a suspicion, that it can in any event be abandoned ; and indignantly frowning upon the first dawning of every attempt, to alienate any portion of our country from the rest, or to enfeeble the sacred ties, which now link together the various parts.

For this, you have every inducement of sympathy and interest. Citizens by birth or choice, of a common country, that country has a right to concentrate your affections. The name of America, which belongs to you in your national capacity, must always exalt the just pride of patriotism, more than any appellation derived from local discriminations. With slight shades of difference you have the same religion, manners, habits, and political principles. You have in a common cause fought and triumphed together ; the independence and liberty you possess are the work of joint councils, and joint efforts, of common dangers, suffering and successes. But these considerations, however powerfully they address themselves to your sensibility, are greatly outweighed by those, which apply more immediately to your interest. Here every portion of our country finds the most commanding motives, for carefully guarding and preserving the union of the whole.

The north, in an unrestrained intercourse with the south, protected by the equal laws of common government, finds in the productions of the latter great additional resources of maritime and commercial enterprise, and precious materials of manufacturing industry. The south, in the same intercourse, benefited by the agency of the north, sees its agriculture grow, and its commerce expand. Turning partly into its own channels the seamen of the north, it finds its particular navigation invigorated ; and while it contributes, in different ways, to nourish and increase the general mass of the national navigation, it looks forward to the protection of a maritime strength, to which itself is unequally adapted. The east, in a like inter-

course with the west, already finds, and in the progressive improvement of interior communication, by land and water, will more and more find, a vent for the commodities, which it brings from abroad, or manufactures at home. The west derives from the east, supplies requisite to its growth and comfort—and what is perhaps of still greater consequence, it must of necessity owe the secure enjoyment of indispensable outlets for its own productions, to the weight, influence, and future maritime strength of the Atlantic side of the Union, directed by an indissoluble community of interest, as one nation. Any other tenure, by which the west can hold this essential advantage, whether derived from its own separate strength, or from an apostate and unnatural connection with any foreign power, must be intrinsically precarious.

While then every part of our country, thus feels an immediate and peculiar interest in union, all the parts combined cannot fail to find in the united mass of means and efforts, greater strength, greater resources, proportionably greater security from external danger, a less frequent interruption of their peace by foreign nations ; and what is of inestimable value ! they must derive from union, an exemption from those broils, and wars between themselves, which so frequently afflicts neighboring countries, not tied together by the same government ; which their own rivalships alone would be sufficient to produce, but which opposite foreign alliances, attachments and intrigues, would stimulate and embitter. Hence likewise, they will avoid the necessity of those overgrown military establishments, which, under any form of government, are inauspicious to liberty, and which are to be regarded as particularly hostile to republican liberty ; in this sense it is, that your union ought to be considered as a main prop of your liberty, and that the love of the one, ought to endear to you the preservation of the other.

These considerations speak a persuasive language to every reflecting and virtuous mind, and exhibit the continuance of the union, as a primary object of patriotic desire. Is there a doubt, whether a common government can embrace so large a sphere ? Let experience solve it. To listen to mere speculation, in such a case, were criminal. We are authorised to hope, that a proper organization of the whole, with auxiliary agency of governments, for the respective subdivisions, will afford a happy issue to the experiment. 'Tis well worth a fair and full experiment. With such powerful and obvious



motives to union, affecting all parts of our country, while experience shall not have demonstrated its impracticability, there will always be reason to distrust the patriotism of those, who in any quarter, may endeavor to weaken its bands.

In contemplating the causes, which may disturb our Union, it occurs as a matter of serious concern, that any ground should have been furnished for characterising parties, by geographical discriminations—northern and southern—Atlantic and western—whence designing men may endeavor to excite a belief, that there is a real difference of local interests and views. One of the expedients of party to acquire influence, within particular districts, is to misrepresent the opinions and aims of other districts. You cannot shield yourselves too much against the jealousies and heart burnings, which spring from these misrepresentations; they tend to render alien to each other, those, who ought to be bound together by fraternal affection.—The inhabitants of our western country have lately had a useful lesson on this head; they have seen, in the negotiation by the executive, and in the unanimous ratification by the senate, of the treaty with Spain, and in the universal satisfaction at that event throughout the United States, a decisive proof, how unfounded were the suspicions propagated among them, of a policy in the general government, and in the Atlantic states, unfriendly to their interests in regard to the Mississippi; they have been witnesses to the formation of two treaties, that with Great Britain, and that with Spain, which secure to them every thing they could desire, in respect to our foreign relations, towards confirming their prosperity. Will it not be their wisdom to rely, for the preservation of these advantages, on the union by which they were procured? Will they not henceforth be deaf to those advisers, if such there are, who would sever them from their brethren, and connect them with aliens?

To the efficacy and permanency of your union, a government for the whole is indispensable. No alliances, however strict, between the parts, can be an adequate substitute; they must inevitably experience the infractions and interruptions, which all alliances, in all times, have experienced. Sensible of this momentous truth, you have improved upon your first essay, by the adoption of a constitution of government, better calculated than your former, for an intimate union, and for the efficacious management of your common concerns. This government, the offspring of our own choice, uninfluenced and

unawed, adopted upon full investigation and mature deliberation, completely free in its principles, in the distribution of its powers, uniting security with energy, and containing within itself a provision for its own amendments, has a just claim to your confidence, and your support.—Respect for its authority, compliance with its laws, acquiescence in its measures, are duties enjoined by the fundamental maxims of true liberty. The basis of our political system is, the right of the people to make and alter their constitutions of government.—But, the constitution which at any time exists, till changed by an explicit and authentic act of the whole people, is sacredly obligatory upon all. The very idea of the power and the right of the people to establish government, presupposes the duty of every individual, to obey the established government.

All obstructions to the execution of the laws, all combinations and associations, under whatever plausible character, with the real design to direct, control, counteract, or awe the regular deliberation and action of the constituted authorities, are destructive of this fundamental principle, and of fatal tendency.—They serve to organize faction, to give it an artificial and extraordinary force—to put in the place of the delegated will of the nation, the will of a party, often a small but enterprising minority of the community; and according to the alternate triumphs of different parties, to make the public administration the mirror, of the ill-concerted and incongruous projects of factions, rather than the organ of consistent and wholesome plans, digested by common councils, and modified by mutual interests. However combinations, or associations of the above description, may now and then answer popular ends, they are likely, in the course of time and things, to become potent engines, by which cunning, ambitious and unprincipled men will be enabled to subvert the power of the people, and to usurp to themselves the reins of government; destroying afterwards the very engines which have lifted them to unjust dominion.

Towards the preservation of your government, and the permanency of your present happy state, it is requisite, not only that you speedily discountenance irregular oppositions to its acknowledged authority, but also that you resist with care, the spirit of innovation upon its principles, however specious the pretexts. One method of assault may be, to effect in the forms of the constitution, alterations which will impair the energy of the system, and thus to undermine, what cannot be directly

overthrown. In all the changes to which you may be invited, remember, that time and habit are at least, as necessary to fix the true character of governments, as of other human institutions—that experience is the surest standard, by which to test the real tendency of the existing constitution of a country—that facility in changes upon the credit of mere hypothesis and opinion, exposes to perpetual change from the endless variety of hypothesis and opinion ; and remember, especially, that for the efficient management of your common interests, in a country so extensive as ours, a government of as much vigor as is consistent with the perfect security of liberty, is indispensable. Liberty itself, will find in such a government, with powers properly distributed and adjusted, its surest guardian. It is, indeed, little else than a name, where the government is too feeble to withstand the enterprises of faction, to confine each member of the society within the limits prescribed by the laws, and to maintain all in the secure and tranquil enjoyment of the rights of person and property.

I have already intimated to you, the danger of parties in the state, with particular reference to the founding of them on geographical discriminations.—Let me now take a more comprehensive view, and warn you, in the most solemn manner, against the baneful effects of the spirit of party, generally. This spirit, unfortunately, is inseparable from our nature, having its root in the strongest passions of the human mind. It exists under different shapes in all governments, more or less stifled, controlled or repressed ; but in those of the popular form, it is seen in its greatest rankness, and is truly their worst enemy. The alternate domination of one faction over another, sharpened by the spirit of revenge, natural to party dissention, which, in different ages and countries, has perpetrated the most horrid enormities, is itself frightful despotism. But this leads at length to a more formal and permanent despotism. The disorders and miseries, which result, gradually incline the minds of men to seek security and repose in the absolute power of an individual ; and sooner or later, the chief of some prevailing faction, more able or more fortunate than his competitors, turns his despotism to the purposes of his own elevation, on the ruins of public liberty.

Without looking forward to an extremity of this kind, (which nevertheless ought not to be entirely out of sight) the common and continual mischiefs of the spirit of party, are sufficient to make it the interest and duty of a wise people to dis-

courage and restrain it. It serves always to distract the public councils, and enfeeble the public administrations. It agitates the community, with ill-founded jealousies, and false alarms : kindles the animosity of one party against another, and fomentes occasionally, riot and insurrection. It opens the door to foreign influence and corruption, which find a facilitated access to the government itself, through the channels of party passions. Thus the policy and the will of one country, are subjected to the policy and will of another.

There is an opinion, that parties in free countries are useful checks upon the administration of the government, and serve to keep alive the spirit of liberty. This within certain limits is probably true ; and in governments of a monarchical cast, patriotism may look with indulgence, if not with favor, upon the spirit of party. But in those of a popular character, in governments purely elective, it is a spirit not to be encouraged. From their natural tendency, it is certain there will always be enough of that spirit, for every salutary purpose. And there being constant danger of excess, the effort ought to be, by force of public opinion to mitigate and assuage it. A fire not to be quenched ; it demands a uniform vigilance to prevent its bursting into a flame, lest, instead of warming, it should consume.

It is important likewise, that the habits of thinking in a free country, should inspire caution, in those intrusted with its administration, to confine themselves within their respective constitutional spheres, avoiding, in the exercise of the powers of one department, to encroach upon another. The spirit of encroachment tends, to consolidate the powers of all the departments in one, and thus to create, whatever the form of government, a real despotism. A just estimate of that love of power, and proneness to abuse it, which predominates in the human heart, is sufficient to satisfy us of the truth of this position.— The necessity of reciprocal checks in the exercise of political power, by dividing and distributing it into different depositories, and constituting each the guardian of public weal, against invasions by the others, has been evinced by experiments, ancient and modern ; some of them in our country, and under our own eyes. To preserve them, must be as necessary, as to institute them. If, in the opinion of the people, the distribution or modification of the constitutional powers be, in any particular wrong, let it be corrected by an amendment, in the way which the constitution designates. But let there be no change

by usurpation ; for though this, in one instance may be the instrument of good, it is the customary weapon by which free governments are destroyed. The precedent must always greatly overbalance in permanent evil, any partial or transient benefit, which the use can at any time yield.

Of all the dispositions and habits, which lead to political prosperity, religion and morality are indispensable supports. In vain would that man claim the tribute of patriotism, who should labor to subvert these great pillars of human happiness, these firmest props of the duties of men and citizens. The mere politician, equally with the pious man, ought to respect and to cherish them. A volume could not trace all their connections with private and public felicity. Let it simply be asked, where is the security for property, for reputation, for life, if the sense of religious obligation desert the oaths, which are the instruments of investigation in courts of justice ; and let us with caution indulge the supposition, that morality can be maintained without religion. Whatever may be conceded to the influence of refined education, on minds of peculiar structure ; reason and experience both forbid us to expect, that national morality can prevail, in exclusion of religious principle. 'Tis substantially true, that virtue or morality is a necessary spring of popular government. The rule indeed extends, with more or less force, to every species of free government. Who that is a sincere friend to it, can look with indifference upon the attempts, to shake the foundation of the fabric ?

Promote then, as an object of primary importance, institutions for the general diffusion of knowledge.—In proportion as the structure of a government gives force to public opinion, it is essential, that public opinion should be enlightened. As a very important source of strength and security, cherish public credit ; one method of preserving it is, to use it as sparingly as possible ; avoiding occasions of expense, by cultivating peace ; but remembering also, that timely disbursements to prepare for danger, frequently prevent much greater disbursements to repel it ; avoiding likewise the accumulations of debt, not only by shunning occasions of expense, but by vigorous exertions in time of peace, to discharge the debts which unavoidable wars may have occasioned, not ungenerously throwing upon posterity the burden which we ourselves ought to bear. The execution of these maxims belongs to your representatives, but it is necessary that public opinion should

co-operate. To facilitate to them the performance of their duty, it is essential that you should practically bear in mind, that towards the payment of debts there must be a revenue : to have revenue, there must be taxes ; that no taxes can be devised, which are not more or less inconvenient and unpleasant ; that the intrinsic embarrassment, inseparable from the selection of the proper object, (which is always a choice of difficulties) ought to be a decisive motive, for a candid construction of the conduct of the government in making it, and for a spirit of acquiescence in the measures for obtaining revenue, which the public exigencies may at any time dictate.

Observe good faith and justice towards all nations ; cultivate peace and harmony with all ; religion and morality enjoin this conduct ; and can it be, that good policy does not equally enjoin it ? It will be worthy of a free, enlightened, and at no distant period, a great nation, to give to mankind the magnanimous and too novel example, of a people always guided by an exalted justice and benevolence. Who can doubt, that in the course of time and things, the fruits of such a plan would richly repay any temporary advantages, which might be lost by a steady adherence to it ? Can it be, that Providence has not connected the permanent felicity of a nation, with its virtues ? The experiment, at least, is recommended by every sentiment which ennobles human nature. Alas ! is it rendered impossible by its vices ?

In the execution of such a plan, nothing is more essential, than that permanent inveterate antipathies against particular nations, and passionate attachments for others should be excluded, and that in place of them, just and amicable feelings towards all, should be cultivated. The nation, which indulges towards another an habitual hatred, or an habitual fondness, is in some degree a slave. It is a slave to its animosity, or to its affection, either of which, is sufficient to lead it astray, from its duty and its interest. Antipathy in one nation against another, disposes each more readily to offer insult and injury, to lay hold of slight causes of umbrage, and to be haughty and untractable, when accidental and trifling occasions of dispute occur. Hence frequent collisions, obstinate, envenomed, and bloody contests. The nation prompted by ill will and resentment, sometimes impels to war the government, contrary to the best calculations of policy. The government sometimes participates in the national propensity, and adopts through passion, what reason would reject ;

at other times, it may be the animosity of the nation subservient to projects of hostility instigated by pride, ambition, and other sinister and pernicious motives.—The peace often, sometimes perhaps the liberty of nations, has been the victim.

So likewise a passionate attachment of one nation for another, produces a variety of evils. Sympathy for the favorite nation, facilitating the allusion of an imaginary common interest, in cases where no real common interest exists, and infusing into one the enmities of the other, betrays the former into a participation in the quarrels, and wars of the latter, without adequate inducement or justification. It leads also to concessions to the favorite nation, of privileges denied to others, which is apt doubly to injure the nation making the concessions, by unnecessarily parting with what ought to have been retained ; and by exciting jealousy, ill-will, and a disposition to retaliate, in the parties from whom equal privileges are withheld ; and it gives to ambitious, corrupted, or deluded citizens, (who devote themselves to the favorite nation) facility to betray or sacrifice the interests of their country, without odium, sometimes even with popularity ; gliding with the appearance of a virtuous sense of obligation, a commendable deference for public opinion, or a laudable zeal for public good, the base or foolish compliances of ambition, corruption, or infatuation.

As avenues to foreign influence in innumerable ways, such attachments are particularly alarming, to the truly enlightened and independent patriot. How many opportunities do they afford, to tamper with domestic factions, to practice the arts of seduction, to mislead public opinion, to influence or awe the public councils ! Such an attachment of small or weak, towards a great and powerful nation, dooms the former to be the satellite of the latter. Against the insidious wiles of foreign influence, (I conjure you to believe me, fellow-citizens) the jealousy of a free people ought to be constantly awake ; since history and experience prove, that foreign influence is one of the most baneful foes of republican government. But that jealousy, to be useful, must be impartial ; else it becomes the instrument of the very influence to be avoided, instead of a defence against it. Excessive partiality for one foreign nation, and excessive dislike of another, cause those whom they actuate, to see danger only on one side, and serve to veil and even second the art of influence on the other. Real patriots,

who may resist the intrigues of the favorite, are liable to become suspected and odious ; while its tools and dupes usurp the applause and confidence of the people, to surrender their interests. The great rule of conduct for us, in regard to foreign nations, is, in extending our commercial relations, to have with them as little political connexion as possible. So far as we have already formed engagements, let them be fulfilled with perfect good faith.—Here let us stop.

Europe has a set of primary interests, which to us have none, or a very remote relation. Hence she must be engaged in frequent controversies, the causes of which are essentially foreign to our concerns. Hence, therefore, it must be unwise in us, to implicate ourselves by artificial ties, in the ordinary vicissitudes of her politics, or the ordinary combinations and collisions of her friendships, or enmities. Our detached and distant situation invite and enable us to pursue a different course. If we remain one people, under an efficient government, the period is not far off, when we may defy material injury from external annoyance ; when we may take such an attitude as will cause the neutrality, we may at any time resolve upon, to be scrupulously respected ; when belligerent nations, under the impossibility of making acquisitions upon us, will not lightly hazard the giving us provocation ; when we may choose peace or war, as our interest, guided by justice, shall counsel.

Why forego the advantages of so peculiar a situation ? Why quit our own, to stand upon foreign ground ? Why, by interweaving our destiny with that of any part of Europe, entangle our peace and prosperity, in the toils of European ambition, rivalship, interest, humor or caprice ? 'Tis our true policy to steer clear of permanent alliances, with any portion of the foreign world ; so far, I mean, as we are now at liberty to do it ; for let us not be understood, as capable of patronizing infidelity to existing engagements. I hold the maxim no less applicable to public, than to private affairs, that honesty is always the best policy. I repeat it, therefore, let those engagements be observed in their genuine sense. But, in my opinion, it is unnecessary, and would be unwise to extend them. Taking care always to keep ourselves, by suitable establishments, on a respectable defensive posture, we may safely trust to temporary alliances, for extraordinary emergencies.

Harmony, and liberal intercourse with all nations, are recommended by policy, humanity, and interest. But even our



commercial policy should hold an equal and impartial hand ; neither seeking, nor granting exclusive favors or preferences ; consulting the natural course of things, diffusing and diversifying by gentle means, the streams of commerce, by forcing nothing ; establishing, with powers so disposed, (in order to give trade a stable course, to define the rights of our merchants, and to enable the government to support them) conventional rules of intercourse, the best that present circumstances, and mutual opinion will permit, but temporary, and liable to be, from time to time, abandoned or varied, as experience and circumstances shall dictate ; constantly keeping in view, that 'tis folly in one nation, to look for disinterested favors from another ; that it must pay with a portion of its independence, for whatever it may expect, under that character ; that by such acceptance, it may place itself in the condition of having given equivalent, for nominal favors, and yet of being reproached with ingratitude, for not giving more. There can be no greater error, than to expect, or calculate upon real favors from nation to nation. 'Tis an allusion, which experience must cure, which a just pride ought to discard.

In offering to you, my countrymen, these counsels of an old affectionate friend, I dare not hope they will make the strong and lasting impression I could wish ; that they will control the usual current of the passions, or prevent our nation from running the course which has hitherto marked the destiny of nations. But if I may ever flatter myself, that they may be productive of some partial benefit, some occasional good ; that they may now and then recur, to moderate the fury of party spirit, to warn against the mischiefs of foreign intrigues, and guard against the impostures of pretended patriotism ; this hope will be a full recompense, for the solicitude for your welfare, by which they have been dictated. How far in the discharge of my official duties, I have been guided by the principles, which have been delineated, the public records, and other evidences of my conduct, must witness to you and to the world. To myself, the assurance of my own conscience is, that I have at least believed myself to be guided by them.

In relation to the still subsisting war in Europe, my proclamation of the 22d of April, 1793, is the index to my plan. Sanctioned by your approving voice, and by that of your representatives in both houses of congress, the spirit of that measure has continually governed me ; uninfluenced by any attempt to deter or divert me from it. After deliberate exam

ination, with the aid of the best lights I could obtain, I was well satisfied, that our country, under all the circumstances of the case, had a right to take, and was bound in duty and interest, to take a neutral position. Having taken it, I determined, as far as should depend upon me, to maintain it with moderation, perseverance and firmness.

The consideration which respects the right to hold this conduct, it is not necessary on this occasion to detail. I will only observe, that according to my understanding of the matter, that right, so far from being denied by any of the belligerent powers, has been virtually admitted by all. The duty of holding a neutral conduct may be inferred, without anything more, from the obligations, which justice and humanity impose upon every nation, in cases in which it is free to act, to maintain inviolate, the relations of peace and amity towards other nations. The inducements of interest, for observing that conduct, will best be referred to your own reflections and experience. With me, a predominant motive has been, to endeavor to gain time to our country, to settle and mature its yet recent institutions, and to progress without interruption, to that degree of strength and consistency, which is necessary to give it, humanly speaking, the command of its own fortunes.

Though in reviewing the incidents of my administration, I am unconscious of intentional error; I am nevertheless too sensible of my defects, not to think it probable, that I may have committed many errors. Whatever they may be, I fervently beseech the Almighty to avert, or mitigate the evils to which they may tend. I shall also carry with me the hope, that my country will never cease to view them with indulgence; and that after forty-five years of my life, dedicated to its service, with an upright zeal, the faults of incompetent abilities will be consigned to oblivion, as myself must soon be to the mansions of rest. Relying on its kindness in this, as in the other things, and actuated by that fervent love towards it, which is so natural to a man, who views in it the native soil of himself, and his progenitors, for several generations; I anticipate with pleasing expectation, that retreat, in which I promise myself to realise, without alloy, the sweet enjoyment of partaking, in the midst of my fellow-citizens, the benign influence of good laws, under a free government—the ever favorite object of my heart, and the happy reward, as I trust, of our mutual cares, labors and dangers.

GEORGE WASHINGTON.

A BRIEF  
**GEOGRAPHICAL VIEW**  
OF THE  
**UNITED STATES.**

*Boundaries.*—The United States are bounded on the north and northeast, by the dominions of Russia, unlocated regions of Great Britain, Upper and Lower Canada, and New-Brunswick ; southeast by the Atlantic ocean ; south by the gulf of Mexico ; and west by the Spanish dominions and the Pacific ocean.

*Face of the country, &c.*—The face of the country is intersected, and variegated, with the most extensive ranges of mountains, the longest and noblest rivers, the largest and most numerous lakes, the richest and most fertile basins, and the grandest, or most sublime natural scenes in the world.

*Mountains.*—The Rocky and Chippewan ranges on the west, and the Allegany and Blue Ridge ranges on the east, are the great chains, that form the principal sources of all the great rivers, that fall into the Pacific ocean, on the west, the gulf of Mexico on the south, and the Atlantic ocean on the east.

The range of the Rocky mountains extends from the isthmus of Darien, in a northerly direction to the northern ocean, with an average elevation of about 9000 feet above the level of the sea. Highest Peak and James' Peak are lofty elevations upon this range, that shoot up to the height of about 12,000 feet, and are covered with perennial snows. Highest Peak is considered as the most elevated land in North America, because it gives rise to the Colorado of the west, which falls into the gulf of California, and the Yellow Stone, La Platte, Arkansas, and Rio del Norte, which run into the gulf of Mexico.

West of the Rocky mountains, another range rises in California, and extending along the coast of the Pacific, at the distance of about 100 miles, terminates in mount St. Elias, near the 60th degree of north latitude, which is an elevation of about 18,000 feet above the sea.

The Chippewan range lies a few degrees east of the Rocky mountains, which extends from the Artic ocean, down into Mexico, and forms the high table-lands of that region.† From the northern parts of this range, an extensive chain shoots off, and extends to the coast of Labrador. This range divides the waters that fall into the Artic ocean, from those of the St. Lawrence.

The Masserne range shoots off from the Chippewan range, and extends in a southerly direction, between Arkansas and Red rivers, down to latitude 39 deg. 34 min. where it divides into two branches; the one extends down to the mouth of the Arkansas, where it terminates; and the other extends northerly, to the source of the Osage, and gives rise to that river. These mountains, collectively, give rise to the majestic rivers that flow into the Pacific ocean, the Northern ocean, Hudson's bay, gulf of St. Lawrence, and the gulf of Mexico.

The Apalachian or Allegany chain rises at the Chickasaw bluffs, on the southern borders of Tennessee, and taking an easterly direction, through the northern sections of Mississippi, Alabama, and Georgia, enters South Carolina, and thence taking a north-eastern direction, runs nearly parallel with the coast, until it terminates at the Catskill bluffs, on the Hudson. The average height of this range is from 1000 to 4000 feet, and average breadth about fifty miles.

The great Laurel ridge, and Cumberland mountains, that rise in Virginia, and extend into Kentucky and Tennessee, are the most considerable branches of the Allegany range.

The Blue Ridge is connected with this range, as the Chippewan is with the Rocky range; it rises near the same source and running parallel with it, terminates at West-Point, on the Hudson.

East of the Hudson, the Blue Ridge rises again, in one continuous range, called the Taghonnuc, which unites with the Green mountain range, near Bennington, and extends to Onion river, where it terminates in a bluff. It rises again north of the Onion river, and extends in broken ridges into Canada.

Another range rises in Connecticut, at the New-Haven bluff, and running north through Connecticut and Massachusetts, into Vermont, forms the Green mountain range, as above. A third range commences at East Rock, near New

† All extensive level tracts of land, upon high elevations are denominated *table-lands*.

Haven, and extending north, crosses the Connecticut at Northampton, and unites with a fourth range, that rises at Lyme, near Long-Island sound, and this united range, embraces the White Hills of New-Hampshire, and extending along the northern boundary of the United States, divides the waters of Lower Canada from those of Maine. The White Hills of this range, are the highest land in New England; being elevated about 7000 feet above the sea, capped ten or eleven months in the year with snow, and covered with white fleecy clouds, from which they derive their name.

The other mountains of the United States are numerous; but as they are insulated generally, and form no continuous ranges, their notice will not come under this head.

The grand declivities of the aforementioned mountains, form the following basins, that drain off the waters of the following rivers.

*Rivers.*—The western declivity of the Rocky mountains, forms the basin through which the Columbia or Oregon, with its grand tributaries, flows off into the Pacific ocean. This river rises in the Rocky mountains, about lat. 54 or 55, according to Carver, and near the head waters of Mackenzie's river, that flows 2000 miles into the Arctic ocean. The Oregon, receives in its course, from the southeast, the following grand tributaries. 1. Clark's river, that interlocks with the head streams of the Missouri, which approach within the distance of 300 rods, and after winding in a broad circuitous course, unites with the Oregon, about lat. 48 degrees. 2. Lewis' river, which rises near the sources of the Yellow Stone, and winding a more angular course, meets the Oregon about 130 miles below the former, in about lat. 46 deg. 3 min. 3d. The Multnomah, that rises under the Rocky mountains, in about lat. 42 degrees, and joins the Oregon in about 45 degrees. It is about 500 yards wide at its junction; but its course and length are very imperfectly known, having never been fully explored. From the last mentioned junction, the Oregon flows about 100 miles, and then falls into the Pacific ocean.

Under the eastern declivity of the same chain, rises the majestic Missouri, or king of rivers, lat. 43 deg. 31 min. and west lon. 34 deg. 54 min. The three principal head branches, are called Jefferson, Madison, and Gallatin. From the mouth of the Jefferson, to its junction with the Mississippi, is 3096 miles, and from thence to the gulf of Mexico, 1345 miles; total 4491 miles, which exceeds in extent, the naviga-

ble waters of any other river upon the globe. The cataracts of the Missouri, will compare well with those of Niagara. The descent of the former, is 362 feet in 18 miles, viz. 98 feet perpendicular, at the first pitch, 19 at the second, 47 at the third, and 26 at the fourth, and the width of the river at this cataract is about 350 yards; but the cataract of the latter, is estimated at 157 feet perpendicular descent, and the width of the river at 1320 yards.

Under the southern declivity of the northern chain, rises the great Mississippi, lat 47 deg. 47 min. that flows 3000 miles, into the gulf of Mexico, through a divided confluence, like the Nile of Egypt, the principal of which is called the Balize. This river receives the majestic Missouri, 1345 miles from its mouth, in lat. 38 deg. 50 min. It is navigable for boats of forty tons, to the falls of St. Anthony, 2400 miles from its mouth; but large ships seldom ascend above Natchez, 447 miles above its mouth, and 322 above the city of New Orleans. The rapid current of this river has formerly greatly impeded its navigation; but this obstruction is now overcome by the power of steam, and more than one hundred steam boats, of from 40 to 5 or 600 tons, perform a regular course of navigation upon the Mississippi, and its tributary streams.

Upon the western declivity of the Allegany range, rises the placid and beautiful Ohio, and after receiving numerous tributary streams, falls into the Mississippi, after meandering a course of 1188 miles from Pittsburg. at the head of navigation. The breadth of the river is from 4 to 1400 yards; but the average breadth, about 534 yards, as at Cincinnati.

All these rivers overflow their banks annually; but none so extensively as the Mississippi.

For a particular description of the numerous rivers, that rise under the declivities of the Allegany, Green, and White mountain ranges, see description of inland navigation.

*Lakes.*—The lakes of the United States are more numerous, and larger in size, than those of any other country on the globe. Lake Superior, as its name imports, is 15 or 1600 miles in circumference, which far surpasses that of any other body of fresh water. It is surrounded with a rocky shore, is subject to storms more violent than the ocean; contains numerous islands, and abounds with a great variety of valuable fish.

The next in size are Michigan, Erie, Ontario, and Cham-

plain, these are all navigable for vessels of the largest class, and have become famous for their naval combats. The other numerous lakes are too small to admit of particular notice here.

*Inland navigation.*—The navigation of the Hudson river is free for ships of the largest class to Hudson, and from thence to Albany and Troy, for sloops and steam-boats ; from thence in boats through the Erie, or western canal, more than 300 miles to Buffalo, on lake Erie, from thence to Detroit in Michigan 230 miles, for large vessels ; from thence by the straits 28 miles, lake St. Clair 20 miles, and the river St. Clair 60 miles, into lakes Huron and Michigan. From lake Huron through the canal at the rapids of St. Mary, the navigation extends through lake Superior, to the 9 mile portage, which opens the navigation of the lake of the Woods, 1100 miles from Montreal.—Here commences the navigation of the great north western chain of lakes, that extends to Hudson's bay. Another branch of this route extends from Waterford, through the northern canal to Whiteball, on lake Champlain, across the lake through the river Sorell, to the St. Lawrence, and Montreal, from thence in ships of 500 tons to the ocean on the east, 580 miles, or by a boat navigation 200 miles upon the rapids into lake Ontario, and across the lake, which is navigable for ships of the largest class, to the river Niagara 170 miles, thence by a 7 miles portage, commences the navigation of lake Erie, where it unites with the former route. This grand route from lake Erie, admits of the following branches, viz. A canal of 306 miles in extent, is now opening from Cleveland to the mouth of the river Scioto, which will unite the navigation of lake Erie with the river Ohio. Another canal is contemplated from the head waters of the Cuyahoga to the Muskinghum, another from the head waters of the Maumee to the Wabash, for the same purpose of connecting lake Erie with the Ohio. Another canal from a branch of the Maumee, through the river St. Joseph, into lake Michigan, and another from Michigan through the Chicago, to the river Illinois, which will extend the navigation to the Mississippi, and through the Missouri to its headwaters, then by a portage of about one mile, through Clark's river, and down the river Origon, to the Pacific ocean ; a distance of inland navigation not surpassed upon the face of the whole earth ; not even in Russia. Several other canals are contemplated in the western country ; but the one at the falls of the Ohio, and the other from America, across the point to the Mississippi, are in great forwardness, if not already completed ; in order

to facilitate the intercourse between Pittsburg and St. Louis, as well as between Pittsburg and New-Orleans.

Canals east of the Alleghanies are also numerous and valuable, and others are yet in contemplation only. The inland navigation of Maine will be improved, when the contemplated canal is accomplished between the river Penobscot or Kennebec, and Chaudier, to open a trade with Quebec. The canal that connects the Merrimac with Boston, has long been useful and valuable. The canal to connect Boston harbor with Narraganset bay, through Taunton river, and another to unite Barnstable and Buzzards bays, will greatly facilitate the commercial interests of Boston, particularly with Connecticut river and New-York. The canal now in forwardness from the Lehigh to New-York is much thought of, as a channel for the conveyance of the Lehigh coal. The canals from Philadelphia across to the Susquehannah, and from the Delaware bay, across to the Chesapeake bay, will promote the commercial interests of Philadelphia and Baltimore. The Chesapeake bay, with its numerous inlets and streams, opens an inland communication with the states of Virginia, Maryland, Delaware, and Pennsylvania, that extends to the southern line of the state of New-York on the north, and the Alleghany range on the west. The great Cumberland road also, across the Alleghany, from Cumberland to Wheeling, forms a strong commercial chain between the eastern and western states : but the contemplated canal from the Potomac through the Monongahela to Pittsburg, will greatly promote this commercial intercourse. The canal through great Dismal swamp, that connects the Chesapeake with Albemarle sound, is useful in time of peace : but will always become more so, in times of war. Great fields are contemplated for useful and valuable canal inland navigation, at the south, which will doubtless be executed as the population and resources of the country increase : but the contemplated canal across Florida, to connect the Atlantic with the Gulf of Mexico, will undoubtedly become the most useful. The state of Alabama is watered extensively by the river Alabama, and its tributary streams, which connect the internal navigation of that state with the Gulf of Mexico. No country upon the whole earth, is capable of such vast and extensive inland improvements, for commerce and navigation, and no country on earth has made such rapid advances, in the space of two centuries, as the United States have done, and are continuing to do.



*Roads.*—The improvements in roads in the United States, are the greatest, for the time, of any other nation. Turn-pike roads have become general throughout the country, and bridges have multiplied and improved, in connection with the roads.

The first is the great post road that traverses the Atlantic states, from Maine to Florida, which is 1800 miles in extent. The next in importance, are the great western turnpike from Albany to Buffalo, from Philadelphia to Pittsburg, and the great national or Cumberland road from Washington to Wheeling, on the Ohio; also Jackson's road from Nashville, in Tennessee, to lake Pontchartrain or New-Orleans.

In 1790, the extent of post-roads was estimated at 1875 miles; in 1818, it was estimated at nearly 5200 miles, and in 1824, the mail was transported 2000 miles per day, which will raise the amount of post-roads to 130 or 140,000 miles.

*Post-Offices.*—The number of post-offices in the United States, exceeds 5000.

*Climates, Soil, Agricultural productions, &c.*—The climates of the United States embrace all the variety, between the cold regions of the north, and the tropical regions of the south; the soil is various, but remarkably good; and the productions include all the variety that are common to all the climates in the world, and may be divided into the four following regions, viz: The northern, middle, southern, and tropical.

1. The northern region of the United States includes the states of Maine, New-Hampshire, Vermont, Massachusetts, Connecticut, Rhode-Island, and the state of New York.—Wheat was formerly an important article among the products of New-England, when the country was new, but it is little attended to since the soil has been reduced by tillage; rye has become a substitute for wheat, most generally; this, and Indian corn, oats, barley, and potatoes, have become the staple vegetable products in N. England: orchards flourish throughout, and cider is their common drink; cider brandy is a very considerable article of export: peaches flourish in the southern part. Wheat continues to be one of the staples of New-York; the others are similar to those of New-England.

2. New-Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland and Virginia, east of the Allegany; Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Missouri, and Kentucky, west of the mountains, include the middle region. Wheat is among the staples of this region, and in

many parts the principal ; and throughout, is the best in the United States, and one of their most valuable exports, either in grain or flour. In the Atlantic states of this region, orchards flourish well, and the Newark cider of New Jersey is the best in the world.. In the western section cider is not so common, and whiskey is used as a general substitute. Peaches flourish on both sides of the mountain, and are often used for the distillation of peach brandy. The grape begins to be cultivated for wine on both sides of the mountain, and vineyards have been planted at or near Philadelphia, and at Vevay, on the Ohio. Horses, cattle, and swine, are extensively raised on the grazing farms in this region, particularly in the western section, and are an important article of commerce.

3. The southern section of Virginia, the states of North and South Carolina, and Tennessee, and the northern sections of Georgia, Alabama, and Mississippi, with the territory of Arkansas, include the southern region. Cotton, rice, indigo, and maize, or Indian corn, are the staples of this region ; tobacco, oats, barley, and hemp will flourish, but the Irish potatoe cannot be cultivated to advantage. Peaches, figs, and pomegranates, flourish well : and oranges and lemons in the southern parts ; but apples, pears, plums, &c. will not flourish.

4. The southern sections of Georgia, Alabama, Mississippi, with Louisiana and Florida, compose the tropical region. Sugar, cotton, indigo, oranges, lemons, figs, &c. Maize, or Indian corn yields most luxuriantly, and in East Florida produces two crops in a year. Coffee and tea, will, it is most probable, both flourish in this region.

*Mines and Minerals.*—Gold, silver, copper, iron, lead, and cobalt are found in the United States ; the beryl has been found among the precious stones, but the true emerald has not been found. Marble of the finest texture and in great variety has been found, together with sandstone and slate, and in great abundance for the purposes of building. Among the inflammable minerals have been found bituminous coal, anthracite, or stone coal, peat, sulphur, and petroleum also, in very great abundance.

*Salines.*—The U. States abound with saltsprings in the interior, west of the Allegany, and in Louisiana ; and an extensive plain has been discovered among the southern branches of the Missouri river, covered or incrustated with salt.

Epsom salts are found in a cave in Illinois, and nitre is found in numerous caves in Kentucky and Tennessee.

*Mineral Springs.*—These are numerous, and of various qualities ; and are found in almost all parts of the United States. Those of the greatest celebrity are the Saratoga, Ballstown, and New-Lebanon, in New-York. Stafford springs in Connecticut. Hot and warm springs in Virginia ; but the hot springs near the Washita, in Arkansas territory, are the most celebrated. These springs issue from the south side of a high bluff ; are thirty in number, and the largest does not exceed six inches in diameter ; they will boil an egg hard, in five minutes. More than 300 invalids visited those springs in 1812.

The following extract from Dana's Sketches of the western states, will shew the general and more important monuments of antiquity that have been found in that interior country.

*Antiquities.*—“ Near the confluence of the Ohio and Big Miami, on the west bank, is an extensive rich bottom, consisting of several thousand acres ; on, and in the vicinity of which, are several ancient mounds. Northwardly of Hardensburgh, one half mile from the Miami, on the top of a hill, supposed to be elevated above the adjoining bottom 150 feet, is a fortification inclosing ten or twelve acres. The wall of earth, from four to five feet high, does not conform to any exact figure, but is regulated in its direction by the extremities of the level ground round the top of the hill, at the highest points of declivity, in an irregular form, so as to enclose all the level ground. There are two or three gate ways. On the south, near where the hill is very steep, within the fort, is a considerable mound, and on the south side of the hill, about one-third of the distance from the base to the top, is a spacious high way, more than thirty feet in width, remarkably level and straight, the excavation on the upper side of which, in some parts of the hill, is twelve or fifteen feet deep ; this highway extends in length, on the side of the hill, 160 rods, each end terminating at points where the declivity was gentle, and the ascent easy to the fortification ; within which are two considerable artificial concavities. The numerous human bones washed bare by the rains, on the sloping places, indicate that the ancient population here was great.

“ On the opposite side of the Miami, on the top of a hill, is another extensive fortification, described in doctor Drake's Picture of Cincinnati. Another is discovered on a hill two miles below Hamilton, containing more than fifty acres, near which is a mound. Various other monuments of ancient labors appear in the Miami country.

“Mounds vary both in magnitude and form. Some are conical from the base to the top ; others present only the lower segment of a cone ; others are semi-globular ; others in the form of a parallelogram. At Marietta is one of a conical figure, of seven rods diameter at the base, fifty feet high, and twenty feet diameter at top.

“The largest mound which has been found in the Ohio valley, stands at Big Grave creek, near the Ohio, fourteen miles below Wheeling. It is between fifteen and twenty rods diameter at the base, its perpendicular height seventy feet. On the summit nearly sixty feet diameter, in the middle of which is a regular cavity, consisting of about 3000 cubical feet, on which is a handsome green white oak tree, three feet diameter and more than seventy feet high. Within a few rods stand five other smaller mounds.

“The most remarkable appearances of mounds or pyramids, in the western country, are on the Mississippi, consisting of two groupes. The one about ten miles above the Kahokia, which empties near St. Louis ; and the other nearly the same distance below it—which in all exceed one hundred and fifty. Near St. Louis, within less than a mile of the Mississippi, on the east side, is the upper groupe, which at a little distance resembles a cluster of enormous hay stacks. They are generally circular ; and some of them, at a great height, have space enough on the top to contain several hundred men.—The largest of these mounds is a stupendous pile of earth, to form which, must have required the labors of thousands, for years. It stands immediately on the bank of the Kahokia. Were it not for the regularity and design displayed, the plain alluvial ground on which it stands, and the great number of others scattered around it, we could scarce believe it the work of human hands. The shape is a parallelogram from north to south ; on the south is a broad apron, about half way down, and from this another projection, nearly fifteen feet wide ; the whole circumference 800 yards, and the height of the mound about 90 feet. The monks of La Trappe have settled near it, who have made the apron into a kitchen garden, and sowed the top with wheat. The extraordinary appearance of this cluster of mounds, forces conviction on the reflecting mind, that they are the only relics which time has secured from oblivion, of a great and populous city. The large mounds were probably sites of temples, and many of the smaller ones monuments of distinguished chiefs. There is perhaps no spot in

the west capable of producing more abundantly, and supporting a more numerous population than this valley, called the American Bottom, which is a tract of rich alluvian, extending on the Mississippi from the Kaskaskia to the Kahokia rivers, about eighty miles in length, and from three to twelve miles in breadth. The great number of mounds, and the surprising quantity of human bones every where dug up, or found on the surface of the ground, with divers other appearances, prove this valley to have been anciently filled with the habitations of men.

“Near St. Louis is a curious work, much admired, called the Fallen Garden. It suggests to the spectator the idea of a situation for assembling the people for public councils.”

*Natural Curiosities.*—“The gates of the Rocky mountains, so called, on the Missouri, present a great curiosity. For the distance of more than five miles, the rocks rise in perpendicular height, from the surface of the water, nearly 1200 feet. There the waters of that great river are compressed within the compass of 150 yards wide ; and for three miles, there is but one small space, on which a man can stand, between the water and the perpendicular ascent of the mountain.

“There are numerous caverns, of great extent and magnitude, in the states of Kentucky, Tennessee, and Indiana, in which large quantities of salt petre are made. In Rock Castle county, Kentucky, there is a cave so large, that a yoke of oxen and cart can be driven in at one side of a hill, half a mile through, and out at the other. In the county of Warren is another, which has been explored for seven miles, without finding the extremity. There are three natural fountains of bitumen, which, it is said, have proved a useful substitute for lamp oil.

“In the state of Indiana, not far from Big Blue river, is a spacious cave, more than two miles in extent. The entrance is in the side of an elevated hill. Large quantities of Epsom salt, and salt petre, are found in this cave. Here numerous calcareous exudations are displayed in a variety of shapes, resembling artificial carvings. Bats inhabiting this cave are numerous ; and it is necessary for an adventurer who would explore it, to preserve his torch or candle from extinguishment by those creatures, with a lantern. Within the tract called *the barren*, expanding in divers directions several miles, there are various other large caves ; on the bottoms of some of which flow streams of water, large enough to drive mills.—

There is in the county of Orange, a large stream, called *Loss river*;—after flowing several miles on the surface, the whole current suddenly sinks into the earth, and is never seen or heard of more. Near a creek that joins the Ohio, about a mile west of New-Albany, is a spring, so strongly impregnated with sulphurated hydrogen gas, as to produce combustion, by placing a torch or lighted candle a little above the water. About six miles northwest of Corydon, near the Big Blue river, just above the base of an elevated hill, bursts from amidst the rocks, a cold spring which in the dryest seasons is copious enough to drive two pair of stones and a saw, in an elegant stone mill, built just by its mouth. There are many other springs of this description, cold as any well water, on which profitable mills are built, within this state."

The cataract of Niagara is esteemed the grandest object of the kind in the world. The distance of the falls above lake Ontario, is fourteen miles, and below lake Erie, twenty-three miles on the American side, twenty-one on the Canada side. At the distance of one and three-quarter miles above the falls, the river begins to descend with a rapid and powerful current. At the falls, it turns with a right angle to the NE. and is suddenly contracted in width, from three to three-fourths of a mile. Below the falls, the river is only about one half mile wide, but its depth is said to exceed 300 feet. The precipice over which the cataract descends, is formed by the brow of a vast bed of lime stone; and the perpendicular descent, according to major Prescott's survey, is 151 feet. The descent is perpendicular, except that the rocks are hallowed underneath the surface, particularly on the western side. The cataract is divided into two parts, by Goat or Iris island, which occupies one fifth or sixth of the whole breadth. The principal channel is on the western side, and is called the Horse-shoe fall, from its shape. The eastern channel is divided by another little island. The descent on the eastern side is greater by a few feet than on the other, but the water is more shallow. The noise of these falls is frequently heard at York, fifty miles distant; and the cloud of vapour thrown, is seen seventy miles. The descent within ten miles is about 300 feet, and from lake Erie to lake Ontario, 329 feet. The quantity of water discharged in an hour, is computed by Dr. Dwight, at 102,093,750 tons. The spray which rises from the water, serves as a medium for forming by the sun's rays the most brilliant rainbows

# CHRONOLOGICAL TABLE OF CONTENTS.

## PART I.

### CHAPTER I.

#### COMMENCEMENT OF THE SETTLEMENT OF NEW-ENGLAND.

14th C.	Rise of John Wickliffe and the Puritan church	page 13
1608	Retreat of the church to Holland	
1619	Commenced their preparations to remove to America	
1620	Embarked for England, and from thence to America	14
	Landed at Cape Cod, Nov. 20th	
	Adventures and distresses of the Pilgrims	15
1621	Adventures and distresses continued	16

### CHAPTER II.

#### MASSACHUSETTS.

1625	Sketch of the persecutions in England	17
1627	First patent, &c.	
	Settlement at Salem	18
1629	Patent confirmed by charter of Charles I.	
1630	Gov. Winthrop arrives in the colony	
1631	First general court, &c.	
1632	Settlements rapidly progress, &c.	19
1634	Fundamental principles of liberty guaranteed by a bill of rights	
1635	American slavery introduced	
	First attempts to settle New Hampshire failed, 1629	20
1638	Great earthquake	
1639	Origin of a permanent system of education. Harvard College	
1640	First general code of laws, styled "Body of Liberties"	21
1643	Confederacy of New-England	

### CHAPTER III.

#### CONNECTICUT.

1630	First charter, &c.	22
1632	Connecticut river first explored by the English	
	Sketch of the first settlements of the Dutch	
1636	First English settlements commence	23
1639	First civil compact	
	Causes that led to the Pequot war	26
	War commenced	28
	War ended	31
1638	Settlement of the colony of New Haven	

## CHAPTER IV.

## RHODE-ISLAND.

	Introduction	32
1636	Roger Williams commences a settlement at Providence	33
1638	Rhode-Island settled and a civil compact formed	
1640	Providence and Rhode Island associate	
1644	First patent obtained	
1647	First civil code	34
1652	Patent revoked by order of parliament	
1663	Charter granted by Charles II.	
1686	Religious persecutions, civil revolutions, &c.	

## CHAPTER V.

## GENERAL VIEW OF THE NATIVES OF NEW-ENGLAND.

1675	Philip's war	39
1678	Peace restored	43

## CHAPTER VI.

## NEW-HAMPSHIRE.

1679	First charter of Charles II.	45
1680	First legislative assembly. Proprietary claims, &c.	46
1686	Charter revoked by writs of quo warranto, &c.	47
1688	Revolution in England causes New-Hampshire to return to the jurisdiction of Massachusetts	48
1692	Proprietary claims continued	

## CHAPTER VII.

## NEW-HAMPSHIRE CONTINUED. KING WILLIAM'S WAR.

1690	Indian ravages commence. Schenectady burnt, &c.	51
1697	Failure of the French armada against N. England	
	Proprietary claims continued	
	Peace restored	52

## CHAPTER VIII.

## HISTORY OF THE PILGRIMS CONTINUED. MASSACHUSETTS.

1692	Introduction: new charter, &c.	
	Salem witchcraft	
1696	Lord Belomont succeeds sir Wm. Phipps	55
1701	Gov. Dudley succeeds lord Belomont. Queen Ann's war	
1704	Capture and destruction of Deerfield	56
1710	Port Royal taken	
1711	Expedition against Quebec failed. Peace	57
1714	Death of queen Ann and accession of George I, &c.	

## CHAPTER IX.

## HISTORY OF THE PILGRIMS CONTINUED.

1644	General affairs of Connecticut	58
1662	Charter of Charles II. embraces Connecticut and N. Haven	



1665	Colonies of Connecticut and New-Haven unite	58
1672	MS. laws of the colony first printed at Cambridge	59
1674	Claims of N. York repelled at Saybrook by a military force	
1675	Philip's war	
1677	Controversy with Rhode-Island	
1685	Controversy with the crown, to vindicate chartered rights	
1689	Closed, and Connecticut retained her charter	
1694	Gov. Fletcher renews the claims of N. York upon Connecticut, and failed	
1798	Upper and lower house of assembly formed	61
1708	Synod of Saybrook published their platform Yale College	

## CHAPTER X.

MASSACHUSETTS AND NEW-HAMPSHIRE CONTINUED—FOURTH INDIAN WAR.		
1717	Introduction--war commenced	62
1726	Peace restored	
1729	Political divisions of Massachusetts recommence	
1740	Spanish war commenced	64
1744	France joins with Spain in the war. Indian war	
1745	New England confederates for the capture of Louisburg	66
	Louisburg taken 14th of June	67
1746	Bold measures of France. Loss of her armada, &c.	68
1748	Peace of Aix-la-Chapelle upon the basis of uti possidetis	
1749	Indian peace	69

## CHAPTER XI.

### GENERAL AFFAIRS OF THE COLONIES.

	Introduction	
1754	French and Indian war commences	70
	General congress at Albany--plans of union proposed, &c.	71
1755	Campaign of Braddock's defeat, &c.	73
1656	Campaign of Fall of Oswego	75
1757	Campaign of Fort Wm. Henry taken by the French--general massacre	77

## CHAPTER XII.

### CAMPAIGN OF 1758, IN AMERICA.

	Introduction	78
1758	Louisburg taken	79
	Defeat of gen. Abercrombie before Ticonderoga	80
	Capture of Frontenac--Duquesne, &c.	

## CHAPTER XIII.

### CAMPAIGN OF 1759.

	Introduction	82
1759	Capture of Ticonderoga, Crown Point, Niagara, &c.-- siege of Quebec	82--83
	Battle and fall of Quebec	88--89

## CHAPTER XIV.

## CAMPAIGN OF 1760.

1760	General operations to recover Quebec	89
	Quebec relieved--Montreal taken, and the French war closed in America	90

## CHAPTER XV.

## GENERAL ARRANGEMENTS IN EUROPE TO PROSECUTE THE WAR, WITH A VIEW TO OBTAIN AN EQUITABLE PEACE.

1761	Introduction--family compact, between France and Spain--change of British ministry	91
1762	War in the West Indies	92
	Capture of Havanna--Peace of Paris, 1763	93

## CHAPTER XVI.

## INDIAN WAR.

	Introduction	
1763	General operations	94
	Peace	95

## CHAPTER XVII.

## SUSQUEHANNAH CLAIMS CONTESTED BETWEEN CONNECTICUT AND PENNSYLVANIA.

	Introduction	
1763	Wyoming settlement commenced	96
1773	Westmoreland settlement commenced--Conn. claims lost	97

## CHAPTER XVIII.

## VERMONT.

1741	Introduction---Bennington settled	98
	Controversy between N. York and N. Hampshire, about jurisdiction	
1774	Controversy continued	100
1775	Battle of Lexington suspends the controversy for a time	101
1776	Vermont declares her independence of New York and New-Hampshire	102
	Gov. Chittenden's correspondence with gen. Washington	
1790	Vermont settles her controversy with New York, and the next year joins the federal union	103

## PART II.

## CHAPTER I.

## VIRGINIA.

	Introduction	
1607	Commencement of the settlement of Jamestown	107
	Adventures of captain Smith, Pocahontas, &c.	108
	General view of the colony, &c.	

1610	Lord Delaware commences his administration under the new charter	109
------	------------------------------------------------------------------	-----

## CHAPTER II.

HERE COMMENCES THE HISTORY OF VIRGINIA.

	General view of the colony continued	
1619	Maidstown settled	112
1621	First elective assembly in America	
1624	King James I. dissolved their charter	
1625	Charles I. succeeds his father, James I. and grants a new charter	114
1653	Oliver Cromwell compels Virginia to submit to his government	115
1660	Charles II. upon his accession, continued to oppress the colony	
1675	Indian war--rebellion, &c.—peace	
1679	Lord Culpepper commences his administration, and troubles continue	
1688	Upon the accession of Wm. and Mary to the crown of England, affairs became more prosperous	117

## CHAPTER III.

NORTH AND SOUTH CAROLINA.

	Introduction	
1584	Anecdote of Dr. Williamson	119
1585	Adventures of captain Lane	120
1625	First charter granted by Charles I.	121
1660	Charles II. declares this charter null and void, and grants a new charter	

## CHAPTER IV.

CAROLINA CONTINUED.

	Two settlements only, attempted in 60 years	122
1667	The first general assembly held in Carolina	123
1669	Port Royal settled under gov. Sayle	
	Constitution of John Locke	
1671	Two governments formed	124
1680	Attempts made to form a general staple, failed	
	Mal administration and rebellion	125
1695	Gov. Archdale restores order in the southern colony	126

## CHAPTER V.

CAROLINA CONTINUED.

	Gov. Archdale softens the barbarous customs of the Indians	
	Reformed the governments of both colonies	128
1690	A sweeping sickness destroys the Indians	
1700	North and South Carolina distinctly named	
	Laws of Carolina not yet printed	129
1704	Rice and tar become the first staples	
1705	Religion began to be encouraged	
	Carey's rebellion	130

## CONTENTS.

## CHAPTER VI.

## CAROLINA CONTINUED.

1690	French Huguenot colony	131
1709	German colony, speculation, &c.	132
1711	Indian massacre, and Indian war	134
1712	Peace restored, and the Tuscaroras removed to join the Five Nations	135
1717	General state of Carolina	136

## CHAPTER VII.

## CAROLINA CONTINUED.

1722	General state of the northern colony	137
1725	General state of the southern colony	138
1774	General state of both colonies	139

## CHAPTER VIII.

## CAROLINA CONTINUED.

1754	General view of the several emigrations into Carolina	140—1
------	-------------------------------------------------------	-------

## CHAPTER IX.

## NEW YORK--ITS DISCOVERY--RISE AND PROGRESS OF THE COLONY.

1608	Henry Hudson discovers the country	142
1614	Settlements commence, &c.	
1664	General view of the colony, to the grant of Charles II. to the duke of York	144
	Taken by the English, and named in honor of the duke of York and Albany	145
1667	Confirmed to the English by the peace of Breda	
1673	Retaken by the Dutch	
1764	Restored to the English by the peace of Westminster	
	General view of the colony	146

## CHAPTER X.

## NEW YORK CONTINUED.

1701	General view of the colony continued, to the peace of Paris.	
1763		

## CHAPTER XI.

## RISE AND PROGRESS OF NEW JERSEY.

1664	Recapitulation of the view taken under N. York.	154
1673	Conquered by the Dutch—civil divisions, &c.	155
1674	Restored to the English by the peace of Westminster	
1676	Divided into East and West Jersey, and the latter conveyed to New York	
	General view of the colony continued	

## CHAPTER XII.

## RISE AND PROGRESS OF DELAWARE.

1627	General view of the colony to the peace of Paris, 1763	158
------	--------------------------------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER XIII.

RISE AND PROGRESS OF PENNSYLVANIA, TO THE PEACE OF  
PARIS, 1763.

1721	Granted to Wm. Penn by king Charles II.	158
	General view of the colony to the commencement of the revolution, 1775	166

CHAPTER XIV.

RISE AND PROGRESS OF MARYLAND, &c.

1631	First patent of Charles I. to lord Baltimore, &c.	
	General view of the colony, to the revolution, 1776	174

CHAPTER XV.

RISE AND PROGRESS OF GEORGIA, TO THE AMERICAN REVOLU-  
TION.

1732	Charter of king George II.	
1733	First settlement commenced	172
	General view of the colony, to the year 1798	175

PART III.

CHAPTER I.

CAUSES THAT LED TO THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION.

1764	A general view of the oppressive acts of Britain. to the recall of governor Bernard	437
------	----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER II.

CAUSES THAT LED TO THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION, CONTINUED.

1770	General view of affairs, from the Boston massacre, to the Boston port bill	192
------	-------------------------------------------------------------------------------	-----

CHAPTER III.

CAUSES THAT LED TO THE AMERICAN REVOLUTION, CONTINUED.

1774	First general congress at Philadelphia, general doings, &c.	
	Session of parliament, &c.—speech of earl Chatham	194
1775	Battle of Lexington	199

CHAPTER IV.

AMERICAN REVOLUTION CONTINUED, FROM THE BATTLE OF LEX-  
INGTON TO THE FALL OF MONTGOMERY BEFORE QUEBEC.

1775	Circular address of the provincial congress of Mass.	200
	Capture of Ticonderoga and Crown Point	201
	Battle of Bunker hill	204
	Meeting of the second congress at Philadelphia—appoint- ment of gen. Washington	205

1775	General view of affairs	205
	Expedition of colonel Arnold, &c.—gen. Montgomery, &c.	209
	Capture of St. Johns, Montreal, &c.	
	Attempt made to storm Quebec—death of gen. Montgomery, &c.	210

## CHAPTER V.

REVOLUTION CONTINUED, FROM THE FALL OF MONTGOMERY TO  
THE DECLARATION OF INDEPENDENCE.

1775	General operations in America, continued	211
1776	General movements in Europe to prosecute the war in America	214
	Siege and defence of Charleston, (S. C.)	215
	Declaration of Independence	

## CHAPTER VI.

REVOLUTION CONTINUED—CAPTURE OF NEW-YORK—EXPEDITION  
INTO NEW-JERSEY, &c.

1776	General movements	216
	Battle of Long-Island	219
	Capture of New-York by the British	221
	Battle of White Plains—capture of fort Washington, &c.	222
	Retreat into New-Jersey	
	Battle of Trenton—Battle of Princeton, &c.	223
	British expedition to Danbury	224

## CHAPTER VII.

REVOLUTION CONTINUED—EVACUATION OF CANADA—FALL OF  
BURGOYNE—CAPTURE OF PHILADELPHIA.

1776	Retreat of the Americans out of Canada	224
	Naval victory on lake Champlain	225
	Humanity of sir Guy Carlton towards American prisoners	
1777	Gen. Burgoyne succeeds sir Guy Carlton, and invades the state of New-York	
	Capture of Crown Point and Ticonderoga	
	Battle of Castleton	226
	Capture of fort Ann	227
	Story of Jane McCrea	
	Capture of fort Edward	228
	Expedition of St. Ledger, &c.	229
	Battle of Bennington	230
	Battle of Stillwater	231
	Capture of West Point	
	Battle of Stillwater—death of gen. Frazer	232
	Burgoyne retreats to Saratoga	
	Capture of Burgoyne and all his army	233
	Esopus burnt	
	Expedition of general Howe	234
	Battle of Brandywine	
	Capture of Philadelphia—battle of Germantown, &c.	235

CHAPTER VIII.

REVOLUTION CONTINUED—PROCEEDINGS OF CONGRESS—MILITARY OPERATIONS, &c.

1777	President Hancock retires from the chair	235
	Hon. Henry Laurens succeeds him—general doings of congress	236
1778	Treaty of alliance with France	237
	Toulon fleet sails for America	
	Earl of Chatham dies	
	Naval war between France and England	238
	Adventure of marquis La Fayette	239
	British commissioners, &c.	
	Gen. Clinton evacuates Philadelphia	241
	Gen. Washington with his army pursues	
	Gen. Gates with his army arrives at Fishkill	
	Gen. Washington prepares to attack the enemy	242
	Battle of Monmouth	243
	Toulon fleet arrives off the capes of the Delaware, lands French minister	244
	Blockades the British fleet at Sandy Hook	
	Sails to co-operate with gen. Sullivan against Rhode Island	
	Naval action, &c.	245
	Retires to Boston to refit	
	Gen. Sullivan evacuates Rhode Island	246
	Expedition of sir Henry Clinton and lord Howe	
	Extract from gen. Washington's letter	

CHAPTER IX.

GENERAL OPERATIONS OF THE REVOLUTION, CONTINUED.

1778	Affair of British commissioners and Mr. Reed	247
	Declaration of congress	248
	French minister accredited in due form	
	Gen. La Fayette obtains leave to return to France	
	Indian and tory cruelties at Wyoming	249
	Expedition of colonel Clark	250
	Expeditions of gen. Gray and capt. Ferguson	
	Arrival of admiral Graves—sails for Boston	251
	Count de Estaing sails for the West Indies	
	Expedition of col. Wm. Butler—also of col. John Butler	
	General operations in Georgia	252
	Gen. Lincoln takes the command of the American army at the south	253
	General operations continued	
	Gen. Prescott invades Charleston	255
	Overtures of the civil authority of Charleston	256
	Gen. Lincoln, by forced marches, raises the siege of Charleston	256
	Successful movements of the enemy in Virginia and elsewhere	
1779	Second expedition of col. Clark against the Indians	257

1779	Marauding expedition from New-York into Connecticut	258
	Capture of Stony Point by gen. Wayne	259
	Expedition of gen. Sullivan against the Indians	
	Naval exploit of John Paul Jones	

## CHAPTER X.

## GENERAL OPERATIONS OF THE REVOLUTION, CONTINUED.

	Southern war continued	260
	British evacuate Rhode-Island	262
1780	Sir Henry Clinton sails from New York--arrives and lays siege to Charleston	
	Fall of Charleston--gen. Gates takes the command	264
	Southern war continued	
	Operations from New York	
	Gen. La Fayette returns from France--sir Henry Clinton returns to New York	265
	French fleet arrives at Newport, R. I.	296
	Movements of sir Henry Clinton and gen. Washington	267
	Operations in the south continued--battle of Camden	
	Gen. Greene takes command in the south	268
1781	Battle of Cowpens---Battle of Guilford	269
	Operations in Virginia	
	Southern war continued	
	Operations in Virginia continued	270
	Marquis La Fayette takes the command	
	General movements	271

## CHAPTER XI.

## REVOLUTION CONTINUED.

1780	Adventures in the north---detection of Arnold	272
	Fate of Andre	273
	Remarks of gen. Washington---adventures of sergeant Champe	274
	Congress reward the captors of Andre	277
	Expedition of Arnold into Virginia	278
	Death of admiral De Terney, at Rhode Island	279
1781	General movements in the north	
	Admiral De Barras arrives at Newport	280
	Conference of American and French officers at Wethersfield	
	French army joins gen. Washington at White Plains	
	Movement against New York	280
	Count de Grasse arrives in the Chesapeake bay	
	French fleet sails from Newport to join him	
	Naval battle off the Chesapeake	
	Allied armies move to the south	
	Gen. Washington's general orders before Yorktown	282
	General operations of the siege	283
	Fall of Yorktown, and capture of lord Cornwallis	284
	General expressions of joy, gratitude and praise to God	285



Doings of congress, &c.	
Address of Mons. de Bandole	288

## CHAPTER XII.

## REVOLUTION CONTINUED.

1781	Marauding expedition of Arnold into Connecticut	288
	Adventures of the southern war continued	289
	Battle of Eutaw Springs, &c.	290
1782	Letters of general Greene	
	Letters of baron Steuben	291
	Negotiation for a general peace at Paris	292
	General meeting in the army of general Washington	
1783	Peace of Paris announced by marquis La Fayette	294
	Order of Cincinnati	296
	Circular of gen. Washington	
	General Washington's farewell orders	297
	Evacuation of New York	
	Parting scene between gen. Washington and his principal officers	
	Gen. Washington resigns his commission to congress	
	Definitive treaty arrives in America	298
	Remarks on Part III.	299

## PART IV.

## CHAPTER I.

## CAUSES THAT LED TO A CHANGE IN THE GOVERNMENT OF THE U. STATES.

1783	Commercial competitions	303
1784	Doings of congress	
1785	Further proceedings of congress—Mission of John Adams to Great Britain	
	Proceedings at the British court	304
1786	Doings of Virginia—Convention at Annapolis, &c.	
1787	Doings of Congress, &c.	
	General convention at Philadelphia, to frame a new constitution	305
	New constitution transmitted to congress, &c.	
1788	Constitution adopted by eleven states—George Washington chosen president, and John Adams vice president.	306

## CHAPTER II.

## ORGANIZATION OF THE FEDERAL GOVERNMENT—ORIGIN OF PARTY.

1789	Congress convened at New-York	
	President Washington inducted into office	
	Proceedings of Congress	
	Particular resolutions, &c.—Congress adjourn—Remarks	308
	President Washington's northern tour	
1790	Congress convene—President's speech, &c.	309
	Report of the secretary of the treasury	
	Articles of the report, &c.	310

1790	Debates of congress—Report accepted, and funding system introduced	311
	Happy effects of these measures upon public credit	
	Congress adjourn to meet at Philadelphia	
	Negotiations and treaty with the Creek Indians	
	Causes that led to a war with the north western Indians	
	Congress convene agreeable to adjournment	312
	Secretary of the treasury reports—warm debate—report carried	
	National bank—warm debates— northern and southern interests displayed	313
	Bill passed— party strife---important question of party	
1791	Congress adjourn---party spirit in congress becomes national	

## CHAPTER III.

## INDIAN WAR---AFFAIRS OF GOVERNMENT, &amp;c.

1791	Military operations commence---gen. Harmer's defeat---gen. St. Clair succeeds him	341
	President's tour to the south, &c.	
	Military operations recommence under gen. St. Clair	315
	Congress convene---president's speech	
	Doings of congress	
	New military system	316
	Gen. St. Clair's defeat---court of enquiry	
1792	Doings of congress---gen. Wayne succeeds gen. St. Clair	318
	Congress adjourn---remarks---president's letters to heads of departments	
	Disaffection in the western counties of Pennsylvania	320
	Congress convene---president's speech---Doings of congress	
	Final proceedings	
1793	Doings of congress---Mr. Giles resolutions---congress adjourn	
	Party names, federalist democrat--remarks	322
	President Washington and vice-president Adams re-elected	
	Indian affairs - affairs of the French revolution	
	The president convenes his cabinet council---Issues a proclamation of neutrality	323
	Mr. Genet arrives in America ; authorises a system of privateering	
	Arrives at Philadelphia, and is accredited by the president ---new cabinet council	324
	Further proceedings of Mr. Genet	
	Mr. Genet succeeded by Mr. Fauchet	325
	Congress convene	326
1794	Secretary Jefferson resigns, and is succeeded by Mr. Randolph	
	Depredations of Algiers upon the American commerce	
	Congress proceed to authorise the building of six frigates	
	Depredations of France and England- -general embargo	327
	Mr. Jay appointed minister to Great Britain, to negotiate a commercial treaty	

	Indian war progresses---battle at the rapids of the Miami of the lake, or Maumee	
	Congress convene --president's speech	329
	Secretary Hamilton resigns, and is succeeded by Oliver Wolcott	
	The secretary at war, gen. Knox, resigns, and is succeeded by colonel Pickering	
	Mr. Jay succeeds in negotiating a treaty with G. Britain	
1795	President, with advice of the senate, ratifies the treaty	320
	Effects that result- treaty with Algiers --treaty with Spain	
1796	Mr. Adet, successor to Mr. Fauchet	
	The president declines another election	
	Mr. Adams chosen president and Mr. Jefferson vice pres't	332
	President Washington retires to private life	

#### CHAPTER IV.

##### PRESIDENT ADAMS' ADMINISTRATION.

1797	President Adams inducted into office---judge Marshall's remarks	
	Difficulties with France	333
1798	Provisional army	334
	Death of president Washington, in Dec.---doings of congress, and the nation	
1800	Congress adjourned	
	Peace with France	
	Electioneering campaign- Mr. Jefferson appointed president by congress --Mr. Burr becomes vice president	
	Causes supposed to have defeated Mr. Adams' re-election	
1801	Mr. Jefferson's inaugural speech	337
	Doings of congress	338
1803	Collisions with Spain---purchase of Louisiana	
	Tripolitan war	
1804	General Eaton's expedition---peace with Tripoli	339
	Mr. Jefferson re-elected president and Mr. Clinton V. P.	
	Impeachment of judge Chase	
1806	Burr's expedition, &c.--- Trial	340
	British and French restrictions on neutral commerce	341
	American embargo	
1809	Mr. Jefferson declined a re-election-- Mr. Madison chosen	
1810	Controversy with the belligerents of Europe continued	342
1812	Declaration of war	344

#### CHAPTER V.

##### WAR WITH GREAT BRITAIN.

1812	Invasion of Canada	
	Detroit taken by the British	345
	Trial of gen. Hull	
	Naval affairs, &c.	
	War on Canada frontier renewed---battle of Queenstown	346
	Frontier war continued	349
1813	Naval war renewed	350

## CHAPTER VI.

## BRITISH WAR CONTINUES, &amp;c.

	British ravages in the Chesapeake	254
	Frontier war continued	355
	Perry's victory	357
1814	Loss of the frigate Essex	358
	Negotiations for peace	
	Canada war continued	359
	Macdonough's victory	360
	Invasion of the Chesapeake continued	
	The British take the city of Washington under gen. Ross	361
	They commence an attack upon Baltimore, but were defeated with the loss of gen. Ross, killed	
	British depredations upon the sea coast of New England	362
1815	Doings of Mass. general court --Hartford Convention	
	British prepare to attack New Orleans	363
	Jackson's victory	364
	Capture of the frigate President	365
	Peace with Great Britain	
	War with the Barbary Powers--peace	366
	National Bank	
1816	Mr. Madison declines a re-election--Mr. Monroe elected	
	Florida ceded to the United States	367
1821	Mr. Monroe and Mr. Tompkins re-elected	
1825	Mr. J. Q. Adams elected president and Mr. Calhoun V. P.	

## CHAPTER VII.

## SOUTHERN AND WESTERN STATES AND TERRITORIES.

Introduction	368
Sketches of their several histories	368 to 375
Remarks on Part IV.	

## ERRATA.

page	line	
75	18	from bottom. for preparations read operations.
87	18	bottom, for Poarquoi read Pourquoi.
132	4	bottom, add, <i>their arrival in Carolina.</i>
143	1	bottom, for 1727 read 1627.
154	10	bottom, for has read have.
175	9	top, for settlers read settlements.
255	16	top, for make read made
261	12	bottom, for who read whose.
299	12	bottom, for were read where.
310	3	top, for popular read peculiar.
333	7	top, for designed read designated.
353	15	bottom, for cannonade read carronade.
423	1	top, for may be read makes.
425	19	top, for allusion read illusion.
431	23	bottom, for upon read up.



## CHAPTER VI.

## BRITISH WAR CONTINUES, &amp;c.

	British ravages in the Chesapeake	254
	Frontier war continued	355
	Perry's victory	357
1814	Loss of the frigate Essex	358
	Negotiations for peace	
	Canada war continued	359
	Macdonough's victory	360
	Invasion of the Chesapeake continued	
	The British take the city of Washington under gen. Ross	361
	They commence an attack upon Baltimore, but were defeated with the loss of gen. Ross, killed	
	British depredations upon the sea coast of New England	362
1815	Doings of Mass. general court --Hartford Convention	
	British prepare to attack New Orleans	363
	Jackson's victory	364
	Capture of the frigate President	365
	Peace with Great Britain	
	War with the Barbary Powers--peace	366
	National Bank	
1816	Mr. Madison declines a re-election--Mr. Monroe elected	
	Florida ceded to the United States	367
1821	Mr. Monroe and Mr. Tompkins re-elected	
1825	Mr. J. Q. Adams elected president and Mr. Calhoun V. P.	

## CHAPTER VII.

## SOUTHERN AND WESTERN STATES AND TERRITORIES.

Introduction	368
Sketches of their several histories	368 to 377
Remarks on Part IV.	

## ERRATA.

page	line	
75	18	from bottom. for preparations read operations.
87	18	bottom, for Poarquoi read Pourquoi.
132	4	bottom, add, <i>their arrival in Carolina.</i>
143	1	bottom, for 1727 read 1627.
154	10	bottom, for has read have.
175	9	top, for settlers read settlements.
255	16	top, for make read made
261	12	bottom, for who read whose.
299	12	bottom, for were read where.
310	3	top, for popular read peculiar.
333	7	top, for designed read designated.
353	15	bottom, for cannonade read carronade.
423	1	top, for may be read makes.
425	19	top, for allusion read illusion.
431	23	bottom, for upon read up.





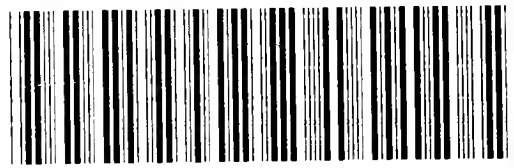








LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 011 413 646 3